THE

CONTENTS.

Chap. I. *OF the Letters, and their Pronunciation* P. 1
Chap. II. *Of the Accents and Apoſtrophe* 8
Chap. III. *Of the Parts of Speech* 10
Chap. IV. *Of Genders, Numbers, and Caſes* 14
Chap. V. *Of the Articles, and their Declenſions* 16
Chap. VI. *The Declenſions of the Nouns Subſtantives, and their Termination* 18
Chap. VII. *Of Nouns Adjective, regular and irregular, their Genders, Terminations, Declenſions, and Compariſons* 25
Chap. VIII. *Of the Pronouns, their ſeveral Sorts,* &c. 31
Chap. IX. *Of the Verb, its Moods, Tenſes, and Perſons* 37
Chap. X. *Of the Diviſion and Conjugations of the Verbs* 41
Chap. XI. *Of the auxiliary Verbs* Aver *and* Ter 43
Chap. XII. *Of the Verbs* Sou *and* Eſtou, *I am* 57
Chap. XIII. *Of the Regular Verbs, and their three Conjugations* 64
Chap. XIV. *Of the Terminations, Formations, and Equivocations of the three Conjugations* 83
Chap. XV. *Of the Irregular Verbs, and their Formation* 89
Chap. XVI. *Of the Reciprocal Verbs* 100
Of the Imperſonal Verbs 104
The SYNTAX; *ſome General Remarks* 110
Chap. I. *Of the Genders* 111
Chap. II. *Of the Definite and Indefinite Articles* 116
Chap. III. *Of the Uſe and Concordance of Nouns* 120
Chap. IV. *Of the Pronouns* 122
Chap. V. *Of the Verbs* 126
Chap. VI. *Of the Participles* 136
Chap. VII. *Of the Adverbs* 138
Chap. VIII. *Of the Conjunctions* 141

CONTENTS.

Chap. IX. *Of the Prepoſitions* P. 143
Chap. X. *Of the Interjections* 150
The Orthography of the Portugueſe *Language* ibid.
The Etymology and Obſervations on the Language itſelf 153
The Proſodie, or the Accenting of Syllables 157
The VOCABULARY: *Nouns Subſtantive* 163. *Nouns Adjective* 192. *The Numbers* 195. *The Colours* 197. *The Verbs* ibid.
The DIALOGUES 202

ADVERTISEMENT.

THE Author of this Grammar, who has lately publiſh'd a Treatiſe, intitled, A Preſent for young Gentlemen on entring the Compting-houſe, *teaches, either at his Houſe in* Houndſditch, *between the* Sun *and* Crown, *near* Biſhopſgate, *or abroad, young Gentlemen, Ladies,* &c. *Writing, Arithmetick, and the true* Italian *Method of Book-keeping, in a ſhort Time (without the common Detail of Rules, Tables, and impertinent, or rather unneceſſary Queſtions) by a ſucceſsful and approved Method of Inſtruction, in a Merchant-like Manner.*

ADVERTENCIA.

O Author deſta Grammatica o qual ultimamente publicou hum Tratado, intitulado, *Hum Preſente para os Mancebos em entrando ao Contor*, emſina, tanto em ſua Caza em *Houndſditch*, entre as Inſignias do *Sol* e *Coroa*, perto de *Biſhopſgate*, como por fora a Ler, Eſcrever, Contar, e Livro de Caixa pello Modo *Italiano* e em pouco Tempo (ſem as coſtumadas Regras, Taboadas, e impertinentes ou inutils Queſtoens) por hum Methodo, claro, patente, e bem a provado no eſtilo Mercantil.

GRAM-

Grammatica Anglo-Luſitanica & Luſitano-Anglica:

OR, A

NEW GRAMMAR,

ENGLISH and PORTUGUESE,

AND

PORTUGUESE and ENGLISH;

Divided into Two PARTS:

The FIRST, for the Inſtruction of the ENGLISH, who are deſirous to attain to the Knowledge of the *Portugueſe* Language.

The SECOND, for the Uſe of the PORTUGUESE, who have the like Inclination to the *Engliſh* Tongue.

The Firſt Part of which is corrected and amended, and the Second executed in a plain, familiar, and eaſy Method.

The SECOND EDITION.

To which is now added,

Grammatica Anglo-Luſitanica & Luſitano-Anglica:

OU,

GRAMMATICA NOVA,

INGLEZA e PORTUGUEZA,

E

PORTUGUEZA e INGLEZA;

Dividida em Duas PARTES:

A PRIMEIRA, para a Inſtruiçaõ dos INGLEZES que dezejarem alcançar o conhecimento da Lingua *Portugueza.*

A SEGUNDA, para o uzo dos PORTUGUEZES que tiverem ameſma Inclinaçaõ a Lingua *Ingleza.*

Das quais a Primeira eſtá corrigida e emendada, a Segunda executada por Methodo claro, familiar, e facil.

Por J. CASTRO, *Meſtre e Tradutor de ambas as Linguas.*

LONDON:

Printed for W. MEADOWS, at the *Angel* in *Cornhill*; and E. COMYNS, at the *South-Gate* of the *Royal-Exchange.*

M.DCC.LI.

Lidia.

TO THE

READER.

SINCE the *Portugueſe* Language is of great Uſe in Commerce, we juſtly admire how it comes that it is ſo little known among us. Moſt People think it a harſh and unpolite Language; and as the *Spaniſh* is commonly imagin'd to be its Mother, we generally apply ourſelves to this, and neglect the other; but that theſe are vulgar Errors, and that the *Portugueſe* is as valuable a Language as the *Spaniſh*, both in reſpect to its Original and Uſe, I hope to prove by the following Remarks.

To trace the Riſe of this Language, as well as of all others, we muſt look back into Hiſtory, to know what Nations have inhabited this Country. The earlieſt Account we have is, that the *Grecians* and *Carthaginians* had ſeveral Colonies in *Spain*; but as the *Romans*, when they made themſelves Maſters of the Kingdoms of *Spain* and *Portugal*, ſoon expell'd them, there is hardly any Sign of their Language either in the *Spaniſh* or *Portugueſe* remaining.

As the *Roman* Language, by reaſon of their powerful Conqueſts, became a kind of a univerſal Language, ſo it obtained likewiſe in *Spain* and *Portugal*, where (for about five Centuries) it was ſpoken as familiarly as in *Latium* itſelf. Then the *Goths* and *Vandals* made themſelves Maſters of theſe Countries, and poſſeſs'd them almoſt 200 Years, till the *Saracens* were call'd over from *Africa*, to revenge an Injury their *Gothick* King *Roderick* had done to a Lady of an antient and noble Family. Upon this the *Saracens* render'd themſelves Maſters of *Spain* and *Portugal*, and remained in Poſſeſſion of them till they and the *Jews* were expell'd by King *Ferdinand* in 1485; who, as the moſt ſecure Means of keeping out thoſe Nations, ſet up an Inquiſition, for which Pope *Innocent* gave him the Surname of *Catholick King*.

All theſe Nations, who made themſelves Maſters of *Spain*, ſubdued likewiſe the Province of *Luſitania*, now call'd *Portugal*, becauſe of its lying ſo conveniently on the Ocean, which open'd a Commerce to other Parts, and ſecur'd the quiet Poſſeſſion of the reſt.

Thus we ſee the *Portugueſe* Language is coæval with the *Spaniſh*, and that it cannot be ſaid to proceed from the *Spaniſh*, ſince it had the ſame Original with that Language.

But that it has a different, or, which ſome will call a more barbarous Sound, proceeds from this, that *Henry* Duke of *Burgundy*, one of the Family of the Dukes of *Lorrain*, (who married

married a Daughter of *Alphonſo* VI. King of *Caſtile*, with whom he had the Province of *Luſitania* for a Portion) introduced the *Gaulic* Dialect: And this we may conclude with the more Probability, ſince that *French* Prince was the Occaſion that the Province *Luſitania* receiv'd the Name of *Portugal*; for great Numbers of his Countrymen follow'd him, who intermarry'd with the People of *Oporto*, where his Court then reſided; and from this Mixing of the *Gauls* with the People of *Oporto*, the Kingdom obtained the Name of *Portu-gal*.

And if we obſerve that the Difference there is betwixt the *Spaniſh* and *Portugueſe* Pronunciation, is all conformable to the *Gaulic* or *French* Dialect, I hope this Conjecture will be allow'd a good one. Thoſe that know *French*, and compare their Pronunciation with the *Portugueſe*, require no farther Demonſtration; but for the ſake of others who have not that Advantage, I here obſerve the following Particularities.

The *Portugueſe* then differ from the *Spaniards* in the Sound of their *g*, *j*, *m*, *x*, *lh*, *ão*, *oés*, *ãa*. The *Spaniards* ſound the *g*, *j*, and *x* as a Guttural, with a ſtrong Aſpiration in the Throat; but the *Portugueſe* ſound the *g* and *j* exactly like the *French*, and the *x* they uſe inſtead of the *French ch*, except in ſome Words derived from the *Latin*, as is ſhewn in the Grammar, where it keeps the Sound it has in the *Engliſh* Tongue. The *m* ſounds like *eng* in *Engliſh*: This is a true *French* Sound;

for when the *Portugueſe* ſound *bom* good, and the *French* their *bon* good, there is no Difference at all to be perceived. Likewiſe the *Portugueſe* Words *ſom*, *tom*, a Sound, a Tone, the *French* write *ſon*, *ton*, but pronounce exactly alike. The *lhe* ſounds like the *French ll* when an *i* ſtands before it, and another Vowel follows; thus the *French* Word *fille*, a Daughter or Girl, would be wrote by the *Portugueſe* *filhe*. The *ão* is pronounced like *aung* in *Engliſh*, which is alſo of *French* Extraction; and the *French* Words *faon*, *paon*, a Deer, a Peacock, if wrote in *Portugueſe* Characters, muſt be *fão* or *fam*, or *pão* or *pam*. Beſides, it is obvious that the *French* often ſound the *em* like *aung*. The *ões* is pronounced like *oings*; this alſo is eaſily perceived to be a *French* Sound, and therefore, for Brevity's ſake, we'll ſay no more on this Head, but take it for granted that the Sounds wherein the *Portugueſe* differ from the *Spaniſh*, are of *French* Extraction.

And as the *French* Language has ſo generally obtained all over *Europe*, by reaſon of its Softneſs of Sound and Expreſſion, it is ſurpriſing that what is admired in the *French* Tongue, ſhould be condemned and deſpiſed in the *Portugueſe*. What I have ſaid here is to vindicate the *Portugueſe* Tongue from the Prejudices which it labours under in the Opinion of Men. And to conclude this Argument, we may very juſtly ſay that the *Portugueſe* Tongue has a Mixture of the *Spaniſh* Gravity and *French* Softneſs, and is as uſeful in Commerce as the

Spaniſh,

Spaniſh, and therefore equal (if not ſuperior) to its Rival.

Was I to enumerate the many *Portugueſe* Settlements on the *African* Coaſt and both the *Indies*, I could eaſily verify what I advance; but that is too obvious to need being taken notice of here; I will only obſerve that the *Portugueſe* being near akin to the *Lingua Franca*, it is current upon all the Coaſts of the *Eaſt Indies* and *Africa*; and as a *Portugueſe* is eaſily underſtood by a *Spaniard*, one may correſpond to all their Dominions in *Europe* and *America* in that Language; to which I may add, that the *Portugueſe* is eaſier for an *Engliſhman*'s Tongue than the *Spaniſh*; and that that Nation are better and more conſtant Friends to the *Engliſh* than the *Spaniards*.

By reaſon of the aforeſaid Prejudices Men have had in Favour of the *Spaniſh* Tongue, the *Portugueſe* has lain diſregarded and uncultivated among us; inſomuch, that hardly any *Portugueſe* Books are imported, and within theſe thirty Years paſt but one Grammar has been printed; which Work was done in ſo confuſed a Method, that many did not learn the Language for want of a proper Guide; and thoſe who reſolved to make a Progreſs in it were confuſed by the many Contradictions, and led into groſs Miſtakes by the erroneous Account the Author gives of the Declenſions and Conjugations.

All theſe Diſadvantages, I hope, have been removed in this preſent Undertaking. I have con-

conſulted the Grammars of all the *European* Languages, to bring this into the beſt Method poſſible; and ſince I am acquainted with all thoſe Languages, I have endeavour'd to explain in an eaſy Manner the Difficulties of the *Portugueſe* Tongue, by comparing them with one or other of the modern Languages.

Firſt, the Letters and their Pronunciation, and the Reading of them, is ſhewn in an eaſy Method, from *Engliſh* Examples: That done, the Accents are treated on; and then to acquaint the Learner with what he is going to do when he handles Nouns, Verbs, *&c.* all the Parts of Speech are explain'd to him in ſo familiar a Manner, that the weakeſt Capacity may learn thereby, that Nouns, Verbs, Participles, Adverbs, *&c.* are not ſuch Myſteries as in ſome Grammars they ſeem to be. The Signification of Caſes, and Numbers, Singular and Plural, both in Nouns and Verbs, is afterwards explain'd; ſo that this Grammar may ſerve as well as any to one who has a Deſire of knowing the Rudiments of Grammar, be it for what Language ſoever, the Foundations being laid down here in a clear, intelligible, conciſe, and methodical Order.

When the Reader takes a View of the Contents of the Chapters, the Work will ſpeak for itſelf.

The Articles, which moſt Beginners are ſtrangely perplex'd at, are in no Grammar that I have ſeen yet explained in ſo plain and ample a Manner as in this. The Declenſions of

Nouns

Nouns and Pronouns, I flatter myſelf, will be found clear and ſatisfactory. In the Conjugating of Verbs I have avoided the unneceſſary Multiplication of Moods, and only ſet down the Indicative, Imperative, Optative or Subjunctive, and Infinitive. Some are fond of others they call *Potential*, *Permiſſive*, and *Conjunctive*, which many and hard Words deter and diſcourage the Learner, thinking he has ſo many different Moods and Terminations yet to learn, when, in effect, thoſe Moods are nothing elſe but the Indicative or Subjunctive, conjugated with ſome Conjunction prefix'd, which governs either the one or the other of theſe Moods; and if the Multiplication of ſtrange and hard Things adds to the Beauty of a Grammar, I have ſhewn the Reader how at Leiſure he may compoſe as many different Moods as there are different Kinds of Conjunctions. The *permiſſive* Mood, taken notice of, *p.* 82, ſeems ſomewhat confuſed on account of the Word *amaſſe*, which is ſaid to be of the perfect Signification; but as ſome Authors make uſe of it in that Senſe, I hope the Critick will lay the Fault on the Idiom of the Language, and not on me. The Uſe of theſe Moods muſt be learnt by Practice; and when the Learner once knows how to apply the Conjunctions, which we have ſhewn in the Syntax, he will in courſe ſpeak in the Permiſſive, Potential, *&c.* Moods, without knowing there are any ſuch perplexing Things belonging to Grammar.

The Syntax is ſhort, becauſe I would not overload the Learner with Numbers of Rules, as ſome Grammarians do; and as the Syntax is to ſhew the Uſe of the Parts of Speech in combining them together, I have done that in as ſimple and conciſe a Manner as poſſible. The Treatiſes on the *Orthography*, *Etymology*, or the Nature of the Language itſelf, and the *Proſodie* and Accenting of Syllables, I hope will alſo be found ſatisfactory.

The Vocabulary is compoſed of Nouns Subſtantive and Adjective, and Verbs, the moſt uſeful and common in their kind, and ſo full that in ſome meaſure it may ſupply the Place of a Dictionary. The Dialogues treat of the moſt common Occurrences in Life; and a Perſon who knows them by heart, may help himſelf in all manner of Converſation.

And laſtly, to make this Grammar likewiſe uſeful to a *Portugueſe* who wants to learn *Engliſh*, I have ſubjoin'd a Compendium of the *Engliſh* Grammar, by which Aſſiſtance, I flatter myſelf, the Learner will be led ſo far as to be able to make uſe of the firſt Part of this Grammar to perfect himſelf in the *Engliſh* Tongue. If any Faults ſhould be obſerved in this Work, I hope the Critic will be the gentler with me, conſidering I had no Pattern of this kind to copy from; and but a very confuſed and incorrect Grammar to conſult, when any Difficulty occurr'd.

THE

GRAMMATICA
Anglo-Luſitanica.

CHAP. I.

Of the Letters, and their Pronunciation.

THE *Portugueſe* endeavour to pronounce as they write, and to ſound all their Letters; ſeveral of them have Sounds peculiar only to that Nation, which we have attempted here to repreſent by Examples from the *Engliſh* Tongue, to the End that the Reader, with very little Aſſiſtance, may be able to attain the true Pronunciation of that Language.

They have Twenty-four Letters, as

ABCDEFGHIJLMNOPQRSTUVXYZ.

Six of them are Vowels, *viz. a, e, i, y, o, u.*

A is pronounced like the *Engliſh au* or *a* in *all, wall, fall*; as *amór* Love, read *aumór*; *amo* a Maſter, r. *aumo.*

It is ſometimes long, ſometimes ſhort, according as the Accent is placed, as ſhall be ſhewn hereafter.

E ſounds like the *Engliſh e* in *every*, or *a* in *ſame*; *edificár*, to build, r. *adificaur*; *eſcola*,

a School, r. *Aſcólau.* It is both Maſculine and Feminine, the Maſculine is mark'd with an Accent, the Feminine not; as *Pedro*, Peter, r. *Padro*; but *buſqué*, I look'd for, r. *booſká*.

I ſounds like *e* or *i* in *intimate*; as *indiciar*, to diſcloſe; *intimar*, to intimate.

Y ſtands alſo for *e*, but with this Difference, that it is pronounced longer, or like *ee*, *Rey*, the King, r. *Raï*; as *monumento*, a Monument, r. *monumento*; and before *a* and *o* it is perceived moſt; as *joya*, a Jewel, r. *joe-iau*; *joyo*, Darnel, or Tare, r. *joe-io*.

O ſounds like *o* in *over*, *open*, *&c.*

U is pronounced like *oo* in *ſhoot*, or *ou* in *you*; as *abſoluto*, abſolute, r. *aubſolooto*.

The Consonants are,

B, which has the ſame Power or Sound as the *Engliſh*.

C before *e* and *i* ſounds like *s*, and before *a*, *o*, and *u*, like a *k*; but when 'tis mark'd with a little *s*, or a Stroke underneath, which they call a *Plica*, it alſo aſſumes the Sound of an *s*, or rather a *ſſ* before *a*, *o*, and *u*; as *çapato*, a Shoe, r. *ſaupauto*, *açóute*, a Whip, r. *aſſoete*; *çumo*, Juice, r. *ſumo*.

D and *F* always retain the ſame Sound they have in other Languages.

G before *a*, *o*, and *u* ſounds like the *Engliſh*, but before *e* and *i* like a *French g*, much ſofter than the *Engliſh*, or like the *g* in *Edge*, if that Word could be imagined to be pronounced without the *d* in it, which is always heard before the *Engliſh g*, and cauſes that Difference there is in the Sound between the *Engliſh* and *French*, or *Portugueſe g*; but as we have no Example truly to repreſent its Sound, we muſt leave it to be learnt from a Voice. *Gue* and *gui* are pronounc'd hard, and the laſt Vowel only heard, as *guerra*, War,

War, r. *garrau*; *guiſa*, a Manner, r. like *gi* in *give*, *giſau*.

When *g* ſtands before *ua*, the two Vowels muſt be ſounded diſtinctly; as *guarda*, a Guard, r. *gu-aurdau*.

H before a Vowel has hardly the Force of any Sound; as in *homem*, *herdéyro*, *honrado*, r. *ómeng*, *erda-eero*, *onraudo*.

But this Letter is of Uſe in a peculiar Manner among the *Portugueſe*, when placed after the Letters *c*, *l*, *n*; as *ch*, *lh*, *nh*.

Cha, *che*, *chi*, *cho*, *chu*, pronounce as you do the *ch* in Chamber, Cherry, Child, Choice, Church: Thus *chave*, a Key, r. *chau-ve*; *chegâr*, to arrive, r. *chegaur*; *chinela*, a Slipper, r. *cheenálau*; *chorâr*, to cry, r. *choraur*; *chupar*, to ſuck, r. *choopaur*.

☞ Some pronounce the *ch* as the *Engliſh* do *ſh*, but as that Cuſtom has not yet univerſally prevailed, we cannot lay it down for a Rule.

Lha, *lhe*, *lhi*, *lho*, *lhu*, r. *liau*, *liée*, *le-â*, *li-o*, *li-oo*; as *abelha*, a Bee, r. *aubal-eau*; *Mulher*, a Woman, r. *Mool-eár*; *colhido*, gather'd, r. *col-e-eedo*; *filho*, a Son, r. *feel-e-o*; *olhudo*, full of Eyes, r. *ol-e-oodo*.

Nha, *nhe*, *nhi*, *nho*, *nhu*, r. *ne-au*, *ne-a*, *ne-ee*, *ne-ó*, *ne-oo*; as *unha*, a Nail, r. *oon-e-au*; *dinhéyro*, Money, r. *deen-e-áero*; *grunhir*, to grunt, r. *groon-e-eer*; *linho*, Flax, r. *leen-e-o*; *nenhum*, Nobody, r. *nan-e-oom*.

N. B. Obſerve the *h* in *cha*, *che*, *chi*, *cho*, *chu*, and *nha*, *nhe*, *nhi*, *nho*, *nhu*, ſtands for an *i*, or *Engliſh e*, which, however, ought to be pronounced very ſhort.

J or the *j* Conſonant, ſounds like their *g*, with this Difference, that it is ſoft before all Vowels, without Exception.

L, whether ſingle or double, always ſounds

like the *Engliſh l*; *lado*, a Side, r. *laudo*; *alli*, there, r. *allee*.

M ſounds like the *Engliſh m*; as *macho*, a Male, r. *maucho*; but *am*, *em*, *im*, *om*, *um*, at the End of Words read *aung*, *eng*, *ing*, *ong*, *oong*; as *carvam*, a Coal, r. *caurvaung*; *bem*, well, r. *beng*; *aſſim*, ſo, r. *auſſing*; *bom*, good, r. *bong*; *algum*, ſomebody, r. *algoong*.

Am, *im*, *om*, *um*, in the Beginning or Middle of Words, retain their natural Sound: But *em*, either in the Beginning or Middle of a Word, ſounds like *eng*; as *emgano*, a Cheat, r. *eng-gauno*; *dizemlhe*, they tell him, r. *deeſenglié*; except in the Words that come from the *Latin*, where the *m* keeps its natural Sound; ſo *emperador*, an Emperor, r. *emperadór*; *exemplo*, an Example, r. *exemplo*.

N ſounds like the *Engliſh*.

P ſounds like the *Engliſh*.

Q before *ua*, r. *kuaw*; thus *qual*, which, r. *kuall*; but *que* and *qui*, r. *ka* and *ke*; *quebrar*, to break, r. *kabraur*; *quinta*, a Country Seat, r. *keentau*.

R, or *rr*, is pronounced as in other Languages.

S, or *ſſ*, the ſame.

T, the ſame, except that before *i* it never aſſumes the Sound of a *c*, as in *Engliſh*; thus, *fatiar*, to cut, r. *faut-e-aur*; *fatia de pam*, a Slice of Bread, r. *fauteeau de paung*.

V ſounds like the *Engliſh*.

X, pronounce like *ſh*; *queyxáda*, a Cheekbone, r. *kaïſhauda*; *queyxarſe*, to complain, r. *kaïſhaurſe*; but in ſome Words derived from the *Latin*, beginning with *a* and *e*, it retains its natural Force, as in *axungia*, *exemplo*, &c.

Z is pronounced like *ſ*; thus *produzir*, to produce, r. *prodooſeer*; *prezar*, to value, r. *preſaur*; *reſão*, Reaſon, r. *raſaung*.

The DIPHTHONGS.

The *Portugueſe* have many Diphthongs, which they generally pronounce like diſtinct Letters, with this Difference, that the firſt Letter muſt be ſounded longer than the ſecond; as, *máis*, more, r. *mau-is*; *náo*, a Ship, r. *nau-o*; *auto*, an Act, r. *au-uto*; *déito*, I fling away, r. *dá-ito*; *veſtío*, I cloath, r. *veſtí o*; *pois*, then, r. *po-is*; *peſſóa*, a Perſon, r. *peſſó-au*; *rúa*, a Highway, r. *roo-au*.

The Diphthongs or Combinations of Vowels are of five Sorts.

The firſt is the *ae*, as *cae*, *caem*, he falls, they fall; alſo in *ay*, as *pay*, Father; in *ao*, as in *páo*, Wood; *máo*, bad; and in *au*, as in *cauſa*, a Cauſe; *pauſa*, a Pauſe.

The ſecond is in *ea*, *ey*, *ei*, *eo*, and *eu*, as *céa*, a Supper; *rey*, *ley*, a King, the Law; *véo*, I ſee; *meu*, *teu*, *ſeu*, mine, thine, his.

The third in *ia* and *io*; *Clemencia*, Clemency; *fugío*, he fled.

The fourth in *oa*, *oe*, *oy*, and *ou*, as *peſſóa*, a Perſon; *póem*, they put; *boy*, an Ox; *dóu*, I give.

The fifth in *ua*, *ue*, *ui*, and *uo*, as *guarda*, a Guard; *guerra*, War; *guinchar*, to cry aloud; *quotidiano*, daily.

Obſerve, The *i* before the *o* in Words derived from the *Latin* is ſhort; as, *neceſſario*, neceſſary, r. *neceſſâur-e-o*; *contrario*, contrary, r. *contraur-e-o*.

Alſo when two Conſonants follow, the firſt Vowel of the Diphthong is ſhort; as *poente*, the Weſt, r. *po-ente*; *doente*, ſick, r. *do-ente*; *migalha*, a Crum, r. *mig auliau*.

i before *u* is ſhort when a Syllable follows; as, *viuva*, a Widow, r. *ve-óovau*; *miuda*, ſmall, r. *me-óodau*.

Likewiſe when an *r* or *z* follows after a Diphthong, the firſt Vowel is ſhort; as *doér*, to feel Pain, r. *do-ár*; *roer*, to gnaw, r. *ro-ár*; *juíz*, a Judge, r. *jou-ees*.

And the *i* in *uim* and *oim* is long; as *ruina*, Ruin, r. *roo-eenau*; *roim*, evil, r. *ro-íng*.

óens is pronounced *o-ins* and *o-ings*; as *galióens*, Galeons, r. *gaulio-ins*; *rezóens*, Reaſons, r. *rezo-ings*; others write *óes* inſtead of *oens*; as *galióes*, *rezóes*, *dilaçóes*, *cargaçóes*, &c.

Ou is ſounded by ſome like *oi*; thus, *ouro*, Gold, is pronounced by ſome *óiro*; *outro*, another, they read *óitro*; but the politer Way is to pronounce it like the *ow* in a *Bow*; thus, *outro*, r. *owtro*; *ouro*, r. *owro*, &c.

ao with a Stroke over them, call'd *Til*, ſounds like *am*, and they are indifferently wrote one for the other, tho' ſome pretend, that putting *am* inſtead of *ão*, is the moſt elegant Way of Writing, thus, *naçam*, or *nação*, a Nation, r. *nauſſaung*; *proviſão*, or *proviſam*, Proviſion, r. *proviſaung*.

ãa pronounce *aung*; thus, *irmãa*, a Siſter, r. *eermaung*; *maçãa*, an Apple, r. *mauſſaung*.

ães, r. *au-engs*; thus, *eſcrivães*, Writers or Clerks, r. *eſcree-vauengs*.

They have alſo ſome Triphthongs, which always have the Accent plac'd on the middlemoſt Vowel; as *poéira*, Duſt, r. *poé-ira*.

Many other Exceptions might be added; but as too many Rules commonly perplex the Reader, we leave the reſt to be attain'd by Practice.

To put theſe Rules about Pronunciation in Practice, we'll give the Reader here a few Lines of *Portugueſe*, expreſs'd after the *Engliſh* Way of Spelling, to ſhew how eaſy it is for any one to learn, almoſt by himſelf, to read that Language, by the Help of thoſe Rules.

PORTUGUESE.

Tive a honra de ſuas de quinze e vinte do mes paſſado pello correo, e de 22 ditto pello navio A. Capitam j pellas quais recebi ſuas ordens de carregar por ſeu riſco e Conta a bordo do primeiro bom navio, fazendo a viagem paro Amburgo 25 caixas de Açucares com 6. Caixas de brancos, e 50 rolos de Tabaco conſignados aos ſeus amigos e Correſpondentes os ſenhores A. B. e Companhia o que tudo a ſeu tempo ſera puntualmente comprido. Pello Correo proximo paſſado remety a V. M. 2 Letras de cambio, huã por ll. Eſterl. 250 e outra por 320 ditto, das quaes deſpois de chagadas nã̃o duvido de devido comprimento; pella primeira occaſiam avizarey a V. M. o neceſſario mais largamente.

ENGLISH.

Teeve au honra de ſuaus de kinze e veente do mes pauſſaudo pello Corráo, a de 22 ditto pello Nau-veeo A. Caupitaungj pellaus qu-auis recebee ſoo-aus ordengs da cauregaur por ſa-oo riſco a Conta au bordo do primá-iro bong nauveeo, fauzendo au veeaugeng paurau Aumboorgo 25 Cau-iſhaus de Auſoocaures cong 6 Cau-iſhaus de brauncos, a 50 rolos de Taubauco conſignaudos auos ſa-oos aumeegos e Correſpondentes os Saniores A. B. a Compapanee-au, o ke toodo au ſa-oo tempo ſarau poontooaulmente compreedo. Pello Corrao proximo pauſſado remetee au Voſſau Merced. 2 Létraus de caumbio, hooma por ll. Eſterl. 250 a owtrau por 320 ditto, daus qu-auis deſpo-es de chegáudaus nau-ong dooveedo de deveedo comprimento; pellau prima-ira ocauſiauong aveez-aura-ee a V. M. o neceſſaurio mau-is largaumente.

CHAP. II.

Of the Accents and Apoſtrophe.

ACcents are little Notes, invented to mark the Tone of the Voice in the Pronunciation.

Theſe Inflections of the Voice are of three Sorts; the raiſing it, the falling it, and that which partakes of both raiſing and falling the Voice in the ſame Syllable.

Therefore Men have invented three Sorts of Accents, two of them ſimple, *viz.* the Grave and Acute; and the third compoſed of both, to wit, the Circumflex.

The Acute raiſes the Syllable a little, and is mark'd by a little Line that riſes from the Left to the Right; thus, (´).

The Grave falls the Syllable, and is mark'd by a little Line deſcending from the Left to the Right; thus, (`).

The Circumflex is compoſed of both, and is mark'd thus, (^).

The *Portugueſe* don't uſe many Accents; but when they do, it is to diſtinguiſh the different Signification of ſome Words depending upon the placing of the Accent; for which uſe they commonly apply the Acute, as *éſta*, the Accent being placed upon the firſt Letter, is the Pronoun *this*; and *eſtá* the Accent on the laſt, is the Verb *eſtou* I am, in the third Perſon Singular, of the Indicative Mood, Preſent Tenſe; *partíram*, the Accent over the *i*, is the third Perſon Plural, of the Imperfect Subjunctive, of the Verb *partir*, to part, and *partirâm* the third Perſon Plural of the future Indicative.

The

The *Grave* has but little ſhare in their Writing, and is only placed over ſome few Monoſyllables, as the Feminine Article in the Dative Caſe, and the Adverb *jà*, already: But many mark even theſe with the *Acute* Accent.

The Circumflex is alſo but ſeldom made uſe of, it being look'd upon as no Fault to put the Acute inſtead of it, as *nô* a Knot, is likewiſe wrote by ſome *nó*. Here an Accent is abſolutely required to diſtinguiſh it from the Particle *no*, in the, *e. g. Day hum nô nó Cordel*, make a Knot in the Rope.

To know which Syllables are long and to be mark'd with Accents, belongs to another Part of Grammar, and ſhall be ſhewn under the Head of the *Proſodia*.

☞ We have made uſe of more Accents in this Grammar than is cuſtomary, which we beg the Criticks not to find fault with, it being done to point out the Letters the Streſs ſhou'd be put upon, for the ſake of Beginners.

The *Apoſtrophe* likewiſe takes place in this as in other Languages, being deſigned only for the more pleaſant and eaſy Pronunciation of Words, by cutting off a Vowel; as *de ouro*, *de arroz*, *de ovos*, the Vowel *e* of the Particle *de* is ſupplied by a Synalepha or Vocal Note, or what we commonly call an Apoſtrophe, and is writ as follows, *d'ouro*, *d'arroz*, *d'ovos*; but they generally put the Letters cloſe together, and place an Acute on the firſt Vowel inſtead of the Apoſtrophe; as *dóuro*, *dárroz*, *dóvos*, *néſte*, *nélle*, *délle*, &c.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

Of the Parts of Speech.

THE *Portugueſe*, as well as the *Latins*, have Eight Parts of Speech, which we think proper to explain before the Declenſions and Conjugations, that the Learner may know what is meant by the Word Noun Subſtantive or Adjective, Pronoun, a Verb, *&c.* before he undertakes to decline, or conjugate them.

A Speech or Diſcourſe is compoſed of Sentences, a Sentence of Words, a Word of Syllables, and a Syllable of Letters. *N. B.* Some Words have but one Syllable, which are called Monoſyllables, as *bem*, well; *ſem*, without; *por*, for.

By the Parts of Speech we mean here Words, which of what Signification ſoever they may be, are reduced under the eight following Heads, *viz. Noun*, *Pronoun*, *Verb*, *Participle*, *Prepoſition*, *Adverb*, *Conjunction*, and *Interjection*. Some call the *Article* the ninth Part of Speech, which however upon due Conſideration will be found to belong to the Claſs of the Pronouns.

A Noun expreſſes a Thing that may be felt, heard or underſtood; it is of two Kinds, as the Subſtantive and Adjective.

A *Noun Subſtantive* (from the *Latin*, *nomen* a Name, *ſubſtantivum* ſtanding by itſelf, from *ſubſiſto*, I ſubſiſt) may be underſtood by itſelf, without the Addition of any other Word; and is divided into two different Claſſes: As Appellative and Common.

The

The Noun Subſtantive Appellative is the Chriſtian or Sirname of any Man or Woman, Town or Country; as *Joam*, John; *Carlos*, Charles; *Anna*, Anne; *Catherina*, Catherine; *Londres*, *França*, London, France, *&c.*

The Noun Subſtantive Common, is a Word that is common to all Things of the ſame Sort; as *homem*, a Man; *mulher*, a Woman; *caza*, a Houſe; *pam*, Bread; *cam* a Dog; *gallo*, a Cock; *pedra*, a Stone; *navio*, a Ship; *livro*, a Book; *ouro*, Gold; *fogo*, Fire; *agua*, Water, *&c.*

A *Noun Adjective* (from *adjicio*, I add) is a Word that has no determinate Signification of its own, but is commonly join'd to a Noun Subſtantive to ſignify its Quality: Therefore whenever you can join the Word Thing with it, 'tis a certain Sign of its being a Noun Adjective. Thus you may ſay a great, handſome, white, black, good, long, full, hard, *&c.* Thing; but a Man, Woman, Child, Table, Pen, Book, a Houſe, is a Noun Subſtantive; becauſe you cannot ſay a Man, Woman, Child, Table, Pen, Book, Houſe Thing.

And *grande*, great; *bello*, handſome; *branco*, white; *negro*, black; *bom*, good; *longo*, long; *cheyo*, full; *duro*, hard, *&c.* cannot be underſtood till ſome Noun Subſtantive is joined with 'em, to explain who or what is great, handſome, white, black, good, long, full, hard, *&c.* as a great Houſe, a handſome Woman, a white Hand, black Ink, a good Law, a long Street, a full Meaſure, a hard Metal or Stone, *&c*, and you may ſay a great, handſome, white, black, *&c.* Thing.

A *Pronoun* (i. e. *pronomen*, a Fore-name, or ſomething before the Name) is a Word which ſtands inſtead of ſome other Noun to denote a Perſon or Thing; as, *eu*, *tu*, *elle*, I, thou, he;

que, what; *quem*, who; *eſte*, this; *aquelle*, that; as, *que diz elle* ou *ella*, what doth he or ſhe ſay? Here the Pronouns *elle* and *ella* denote the Perſon of a Man or Woman that ſpoke before; and *que*, what, the Thing ſpoke of; *quem he eſte*, who is that? here *quem* and *eſte* indicate the Perſon of ſome Man.

A *Verb* (i. e. *Verbum* a Word) is a Word that ſignifies either ſome Action or Paſſion; as, *quero*, I will; *ſiguo*, I follow; *encho*, I fill; *tolero*, I ſuffer; *ſou* or *eſtou*, I am; *ey* or *tenho*, I have.

A *Participle* (from *participo*, I partake) is made of a Verb, and partakes of it in ſuch a Manner that it may alſo be uſed for a Noun, and always has regard to ſome Perſon. There are Participles of three different kinds, as of the Preterperfect Tenſe, in *Latin amatus*, beloved; of the Preſent Tenſe, loving, *amans*; and the Future, as *amaturus*, he that ſhall or will love.

☞ We make uſe here of Examples from the *Latin*, becauſe they expreſſing the Thing in one Word may beſt ſerve to illuſtrate the Nature of this Part of Speech; which the modern Languages have retained, tho' they cannot expreſs themſelves in ſo ſimple and pure a Manner, but are fain to make uſe of ſome auxiliar Verbs for that purpoſe; as may be ſeen in its Place in the Conjugation of the Verbs, whither we refer the Reader.

The *Adverb* (from *ad* to, *verbum* a Word) is joined to the Verb to ſignify ſome Qualification: Thus to expreſs the Manner how I read, write, *&c.* cannot be done without the Help of an Adverb, *e. g. leyo bem*, *eſcrevo mal*, I read well, I write ill. *Vid. the Chap. of Adverbs.*

The

The *Conjunction* (from *conjungo*, I join together) is a Particle which joins Verbs and Sentences together; as, *e*, and; *ſe*, if; *ou*, or, *que*, that; *mas*, but, *meo páy e máy*, my Father and Mother; *ſe tudizes que éſta cóuſa he verdadeira ou falſa*, *if* you ſay, *that* this Thing is true *or* falſe, *&c.*

A *Prepoſition* (from *præpono*, I put before) is an indeclinable Particle, and is often joined with Nouns, Pronouns and Verbs, to modify their Signification: Such are the Words *em*, in; *fora*, without; *ſem*, without; *a*, to; *de*, from, *&c.* *(Vid. the Chap. of Prepoſ.)* as *eſtar em caza*, to be in the Houſe, or at Home; *eſcrevér á hum amígo*, to write to a Friend; *não pode vivér ſem elle*, he cannot live without him; *em amár*, in loving; *pera ler*, for to read.

An *Interjection* (from *interjicio* to caſt between) is a Particle not declinable, uſed to expreſs ſome Emotion of the Mind, as Surprize, Admiration; as *háy de ti*, woe be to thee! *O que me peſa*, O how ſorry am I! *O que Deós he grande*, O how great God is! *O miſéro de mim*, O miſerable that I am!

☞ If you ſhou'd find theſe Rules too few and ſhort, to conceive a perfect Idea of all the Parts of Speech and their Uſe, you may turn over the Syntax, where you will find more ample Inſtruction.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

Of the Genders, Numbers, and Caſes.

THE *Portugueſe* Nouns have but two Genders, *viz.* the Maſculine, which is ſignified by the Article *o*, and the Feminine, by the Article *a*, anſwering to the Latin *hic* and *hæc*. Some of their Pronouns have alſo the Neuter Gender, which may be ſeen under the Head of *the Pronouns Demonſtrative*; ſome Nouns both Subſtantive and Adjective are of the Maſculine and Feminine Gender at once.

The Declenſion, which is a Changing of a Noun into ſeveral Caſes, has two Numbers, *viz.* the *Singular* which ſpeaks but of one, and the *Plural* comprehending many; as in Singular *livro* a Book, in Plural *livros* Books.

The Plural is commonly made by adding an *s* to the Singular: As *caza*, a Houſe; *muro*, a Wall; *cidáde*, a City; in Plural *cazás*, Houſes; *múros*, Walls; *cidádes*, Cities.

They have ſix Caſes, or Changes, *viz.* the *Nominative*, *Genitive*, *Dative*, *Accuſative*, *Vocative*, and *Ablative*, to denote ſo many different Senſes the Word ſhou'd be taken in.

The *Nominative* (from the Latin *nominare* to name) only names the Perſon or Thing, as *homem*, a Man; *pédra*, a Stone.

The *Genitive* (from *generare* to beget) betokens that one Perſon or Thing proceeds from, depends from, or is another's Property; as *filho de Joam*, the Son of John; here *Joam* ſtands in the Genitive Caſe, being the Perſon the Son belongs to, proceeded or depended from: *Caza de Pedro*,

Pedro, the Houſe of *Peter*, or *Peter*'s (his) Houſe, *Peter* ſtands in the Genitive, he being the Perſon the Houſe belongs to.

The *Dative* (from the Latin *dare* to give) denotes the Perſon to whom a Perſon or Thing is given; as *dou a Pedro*, I give to *Peter*.

The *Accuſative* (from the Latin *accuſare*, to accuſe) ſignifies the Perſon or Thing we do or intend to act upon; as *eſcrevo a carta*, I write the Letter; *lerey o livro*, I will read the Book; *açoutarey a Pedro*, I will whip *Peter*; here *carta*, *livro*, and *Pedro*, ſtand in the Accuſative, being the Subject of ſome Action.

The *Vocative* (from the Latin *vocare*, to call upon) ſignifies that a Perſon or Thing is call'd upon; as *O filho que fazes!* O Son, what doſt thou! *O deſgraciada caſa!* O unhappy Houſe! *filho* and *caſa* being here call'd upon, ſtand in the Vocative Caſe.

The *Ablative* (from the Preterperfect Participle *ablatus*, the Verb *aufero*, I take from) ſhews that Perſon or Thing, a Perſon or Thing is taken away from; as *venho dâ cidade*, I come from the City; *Pedro o ſalvó dò fogo*, *Peter* ſaved him from the Fire; here *cidade* and *fogo* ſtand in the Ablative, becauſe ſomething comes from, or is taken from the City and the Fire.

For a farther Information about the Uſe of the Caſes, and how they are often govern'd by Prepoſitions, I refer the Reader to the *Syntax*, the preſent being only to inſtruct him ſo far that he may know what he doth when he declines a Noun thro' the Numbers and ſeveral Caſes.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

Of the Articles, and their Declenſions.

THE Articles properly belong to the Pronouns, as we ſaid above; but as no Noun can be declined without them, I thought it neceſſary to ſhew how they are declined, before we enter upon Nouns Subſtantive and Adjective.

The Articles are either *definite* or *indefinite*.

The Maſculine Article definite.	The Feminine Article definite.
Singular Number.	*Singular Number.*
N. o, *the.*	*N.* a, *the.*
G. dó, *of the.*	*G.* dá, *of the.*
D. ao, pera o, péllo, *to the.*	*D.* à, pera a pélla, *to the.*
Ac. o, ao, *the.*	*Ac.* á, *the.*
V. o, ô.	*V.* o, ô.
A. dó, *from the.*	*A.* dá, *from the.*
Plural Number.	*Plural Number.*
N. os, *the.*	*N.* as, *the.*
G. dos, *of the.*	*G.* dás, *of the.*
D. aos, pera os, pellos, *to the.*	*D.* às, pera as, péllas, *to the.*
Ac. os, aos, *the.*	*Ac.* ás, *the.*
V. o, ô.	*V.* o, ô.
A. dós, *from the.*	*A.* dás, *from the.*

When the *Portugueſe* would expreſs the *Engliſh* Article *it*, they make uſe of the Article *o*, and ſay *eu não o vi*, I have not ſeen it; and therefore, we juſtly aſcribe alſo a neuter Gender to this Article;

ticle; which has only a Singular Number, and is declined in the Manner following:

Sing.

N. o, *it.*
G. dó, *of it.*
D. ao, *to it*
Ac. o, *it.*
V. caret.
A. dó, *from it.*

The Article *a* in *Engliſh*, is expreſſed by the *Portugueſe hum*, *huma*, and declined as follows:

Sing.	*Plur.*
N. hum, ma, *a.*	*N.* huns, mas, *ſome.*
G. de hum, ma, *of a.*	*G.* de huns, mas, *of ſome.*
D. a hum, ma, *to a.*	*D.* a huns, mas, *to ſome.*
Ac. a hum, ma, *a.*	*Ac.* a huns, mas, *ſome.*
V. caret.	*V.* caret.
A. de hum, ma, *from a.*	*A.* de huns, mas, *from ſome.*

Obſerve, the *Engliſh* Article *a* has no Plural, but borrows another Word to expreſs the Plural Signification.

Of the Article indefinite.

This Article has no Diſtinction of Genders, and only four Caſes (in the *Spaniſh* and *Portugueſe*, and but three in *French* and *Italian*) which ſerve both in the Singular and Plural Number, *viz.*

Gen. de, *of.*
Dat. á & pera. *to.*
Acc. á & pera.
Abl. de *or* por, *from.*

By the following Example you may ſee, that the Words which are declined with the *Article indefinite*, have no Article in the Nominative, and Vocative Caſe.

N. Roma, *Rome.*
G. de Roma, *of Rome.*
D. á & pera Roma, *to Rome.*
Ac. á Roma, *Rome.*
V. Roma, *Rome.*
A. de Roma, *from Rome.*

The Article Indefinite ſerves to decline the Names of Angels, Men, Towns, the Names of the Months, and the Pronouns.

This Article is alſo put with any other Noun, when two Nouns meet together, the laſt being in the Genitive Caſe, and having no determinate Signification aſſign'd to it; as *huma duzia de meyas*, a Dozen of Stockings; *hum número de cazas*, a Number of Houſes; *humel arrat de carne*, a Pound of Fleſh. Here 'tis not determined what Stockings, Houſes, or Fleſh you ſpeak of; and when you employ the indefinite Article *of* in *Engliſh*, the *Portugueſe* do ſo likewiſe.

When the Article indefinite *de* precedes a Word which begins with a Vowel, the *e* is often caſt away, and the next following Letter mark'd with an Acute Accent; as *algum délles*, ſome one of them; and ſome leave a little Space betwixt the *d* and the next following Letter, with an Apoſtrophe on the Top; as *algum d'elles*; but the firſt Way is moſt practiſed at preſent, as we have ſaid above.

☞ Of the Uſe, Application, and Diſtinction of theſe two Articles, ſee the *Syntax*.

CHAP. VI.

Of the Declenſions of the Nouns Subſtantives, and their Terminations.

THE *Portugueſe* have but one Sort of Declenſion; and their Caſes, which admit of no

no Variety of Termination, as was uſual with the *Romans*, are only diſtinguiſh'd by prefixing the Articles, and the Plural Number is commonly made by adding an *s* to the Singular.

An Example of the Maſculine Gender.

The Singular Number.

N. o Témplo, *a or the Church.*
G. dó Témplo, *of the Church.*
D. ao & peraо, péllo Témplo, *to the Church.*
Ac. o, ao Témplo, *the Church.*
V. ô Témplo, *ô Church!*
A. dó Témplo, *from the Church.*

The Plural Number.

N os Témplos, *the Churches.*
G. dós Témplos, *of the Churches.*
D. aos & peraos, pellos Témplos, *to the Churches.*
Ac. os, aos Témplos, *the Churches.*
V. ô Témplos, *ô Churches.*
A. dós Témplos, *from the Churches.*

An Example of the Feminine Gender.

The Singular Number.

N. a Caza, *a or the Houſe.*
G. dá Caza, *of the Houſe.*
D. a & pera a, pella Caza, *to the Houſe.*
Ac. á Caza, *the Houſe.*
V. ô Caza, *ô Houſe!*
A. dá Caza, *from the Houſe.*

The Plural Number.

N. as Cazas, *the Houſes.*
G. dás Cazas, *of the Houſes.*
D. às & pera as, péllas Cazas, *to the Houſes.*
Ac. às Cazas, *the Houſes.*
V. ô Cazas, *ô Houſes.*
A. dás Cazas, *from the Houſes.*

Declenſions of the Nouns in *m.*

Singular.	*Plural.*
N. a Adem, *a or the Duck.*	*N.* as Adens, *the Ducks.*
G. dá Adem, *of the Duck.*	*G.* dás Adens *of the Ducks.*
D. à & pera a, pella Adem, *to the Duck.*	*D.* ás & pera as, péllas Adens, *to the Ducks,*
Ac. à Adem, *the Duck.*	*Ac.* ás Adens, *the Ducks.*
V. ô Adem, *ô Duck!*	*V.* ô Adens, *ô Ducks.*
A. dá Adem, *from the Duck.*	*A.* dás Adens, *from the Ducks.*

Declenſion of the Nouns terminating in *az.*

Singular.	*Plural.*
N. o Rapáz, *a or the Boy.*	*N.* os Rapázes, *the Boys.*
G. dó Rapáz, *of the Boy.*	*G.* dós Rapázes, *of the Boys.*
D. ao & pera o, pello Rapáz, *to the Boy.*	*D.* aos & pera os, pellos Rapázes, *to the Boys.*
Ac. o, ao Rapáz, *the Boy.*	*Ac.* os, aos Rapázes, *the Boys.*
V. ô Rapáz, *ô Boy!*	*V.* ô Rapázes, *ô Boys!*
A. dó Rapáz, *from the Boy.*	*A.* dós Rapázes, *from the Boys.*

They have Nouns Subſtantive of many other Terminations, which it will be neceſſary to ſet down here, to ſhew how they change their Singulars into Plurals.

All *Portugueſe* Nouns Subſtantive end either with the ſix Vowels *a, e, i, o, u, y,* or theſe five Conſonants, *l, m, r, s, z*; which complicated with the Vowels, make

al	*am*	*ar*	*as*	*az*
el	*em*	*er*	*es*	*ez*
il	*im*	*ir*	*is*	*iz*
ol	*om*	*or*	*os*	*oz*
ul	*um*	*ur*	*us*	*uz*

Examples of the ſeveral Terminations.

	The Singular.	*The Plural.*
A.	Maria, *Catherina.*	Marias, *Catherinas.*
	a Alma, *a Soul.*	Almas, *Souls.*
	a Vida, *Life.*	Vidas, *Lives.*
	a Romãa, *a Pomegranate.*	Romãas, *Pomegranates. or* Romáens.
	a Maçãa, *an Apple.*	Maçãas, *Apples, or* Maçáens.
E.	o Barrete, *a Cap.*	Barretes, *Caps.*
	o Capote, *a Cloak.*	Capotes, *Cloaks.*
I & Y.	o Thalí, *a Belt.*	Thalíys, *Belts, or* Thalíns.
	o Nebrí, *a Hawk.*	Nebríys, *Hawks, or* Nebríns.
	o Rubi, *a Ruby.*	Rubíys, *Rubies, or* Rubíns.
	o Pay, *a Father.*	Páys, *Fathers.*
	a May, *a Mother.*	Máys, *Mothers.*
	a Ley, *a Law.*	Léys, *Laws.*
	o Rey, *a King.*	Reys, *Kings.*
O.	Antonio, *Anthony.*	Antónios, *Anthony's.*
	o Livro, *a Book.*	Lívros, *Books.*
U.	o Perú, *a Turkey.*	Perús, *Turkeys.*
	o Mú, *a Mule.*	Mus, *Mules.*
	o Judéu, *a Jew.*	Judéus, *Jews.*
Ál.	o Avental, *an Apron.*	Avantáys, *Aprons.*
	o Punhál, *a Ponyard.*	Punháys, *Ponyards.*
	o Hoſpital, *an Hoſpital.*	Hoſpitàys, *Hoſpitals.*
El.	Daniél, *Daniel.*	Daniéys, *Daniels.*

	The Singular.	*The Plural.*
	o Granél, *a Granary.*	Granéys, *Granaries.*
	o Capitél, *a Head of a Pillar.*	Capitéys, *Heads of Pillars.*
Il.	o Barríl, *a Barrel.*	Barríys, *Barrels.*
	o Gomíl, *a Leaver.*	Gomíys, *Leavers.*
	o Funíl, *a Funnel.*	Funíys, *Funnels.*
Ol.	o Sol, *the Sun.*	Soys, *Suns.*
	o Caracól, *a Snail.*	Caracoys, *Snails.*
	o Lançól, *a Sheet.*	Lançoys, *Sheets.*
Ul.	o Sul, *South.*	Suis, *Souths.*
	o Tafúl, *a Gameſter.*	Tafúys, *Gameſters.*

Words ending in *am* regularly make their Plurals in *áens*; as

o Trovám, *Thunder.*	Trovéens.
o Padrám, *a round Pillar or Poſt.*	Padróens, *round Pillars or Poſts.*
o Feijám, *a French Bean.*	Feijóens, *French or Kidney Beans.*
oEſquadrám, *aSquadron.*	Eſquadróens, *Squadrons.*

Except ſome that make their Plural in *ães*; as

o Cortezám, *a Courtier.*	Cortezães, *Courtiers.*
o Irmám, *a Brother.*	Irmães, *Brothers.*
o Villám, *a Countryman.*	Villães, *Countrymen.*
o Cidadám, *a Citizen.*	Cidadães, *Citizens.*
o Chriſtám, *a Chriſtian.*	Chriſtães, *Chriſtians.*

And except, ſecondly, ſuch as make their Plurals in *áes*; as

o Cám, *a Dog.*	Cães, *Dogs.*
o Eſcrivám, *a Clerk or Writer.*	Eſcrivães, *Clerks.*
o Capitám, *a Captain.*	Capitães, *Captains.*

o Pâm,

The Singular.	*The Plural.*
o Pám, *Bread.*	Pães, *Bread, or Loaves of Bread.*
o Ruſiám, *a Ruffian.*	Ruſiães, *Ruffians.*
o Gaviám, *a Sparrow-Hawk.*	Gaviães, *Sparrow-Hawks.*
o Alemám, *a German.*	Alemães, *Germans.*
Em. a Adém, *a Duck.*	Adens, *Ducks.*
o Almazém, *a Warehouſe.*	Almazéns, *Warehouſes.*
o Homem, *a Man.*	Hómens, *Men.*
Im. o Chím, *a Chineſe.*	Chins, *Chineſe.*
o Rocím, *a Horſe.*	Rocíns, *Horſes.*
o Eſpadím, *a little Sword.*	Eſpadíns, *little Swords.*
Om. o Tom, *a Tone.*	Tons, *Tones.*
o Dom, *a Gift.*	Dons, *Gifts.*
Um. o Atum, *Tunny-Fiſh.*	Atúns, *Tunny-Fiſhes.*
o Jejúm, *a Faſt.*	Jejúns, *Faſts.*
Ar. Ceſár, *Cæſar.*	Ceſáres, *Cæſars.*
o Açucár, *Sugar.*	Açucáres, *Sugars.*
o Polegar, *a Thumb.*	Polegáres, *Thumbs.*
Er. o praſér, *Pleaſure.*	Prazéres, *Pleaſures.*
o Aluguer, *the Rent of a Houſe.*	Aluguéres, *Rents of Houſes.*
Ir & Yr. o Martyr, *a Martyr.*	Mártyres, *Martyrs.*
Or. o Açór, *an Hawk.*	Açóres, *Hawks.*
o Bemfeitór, *a Benefactor.*	Bemfeitóres, *Benefactors.*
o Caçadór, *a Huntſman.*	Caçadóres, *Huntſmen.*
o Lavradór, *a Huſbandman.*	Lavradóres, *Huſbandmen.*

The Singular.	*The Plural.*
Ur. Catúr, *a ſmall Veſſel at Sea*, in Latin *Liburnum.*	Catúres.
Az. o Primáz, *a Primate.*	Primázes, *Primates.*
o Arcáz, *a Trunk-Maker.*	Arcázes, *Trunk-Makers.*
o Rapáz, *a Boy.*	Rapázes, *Boys.*
Ez. o Ingléz, *an Engliſhman.*	Inglézes, *Engliſhmen.*
o Méz, *a Month.*	Mézes, *Months.*
o Marquéz, *a Marquis.*	Marquézes, *Marquiſſes.*
Iz. o Apprendíz, *an Apprentice.*	Apprendízes, *Apprentices.*
a Codorníz, *a Quail.*	Codornízes, *Quails.*
a Raíz, *a Root.*	Raízes, *Roots.*
Oz. o Arrioz, *a Globe of Stone.*	Arriózes, *Globes of Stone.*
Uz. o Abeſtrúz, *an Oſtrich.*	Abeſtrúzes, *Oſtriches.*
o Archabúz, *a Muſket.*	Archabúzes, *Muſkets.*

Nouns Subſtantive Irregular.

Some of them have only a Singular Number; as *Cal*, Lime; *Sal*, Salt; *Pez*, Pitch; *Ar*, Air; *Doença*, Sickneſs; *Próveito*, Profit.

Others have only a plural Termination, altho' they ſignify but one ſingle Thing, and have the plural Article prefix'd to them; as *os Láyvos*, the Foulneſs of the Face; *as Grélhas*, a Gridiron; *as Calças*, Breeches; *as Mígas*, Sops; *as Ceróulas*, Drawers; *Andás*, a Carriage; *Andillas*, a little Litter; *as Cámaras*, a Flux or Looſeneſs; *as Pareas*, a Tribute; *as Primícias*, the Firſt-fruits; *as Cócegas*, Tickliſhneſs; *as Cúſtas*, Expence; *os Editos*, Edicts; *as Entránhas*, Bowels; *as Exéquias*,

quias, a Funeral; *os Erpes*, mortified; *os Tornéos & as Juſtas*, Tilts and Tournaments; *reſto, ou demazia*, an Overplus.

N. B. I cannot forbear obſerving one of the Beauties of this Language, which is, that the *Portugueſe* have many Nouns Subſtantive ending in *ada*, which cannot be expreſs'd in other Languages without Circumlocution; as *Pedráda*, a Blow with a Stone; *Pancáda*, a Blow with a Stick or Club; *Cutiláda*, a Cut with a Sword; *Eſtocáda*,, a Stab with a Sword or Dagger, *&c.*

CHAP. VII.

Of Nouns Adjective, regular and irregular; their Genders, Terminations, Declenſions, and Compariſons.

THE Nouns Adjective, like the Subſtantive, have but two Genders, *viz.* the *Maſculine*, which they ſignify by the Article *o*, and *Feminine* by *a*, and ſome Words are both Maſculine and Feminine.

Their Terminations are,

	Singular.	*Plurat.*
A.	o Virtuóſo, *virtuous.*	os Virtuoſos, *virtuous.*
	o Linda, *fair.*	os Líndos, *fair.*
E.	o & a Grande, *great.*	os & as Grándes, *great.*
	o & a Forte, *ſtrong.*	os & as Fortés, *ſtrong.*
O.	o Fermóſo, *handſome.*	os Fermóſos, *handſome.*
	o So & a Só, *alone*, adj.	os Sos & as Sós, *alone or only*,

U. o Nú,

	Singular.	*Plural.*
U.	o Nú, a nua, *naked.*	os Nús, as nuas, *naked.*
	o Crú, a crua, *raw.*	os Crùs, as cruas, *raw.*
	o Méu, a minha, *mine.*	os Méus, as minhas, *mine.*
	o Téu, a tua, *thine.*	os Téus, as tuas, *thine.*
	o Séu, a ſua, *his.*	os Séus, as ſuas, *theirs.*
Al.	o & a principál, *chief.*	os & as Principáis, *the chief.*
	o & a Géral, *general.*	os & as Geráis, *generals.*
El.	o & a Agradável, *agreeable.*	os & as agradáveis, *agreeable.*
Il.	o & a Sotil, *ſubtle.*	os & as Sotíys, *ſubtle.*
	o & a Utíl, *uſeful.*	os & as Utíys, *uſeful.*
Ol.	o Eſpanhól, a Eſpanhóla, *a Spaniſh Man, or Spaniſh Woman.*	os Eſpanhóys, as Eſpanhólas, *Spaniſh Men, or Spaniſh Women.*
Ul.	o & a Azûl, *blue.*	os & as Azúys, *blue.*
Om.	o Bóm, a bóa, *good.*	os Bóns, & as bóas, *good.*
Um.	Nenhúm, nenhuma, *no one.*	Nenhums, nenhúas, *none,*
	o Comúm, a comúa, *common.*	os Comúns, as comúas, *common.*
	Algúm, algúma, *ſomebody.*	Algúns, algúmas, *ſome.*
Ar.	o & a Particulár, *particular.*	os & as Particuláres, *particular.*
	o & a Singulár, *ſingular.*	os & as Singuláres, *ſingular.*
Or.	o & a Melhór, *better.*	os & as Melhóres, *better.*
	o & a Mayór, *greater.*	os & as Mayóres, *greater.*
Az.	o & a Mordáz, *a ſpiteful Man or Creature.*	os & as Mordázes, *ſpitefulneſs.*
	o & a Capáz, *capable.*	os & as Capázes, *capable.*
Ez.	o & a Ingléz, *Engliſh.*	os & as Inglézes, *Engliſh.*

o & a Por-

	Singular.	*Plural.*
Ez.	o & a Portuguéz, *a Portugueſe Man, a Portugueſe Woman.*	os & as Portuguézes, *Portugueſe Men, and Portugueſe Women.*
	o & a Cortéz, *courteous.*	os & as Cortézes, *courteous.*
Iz.	o & a Felíz, *happy.*	os & as Felízes, *happy.*
	o & a Bellíz, *ſharp.*	os & as Bellízes, *ſharp.*
Oz.	o & a Feróz, *fierce.*	os & as Ferózes, *fierce.*
Uz.	o & a Truz, *cruel.*	os & as Trúzes, *cruel.*

Irregular Adjectives

Are ſuch as admit of no Plural Number; as the numerical Adjectives, *trînta*, thirty; *quárenta*, forty; *cincóenta*, fifty; *ſeſſenta*, ſixty; *ſéttenta*, ſeventy; *outénta*, eighty; *novénta*, ninety; *cem*, hundred. But *hum*, one; is in the Plural *huns*, ſome; *cento*, hundred, in Plural, *centos*, hundreds; *conto* & *milhám*, a Million; *contos* & *milhóens*, Millions.

N. B. Some who pretend to be curious in this Language, think it no Impropriety to admit even of Plurals to all or moſt of the Numeral Adjectives, *e. g. múytos vîntes*, *múytos trîntas*; many Twenties, many Thirties. Alſo in Arithmetick it is uſual to ſay, *nóves fora*, caſt away the nines.

Some of theſe Numerals are eſteemed irregular for want of the Singular Number; as *duzéntos*, two hundred; *trezéntos*, three hundred; *&c.* for *duzénto* and *trezépto*, which are not allowed.

The Nouns Adjective are declined like the Subſtantives; yet to remove all Difficulties, we ſhall ſet down here a few Examples of them.

Declenſion of the Termination in *o* and *a*.

Singular.

N. o Fermóſo, a fermóſa, *handſome.*
G. do Fermóſo, da Fermóſa.
D. ao & pera o, pello Fermóſo; á & pera, a pélla fermóſa.
Ac. o, ao Fermóſo, fermóſa.
V. o Fermóſo, o fermóſa.
Ab. dó Fermóſo, dá fermóſa.

Plural.

N. os Fermóſos; as fermóſas.
G. dós Fermóſos; dás fermóſas.
D. aos & pera os, pellos Fermóſos; ás pera as pellas fermóſas.
Ac. os, aos Fermóſos; as fermóſas.
V. o Fermóſos, o fermóſas.
Ab. dós Fermóſos, das fermóſas.

Declenſion of the Termination *al* of the Common Gender.

Singular.

N. o & a Principál, Principál.
G. do & dá Principál.
D. ao, péra o, pello; a & pera a, pélla Principal.
Ac. o, ao; á, Principál.
V. o Principál.
Ab. do; dá, Principal.

Plural.

N. os & as Principáis.
G. dos; dás Principáis.
D. aos péra os; péllos; as, & pera as, péllas Principáis.
Ac. os, aos; as, ás Principáis.
V. o Principáis.
Ab. dos; dás Principáis.

All

All Nouns Adjective are declined in this Manner. It would be ſuperfluous to inſert more Examples, when I am perſuaded that you'll find no Difficulty to decline any of them, by the Help of the foregoing Table of Terminations.

Compariſon of Nouns Adjective.

The Adjectives have three different Degrees of increaſing or diminiſhing their Signification, which is called *Compariſon.*

1. The *Poſitive*, which is the poſitive or ſimple Signification of the Thing, as *gránde*, great; *pequéno*, little; *máo*, bad.
2. The *Comparative*, which makes a Compariſon between Things, and increaſes the Signification of the Poſitive, as *mayór*, greater, *menór*, leſſer, *peyór*, worſe.
3. The *Superlative*, which ſignifies the Manner of the Thing in the greateſt, or leaſt Degree, and with Exceſs; as *maximo*, the greateſt; *minimo*, the leaſt; *péſſimo*, the worſt.

But all Adjectives have not this pure Way of Compariſons, for they commonly make their Comparative by adding the Word *máis* or more, or *ménos* leſs, to the Word, *e. g. perféito*, perfect; in Comparative *mais perféito*, more perfect; in Superlative *perfeitiſſimo*, the moſt perfect. *Poderóſo*, powerful; *mais poderóſo*, more powerful; *poderoſiſſimo*, the moſt powerful. *Excellénte*, excellent; *mais excellénte*, more excellent; *excellentiſſimo*, the moſt excellent.

Thus many *Portugueſe* Words, derived from the *Latin*, make their Superlative in *iſſimo*; but for the Generality their Compariſons are made by the

the Particle *mais*, as *mais grande*, greater, or more great, for the Comparative; and *o mais*, the moſt, as *o mais grande*, the greateſt, for the Superlative.

Poſitive.	*Comparative.*	*Superlative.*
Fermóſo, ſa, *handſome,*	máis Fermóſo, ſa, *handſomer,*	Fermoſiſſimo, *or* ó máis fermoſo, *the handſomeſt.*
Sotíl c. *ſubtle,*	máis Sotíl, *more ſubtle.*	Sotiliſſimo, *or* ó máis ſotil, *the moſt ſubtle.*
Valente, c. *valiant,*	máis Valente, *more valiant,*	o máis Valente, *the moſt valiant;* &c.

The Comparative is known when you find one compared with many, or with many of a different Kind; *e. g. Hum Européo hé máis valente que múitos Americános*, one European is more valiant than many Americans. *Os Inglezes ſam máis valentes que os Francézes*, the Engliſhmen are more valiant than the Frenchmen.

The Superlative is when one Thing is compared with many, or with many of the ſame Kind, *e. g. Eſte Portuguez hé o mais valénte de todos os Portuguézes*, this Portugueſe is the moſt valiant of all the Portugueſe. *Os Ingleſes ſám os mais valéntes de todos os hómens*, the Engliſh are the moſt valiant of all Men. Some, tho' not ſo elegantly, expreſs the Superlative in this Manner; as, *Eſte Portuguéz hé máis valente que tódos os Portuguézes*, and *Os Ingléſes ſam máis valentes que todos os homens*, this Portugueſe is more valiant that all the Portugueſe; and the Engliſh are more valiant than all Men.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

Of the Pronouns.

Their ſeveral Sorts, and how they are declined.

PRonouns are uſed inſtead of a Noun to avoid Repetition. They are divided into ſeven Claſſes, *viz.* into *Perſonal*, *Conjunctive*, *Poſſeſſive*, *Demonſtrative*, *Interrogative*, *Relative* and *Improper*.

Of the Pronoun Perſonal.

This Pronoun is to mark the firſt, ſecond and third Perſon in both Numbers, as in Singular, *Eu*, I, for the firſt Perſon; *tu*, thou, the ſecond; *elle*, he, the third. And in Plural, *Nós*, we, the firſt; *vós*, you, the ſecond; and *elles* they, the third Perſon; to which Claſs alſo belong the Pronouns *ſe* or *ſi*, himſelf.

Declenſions of the Pronouns Perſonal.

Singular.	*Plural.*
N. Eu, *I.*	*N.* Nôs, *we.*
G. de Mim, *of me.*	*G.* de Nôs, *of us.*
D. a Mim, & pera mim & me, *to me.*	*D.* á Nôs & pera nôs, *to us.*
Ac. a Mim & me, *me.*	*Ac.* á Nôs, *us.*
V. caret.	*V.* caret.
Ab. de Mim, *from me.*	*Ab.* de Nôs, *from us.*

Declen-

Declenſion of the Pronoun of the ſecond Perſon.

Singular.	*Plural.*
N. Tu, *thou.*	Vôs, *ye or you.*
G. de Ti, *of thee.*	*G.* de Vôs, *of you.*
D. a & pera Ti & Te, *to thee.*	*D.* a & pera Vôs, *to you.*
Ac. a Ti & Te, *thee.*	*Ac.* á Vôs, *you or ye.*
V. o Tu, *ô thou.*	*V.* o Vôs, *ô you or ye!*
A. de Ti, *from thee.*	*A.* de Vôs, *from you.*

Declenſion of the Pronoun of the third Perſon.

Elle and *Ella* are declined like Nouns Adjective. The Pronoun *Se*, or *Si*, him or himſelf, has no Nominative or Vocative, and is only declined in the Singular, which ſerves alſo for the Plural Signification.

G. de Si, *of him*; *of her*; *of it (ſelf).*
D. á Si & Se, *to him*; *to her*; *to it (ſelf).*
Ac. a Si & Se, *him*; *her*; *it (ſelf).*
A. de Si, *from him*; *from her*; *from it (ſelf).*

☞ *Me*, *Te*, and *Se* are uſed both in the Dative and Accuſative Caſe; as for Example in the Dative; *meu pay me da*, *meu pay te da*, my Father gives me or to me, my Father gives thee or to thee; *elle me faz honra*, *elle te faz honra*, he doth me (to me) Honour, he doth thee (to thee) Honour; *não ſe lhe da diſſo*, he doth not care for it. In the Accuſative Caſe, as *meu pay me*, *te chama*, my Father calls me or thee; *entreterſe*, *abrirſe*, &c.

Of the Pronoun Conjunctive.

This Pronoun has a very near Reſemblance to the Perſonal, but differs in this, that it is never

the Nominative Caſe to the Verb; it always precedes as well as the other, but always is the Dative or Accuſative of the ſaid Verb.

There are ſix Pronouns of this Order, *viz.* *me*, me; *te*, thee; *ſe*, himſelf; *nós*, us; *vós*, you; *lhe*, and *lhes*, him, her, and them; *e. g.* *meu pay me falla*, my Father ſpeaks to me; *teu amigo te eſcréve*, thy Friend writes to thee; *múitos nam ſe conhecem*, many don't know themſelves; *os filoſofos nós dizem*, the Philoſophers tell us; *o Réy vôs ordena*, the King orders you; *eu lhe*, or *lhes pago*, I pay him, or them.

N. B. The Pronoun *elle*, *ella*, & *iſto*, in Dative Caſe *a elle*, *a ella*, *a iſto*, is expreſs'd by *lhe*, which ſerves in all the Genders; and in Dative Plural *a elles* & *ellas* by *lhes*; *e. g.* *meu irmão ou minha irmãa me perguntou*, *mas não quero dizer-lhe*, my Brother or my Siſter has aſk'd me, but I don't care to tell him or her. Likewiſe in Plural they ſay, *dizelhes*, tell them, ſpeaking of Men or Women.

Of the Pronoun Poſſeſſive.

The Pronoun Poſſeſſive is that which indicates a Property or Poſſeſſion. There are ſix of theſe Pronouns, three Singular and three Plural, *víz.* *meu & minha*, mine; *teu & tua*, thine; *ſeu*, *ſua*, his, hers; *nóſſo*, *nóſſa*, our; *vóſſo*, *vóſſa*, your; *ſeus*, *ſuas*, their: As *meu pay*, my Father; *tua may*, thy Mother; *ſeu livro*, his Book; *nóſſa caza*, our Houſe; *voſſo cam*, your Dog; *ſeus amigos*, their Friends.

Of the Pronoun Demonſtrative.

This Pronoun points out either a Perſon or a Thing, and is both Maſculine, Feminine, and Neuter. This is the only Inſtance, beſides the Article, where the *Portugueſe*, as well as the *Spaniards*, admit of the Neuter Gender, which reigns only in the Singular, and not in the Plural. Thus you ſay in Maſculine, *elle*, he; in Feminine *ella*, ſhe; and in the Neuter, *iſto*, that.

In Maſculine *eſte*, this; in Feminine *eſta*, this; in Neuter *iſto*, this (Thing); as *eſte hómem*, this Man; *eſta Mulher*, this Woman; *iſto não me agrada*, this doth not pleaſe me; and in Maſculine *eſſe*, that (Man); Feminine *eſſa*, that (Woman); Neuter *iſſo*, that (Thing); as *eſſe pam*, that Bread; *eſſa pedra*, that Stone, and *iſſo he verdade*, that is true. Theſe, as all Pronouns in general, are declined like Nouns Adjective, and therefore 'tis not neceſſary to decline them here; but the Word *aquelle* being irregular in its Declenſion, we put it down here at large.

Singular.

Maſculine.	*Feminine.*	*Neuter.*
N. aquelle, *this*	aquella, *this.*	aquelle, *that.*
G. d'aquelle, *of this.*	d'aquella, *of this.*	d'aquelle, *of that.*
D. a & pera aquelle, *to this*	a & pera aquella, *to this.*	a & pera aquelle, *to that.*
Ac. a iſto & iſſo, *this.*	a eſta, eſſa, *this.*	a iſto, iſſo, *that.*
V. caret.		
A. d'iſto, *from this.*	d'eſta, *from this.*	d'iſto, *from this.*
d'iſſo, *from that.*	d'eſſa, *from that.*	d'iſſo, *from that.*

Plural.

Plural.

Maſculine.	*Feminine.*
N. aquelles.	aquellas *thoſe.*
G. d'aquelles.	d'aquellas, *of thoſe.*
D. a & pera aquelles.	a & pera aquellas, *to thoſe.*
Ac. á aquelles.	a aquellas, *thoſe.*
V. caret.	
A. d'iſtos, d'iſſos.	d'iſtas, d'iſſas, *from thoſe.*

Pronouns Interrogative.

As the Name ſufficiently declares, they ſerve in the aſking a Queſtion; as *que*, what; *que dizes?* what do you ſay? *quem*, who; *quem he éſte?* who is that? *qual*, which; *qual dos dóus?* which of the two? *cujo* and *cuja*, whoſe; *cujo cavallo he eſſe?* whoſe Horſe is that? *cuja caza he eſta?* whoſe Houſe is this?

The Pronoun Relative

Points out the Subject without repeating it; as for Example, *Déos, quem eu adoro hé o criador*, &c. God whom I adore, is the Creator, *&c.* where the Relative *whom* refers to God, the Subject of my Adoration, and amounts to the ſame as if I had ſaid, *God, which God I adore, is the Creator*, &c. Hither belongs alſo the Word *cújo, cúja*, whoſe; as *méu amigo cújo honór*, &c. my Friend, whoſe Honour, *&c.* And thus the Words *quem*, and *cújo, cúja*, which we ſaid before were Interrogatives, are alſo often uſed as Relatives, according to the Manner in which they are apply'd; and if you take but Notice of the Senſe of the Clauſe, you'll never fail diſcerning when thoſe Words are Interrogative, and when Relative.

☞ When they ſtand in the Beginning of a Phraſe they are Interrogatives, when in the Middle Relatives.

The Pronouns Improper.

Some Grammarians bring under this Claſs the Words *tal*, ſuch; *algum*, *alguma*, ſomebody; *cada*, every; *quem*, who; *que*, what; *nenhum*, *nenhuma*, none; *certo*, *certa*, certain; *outro*, *outra*, another; *todo*, *toda*, all; *meſmo*, the ſame.

N. B. The *Latins* treat the Words *nullus*, *certus*, *alter*, and *totus*, as Nouns Adjective.

Before we proceed, we cannot but obſerve a ſingular Propriety of this Language, which greatly contributes to the Softneſs of its Tone, and renders ſome Words very expreſſive; which is, that they join the adjunctive Particle *N* (which ſtands for *em*, in) cloſe to ſome of their Pronouns in both Numbers and Caſes, to intimate an Indication. As for Example, *nélle*, *nélla*; *nélles*, *néllas*; in him or it, in her; in them. In the ſame Manner you ſay, *náquelle*, *náquella*, *náquillo*, *náquelles*, *náquellas*; *néſte*, *néſta*, *níſto*, *neſtos*, *néſtas*; *néſſe*, *néſſa*, *níſſo*, *néſſes*, *néſſas*.

The *Portugueſe* likewiſe join the Word *outro* to the forementioned Pronouns *aquelle*, *eſte*, *eſſe*, *e. g.* *aquellóutro*, that other, *eſtóutro*, *eſſóutro*, this other.

For the other Remarks concerning Pronouns, we refer the Reader to the *Syntax*.

But obſerve, that when a Vowel is omitted for the ſake of joining two Words together, the firſt Vowel after that which was omitted, ought to be mark'd with an Accent Acute; as *eſſóutro*, for *eſſe outro*; here an Accent is placed on the *o*, to ſignify that a Letter was left out.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

Of the Verb, its Moods, Tenſes, and Perſons.

THE *Verb* is a Part of Speech which varies its Termination, but not after the ſame Manner as the Noun doth, which has ſix Caſes, and marks no Time or Mood; whereas the Verb is conjugated with Moods and Tenſes, has a Singular and Plural Number, and three Perſons.

The Moods determine the Signification of the Verb, as to the Manner and Circumſtance of the Affirmation; as *I love*, *love thou*, that *I may love*, and *to love*. Tenſes are Diſtinctions of Time; as *I do love*, and *I did love*; and to conjugate a Verb is to form or vary it according to its ſeveral Moods, Tenſes, Numbers, and Perſons.

There are five Moods: The firſt is the *Indicative*, from the *Latin* Word *indico*, I ſhew, which ſimply denotes the Action; as *eu léyo*, I read; *eu quéro*, I love. The ſecond is the *Imperative*, from *imperare*, *Latin*, to command; as *lẽ tu*, read thou; *óuve tu*, hear thou. The third is the *Optative*, from *optare*, to wiſh, to deſire, to pray; as *oxala amára eu*, *proveira & queyra Dèos & praza à Déos*, *amára eu & amaſſe eu*, God grant (that) I did love. The Particles *o* and *aſſim* alſo expreſs the Optative Mood; thus you ſay, *o ſe foſſe eu tal*, O that I were ſuch; *aſſim Deos me ajude*, ſo help me God. The fourth is the *Conjunctive*, which is known by the Particle *como*; as *como eu amo*, when I love; *como eu amava*, when I did love; *como eſtiveſtes múyto tempo doénte*, ſince you have been a long Time ſick; but as this Mood is nothing but the Indicative conjugated through all the Tenſes with the Particle *como* before it, we thought it needleſs to ſwell the Conjugations by

inſerting it. The fifth is the *Infinitive*, from the *Latin infinitus*, becauſe it is not limited either by Number or Perſon, as other Moods are; as *lér*, to read.

Verbs have alſo *Gerunds* and *Participles* in the *Portugueſe* as well as in the *Latin*.

The *Gerund* is ſo call'd from *gero*, I bear, from its bearing a double Signification, *viz.* that of a *Noun* and that of a *Verb*. There are three of theſe *Gerunds*, as in *Latin*; *amandi*, of loving; *amando*, in loving, and *amandum* to love; for that in *di* the *Portugueſe* uſe the infinitive Mood, with the Prepoſition *de*; as *de amár*, of loving: The Gerund in *do* follows the *Latin* exactly; thus the *Portugueſe* ſay, *amando*, *léndo*, in loving, in reading; for the Gerund in *dum* they uſe the Infinitive Mood, and the Prepoſition *a* and *pera*; as *á amar*; or *pera ámar*, *á lér*, and *pera lér*, to love, and to read.

A Supine is a Termination of a Verb, and has the ſame Signification as the preſent Tenſe of the Infinitive Mood, either active or paſſive; *amatum*, in *Latin* to love; *amatu*, to be loved; in *Portugueſe à amar*, to love, and *de ſer amado*, to be loved.

A Participle derives its Name from *pars* and *capio*, as it partakes both of a Noun and a Verb. There are three Sorts in *Latin*, as

The Participle of the Perfect Tenſe; as *Latin amatus*, *Portugueſe amado*, *amada*, beloved.

The Participle of the Preſent Tenſe; as *Latin amans*, *Portugueſe amante*; *o que ama*, loving, or he that loves.

And the Participle of the Future Tenſe in *rus*, in active, and in *dus* in paſſive; as *Latin amaturus*, *Portugueſe o que ha de amar*, he that ſhall, will, or is about to love; and *Latin*, *amandus*, *Portugueſe*, *o que ha de ſer amado*, he that ſhall, will, or is to be loved; this laſt belongs to the Verb paſſive.

This Account of the Verb and Moods being ſufficient, I now proceed to ſpeak of the Tenſes.

There are properly but three *Tenſes* or *Times*, *viz.* the Paſt, the Preſent, and the Future, or what is to come.

The Preterperfect Tenſe ſhews the Action of the Verb either perfectly paſt; as *Latin amavi*, *Portugueſe amey*, or *ténho amado*, I loved or I have loved; or imperfectly paſt in the Imperfect Tenſe; as *Latin*, *amabam*, *Portugueſe*, *amava*, I did love; which is uſed when the Action *e. g.* of loving is paſt, in regard to the Time in which I ſpeak; and preſent, with reſpect to ſome Circumſtance; as I did love (when I was young); I did learn (when I was at School;) or, laſtly, when an Action is paſt before ſome Circumſtance happen'd, which is alſo paſt, and then it is called the *Preterpluperfect*; as I had ſupp'd when you came in, *eu tinha ceado quando V M entrava.*

The Preterperfect is again divided into the Definite and Indefinite; the former determines the Time of the Action of the Verb entirely paſt; as I ſaw your Uncle Yeſterday, *ví a ſeu Tio ontem.*

The Preterperfect Indefinite is when you mention the Time yet paſſing; as I have ſeen your Uncle this Morning, *ténho víſto a ſeu Tio éſta manham.* In *Engliſh* we are not ſo nice in this Diſtinction; for we ſay indifferently, *I ſaw your Uncle this Morning*, or *I have ſeen your Uncle this Morning.*

☞ The natural Order of Things requires the Paſt or Preterperfect Tenſe to ſtand before the Preſent; but as all Grammarians make the Preſent Tenſe the firſt in their Conjugations, to avoid being particular, or breeding Confuſion, we have follow'd the ſame Method.

The Preſent Tenſe ſhews the preſent Action of the Verb; as *eu leyo*, I read; *eu amo*, *tu amas*, *elle ama*, I love, thou loveſt, he loveth; *nos amamos*, *vos amays*, *elles amam*, we love, ye love, they love.

The Future Tenſe points out a Time to come; as *Latin*, *amabo*, *amaréy*, I will love. We have in *Engliſh* two Signs to this Tenſe, which, for want of Obſervation, Foreigners often confound; the one is conditional, as *I ſhall*; the other poſitive, as *I will*. Some don't diſtinguiſh between theſe two Words; and it's common to hear *I ſhall* for *I will*, and *é contra*; as *I will fall* for *I ſhall fall*, and *I ſhall go*, for *I will go*.

The *Portugueſe* have two Futures, the one imperfect or ſimple, the other perfect or compounded; the ſimple *eu amaréy*, I will or ſhall love; the compounded *eu teréy amado*, I ſhall have loved.

There are then ſix (or with the Subdiviſion of the Future and Uncertain Tenſe, eight) Tenſes, *viz.* the Preſent, the Preterimperfect, the Preterperfect definite, the Preterperfect indefinite, the Preterpluperfect, the Future imperfect and perfect, and the uncertain Tenſe, of which we ſhall ſpeak at large in the *Syntax*.

A Tenſe has two Numbers, *viz.* the Singular and Plural, and three Perſons in the Singular; as *eu*, I; the ſecond *tu*, thou; the third, *elle*, *ella*, he, ſhe; and as many in the Plural; the firſt *nôs*, we; the ſecond *vôs*, ye and you; the third *elles*, they; *e. g. eu amo*, I love; *tu amas*, thou loveſt; *elle ama*, he loves; *nos amamos*, we love; *vos amays*, ye love; *elles amam*, they love.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

The Diviſion and Conjugations of the Verbs.

THE Verbs are commonly divided into Active, Paſſive, Neuter, Reciprocal, and Impersonal.

A Verb Active ſignifies an Action, and has always a Paſſion oppoſed to it; as *I love*, the Paſſion oppoſed to it is *I am loved*; *I read*, *I am read*; *I hear*, *I am heard*: Or, to make it yet plainer, join with the Verb the Words *a Perſon*, or *a Thing*, and if then it makes good Senſe, it is an Active; thus you may ſay, *I ſee a Perſon or a Thing*, *I ſtrike a Perſon or Thing*, *I follow a Perſon or Thing*.

The *Verb Paſſive* ſpeaks a Sufferance; as *I am loved*, and is formed of the Verb Subſtantive; as *I am*, and the Participle of the Preterperfect Tenſe; as *eu ſou amado*, I am loved; *tu eras amado*, thou wert loved; *elle he amado*, he is loved, *&c.*

The Verb Neuter ſignifies an Action not convey'd unto another, but remaining within the Perſon acting, and has no Paſſion oppoſed to it; as *I ſleep*, *I walk*, *I come in*, *I tremble*, *I fall*, *I grow pale*, cannot make a Paſſive *I am ſlept*, *I am walk'd*, &c. neither will they make Senſe if join'd to the Words *a Perſon* or *Thing*; thus you cannot properly ſay, *I ſleep a Thing*, *I walk a Thing* or *Perſon*, *I fall*, *I grow old*, &c.

Some of the Verbs Neuter make uſe of the Verb *ey*, I have; and others of *ſou*, I am, in the Preterperfect Tenſe.

The *Verb Reciprocal* has the ſame Perſon for its Nominative and Subject; as *me eſpanto*, I am ſurprized. This Sort of Verb is hardly known in the

the *Engliſh*, tho' very common in the *Italian*, *French*, *Spaniſh*, and *Portugueſe* Languages.

Verbs Imperſonal have only the third Perſon, being called ſo from their wanting the firſt and ſecond; as *chóve*, it rains; *géa*, it freezes; *trovéja*, it thunders, *&c.* they are conjugated throughout in the third Perſon, and in the Singular Number only. *See the Conjugations below.*

Verbs again are divided into

Regular and *Irregular*. The *Regular* are ſuch as are confined to general Rules: The *Irregular* have none, and differ from the former, in the firſt Preterperfect of the Indicative Mood, and Preterperfect of the Conjunctive.

The Conjugations of Verbs

Of this Language, both regular and irregular, are commonly reduced to three Terminations, and as many Conjugations; the firſt Conjugation is known by the Termination of the Infinitive Preſent in *ar*, as *amo*, I love, *amar*, to love; the ſecond terminates in *er* in Infinitive, as *léyo*, I read, *lér*, to read; the third in *ir*, as *ouço*, I hear, *ouvir*, to hear.

☞ The Verb *pónho*, I put, in Infinitive Preſent, *pór*, to put, with its Compounds, of which we ſhall ſpeak at the End of the Conjugations, is the only one of the Termination in *or*, and therefore hardly deſerving to make a Conjugation by itſelf.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

Of the Auxiliary Verbs aver *and* ter.

AS the auxiliary or helping Verbs *aver* and *tér*, to have, are neceſſary for the conjugating the Preterperfects of the Verbs, both Active, Paſſive, Neuter and Reciprocal; and ſince without the Verb *ſóu* and *eſtóu*, I am, the Paſſive Verb cannot be conjugated, I ſhall begin with theſe two Verbs, as abſolutely neceſſary to be firſt learned.

The Conjugation of the auxiliary Verb *Aver*.

Indicative Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Sing.
Eu éy, *I have.*
Tu has, *thou haſt.*
Elle ha, *he has.*

Plur.
Nôs hémos, avémos, *we have.*
Vôs éys, avéys, *ye have.*
Elles ham, *they have.*

Imperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu avía, *I had.*
Tu avias, *thou hadſt.*
Elle avía, *he had.*

Plur.
Nôs avíamos, *we had.*
Vôs avíeys, *ye had.*
Elles avíam, *they had.*

Firſt Preterperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu óuve, *I have had.*
Tu ouvíſte, *thou haſt had.*
Elle óuve, *he has had.*

Plur.

Plur. Nôs ouvémos, *we have had.*
Vôs ouvéſtes, *ye have had.*
Elles ouvéram, *they have had.*

Second Preterperfect Tenſe.

Sing. Eu tenho avido, *I have had.*
Tu tens avido, *thou haſt had.*
Elle tem avido, *he has had.*

Plur. Nôs temos avido, *we have had.*
Vôs tendes avido, *ye have had.*
Elles tem avido, *they have had.*

Preterpluperfect Tenſe.

Sing. Eu tinha avido, *I had had.*
Tu tinhas avido, *thou hadſt had.*
Elle tinha avido, *he had had.*

Plur. Nôs tínhamos avido, *we had had.*
Vôs tínheys avido, *ye had had.*
Elles tínham avido, *they had had.*

Future Imperfect Tenſe.

Sing. Eu averéy, *I ſhall or will have.*
Tu averás, *thou ſhalt or wilt have.*
Elle averá, *he ſhall or will have.*

Plur. Nôs averémos, *we ſhall or will have.*
Vôs averéys, *ye ſhall or will have.*
Elles averam, *they ſhall or will have.*

Future Perfect Tenſe.

Sing. ja entam Eu teréy avido, *I ſhall then have had.*
Tu teras avido, *thou ſhalt have had.*
Elle terá avido, *he ſhall have had.*

Plur. ja entam Nôs terémos avido, *we ſhall have had.*
Vôs teréys avido, *ye ſhall have had.*
Elles terám avido, *they ſhall have had.*

Imperative.

Imperative. *The firſt Tenſe.*

Sing.
Has no firſt Perſon.
ájas, ou ha tu, *have thou.*
ája elle, *let him have.*

Plur.
Ajámus nôs, *let us have.*
Ajáys vôs, *have ye* or *you.*
Ajam elles, *let them have.*

The ſecond Tenſe.

Sing.
Has no firſt Perſon.
Averas tu, *thou ſhalt have.*
Averá elle, *he ſhall have.*

Plur.
Averémos nôs, *we ſhall have.*
Averéys vôs, *ye ſhall have.*
Averám elles, *they ſhall have.*

Optative Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Sing.
x ala aja eu, *God grant I may have.*
Oxala ajas tu, *God grant thou mayſt have.*
Oxala aja elle, *God grant he may have.*

Plur.
Oxala ajámos nôs, *God grant we may have.*
Oxala ajáys vôs, *God grant ye may have.*
Oxala ájam elles, *God grant they may have.*

Imperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Oxala ouvêra, ouvéſſe eu, *would to God I had or might have.*
Oxala ouvéras, ouveſſes tu, *would to God thou hadſt, or mighteſt have.*
Oxala ouvéra, ouvéſſe elle, *would to God he had, or might have.*

Plur.

Plur.
Oxala ouvéramos, ouvéſſemos nôs, *would to God we had, or might have.*
Oxala ouvéreys, ouvéſſeys vôs, *would to God ye had, or might have.*
Oxala ouvéram ouvéſſem elles, *would to God they had, or might have.*

The Uncertain Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu avería, *I would or might have.*
Tu averías, *thou wouldſt or mightſt have.*
Elle avería, *he would or might have.*

Plur.
Nôs averíamos, *we would or might have.*
Vôs averíays, *ye would or might have.*
Elles averíam, *they would or might have.*

Preterperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Quéyra Deos que eu tenha avido, *God grant I have had, or might have had.*
Quéyra Deos que tu tenhas avido, *God grant thou haſt had, or mighteſt have had.*
Quéyra Deos que elle tenha avido, *God grant he has had, or might have had.*

Plur.
Quéyra Deos que tu nôs tenhámos avido, *God grant we have had, or might have had.*
Quéyra Deos que vôs ténhays avido, *God grant ye have had, or might have had.*
Quéyra Deos que elles ténham avido, *God grant they have had, or might have had.*

Preterpluperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Prouvera Deos que eu ouvéra, ou ouveſſe avido, *would to God I had had.*
Prouvera Deos que tu ouvéras, ou ouveſſes avido, *would to God thou hadſt had.*
Prouvera Deos que elle ouvéra, ou ouveſſe avido, *would to God he had had.*

Plur.

Plur.
- Prouvera Deos que nôs ouvéramos, ou ouvéſſemos avido, *would to God we had had.*
- Prouvera Deos que vôs ouvérys, ou ouvéſſeis avido, *would to God ye had had.*
- Prouvera Deos que elles ouvéram, ou ouveſſem avido, *would to God they had had.*

Future Imperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
- Quando eu ouvér, *when I ſhall or will have.*
- Quando tu ouvéres, *when thou ſhalt or wilt have.*
- Quando elle ouvér, *when he ſhall or will have.*

Plur.
- Quando nôs ouvérmos, *when we ſhall or will have.*
- Quando vôs ouvérdes, *when ye ſhall or will have.*
- Quando elles ouvérem, *when they ſhall or will have.*

Future Perfect Tenſe.

Sing.
- Quando eu tivér avido, *when I ſhall or will have had.*
- Quando tu tivéres avido, *when thou ſhalt or wilt have had.*
- Quando elle tivér avido, *when he ſhall or will have had.*

Plur.
- Quando nôs tivérmos avido, *when we ſhall or will have had.*
- Quando vôs tivérdes avido, *when ye ſhall or will have had.*
- Quando elles tivérem avido, *when they ſhall or will have had.*

Infinitive Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Avér, *to have.*

Preter-

Preterperfect Tenſe.

Ter avido, *to have had.*

Future Tenſe.

Ter de avér *ou* Eſperár de avér, *(to have to have, to hope to have) to have hereafter.*

Gerund.

Avéndo, *in having*, & de avér, *of having.*

Participle Preſent.

Ouvénte, *having*; o que ha, *he that has.*

Participle Preterperfect.

Avído, avída, *having had*; o que ha avido, *he that has had.*

Participle Future.

O que ha de avér & eſpéra de aver, *he (one) that is to have, or hopes to have.*

It may not be improper to obſerve here, that the Verb *ey, has, ha*, I have, thou haſt, he has, aſſiſt all Sorts of Verbs in their Moods, Tenſes, and Perſons, both in the Active and Paſſive Signification. In the Active by adding the Particle *de* to the Preſent Tenſe of the Infinitive of the Verbs, *e. g. Ey de amar*, I am about to love, or I ſhall love; *Ey de ler, ouvir*, I am about to hear, or ſhall read or hear, *&c.* and ſo in the other Perſons and Tenſes.

In the Paſſive Significations are added to the Particle *de* the Preſent Tenſe of the Infinitive of *Sér*, and the Participle of the Preterperfect Tenſe of any Verb, as *Ey de ſer amada*, I ſhall or will be

be loved; *has de ſer ouvido*, thou ſhalt or wilt be heard; *ha de ſer lido*, he or it ſhall be read.

The Auxiliary Verb, *Ter.*

Indicative Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Sing.
Eu ténho, *I have.*
Tu téns, *thou haſt.*
Elle tém, *he has.*

Plur.
Nôs témos, *we have.*
Vôs téndes, *ye have.*
Elles tem, *they have.*

Imperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu tinha, *I had.*
Tu tinhas, *thou hadſt.*
Elle tinha, *he had.*

Plur.
Nôs tínhamos, *we had.*
Vôs tínheys, *ye had.*
Elles tínham, *they had.*

Firſt Preterperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu tive, *I have had.*
Tu tivéſte, *thou haſt had.*
Elle téve, *he hath had.*

Plur.
Nôs tivémos, *we have had.*
Vôs tivéſtes, *ye have had.*
Elles tivéram, *they have had.*

Second Preterperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu tenho tido, *I have had.*
Tu tens tido, *thou haſt had.*
Elle tem tido, *he has had.*

Plur. Nôs temos tido, *we have had.*
Vôs tendes tido, *ye have had.*
Elles tem tido, *they have had.*

Preterpluperfect Tenſe.

Sing. Eu * tinha tido, *I had had.*
Tu tinhas tido, *thou hadſt had.*
Elle tinha tido, *he had had,*

Plur. Nôs tínhamos tido, *we had had.*
Vôs tínheys tido, *ye had had.*
Elles tínham tido, *they had had.*

Future Imperfect.

Sing. Eu teréy, *I ſhall or will have.*
Tu terás, *thou ſhalt or wilt have.*
Elle terá, *he ſhall or will have.*

Plur. Nôs terémos, *we ſhall or will have.*
Vôs teréys, *ye ſhall or will have.*
Elles terám, *they ſhall or will have.*

Future Perfect.

Sing. Ja entam eu teréy tido, *I ſhall (then already) have had.*
Ja entam tu téras tido, *thou ſhalt (then already) have had.*
Ja entam elle terá tido, *he ſhall (then already) have had.*

Plur. Ja entam nôs terémos tido, *we ſhall (then already) have had.*
Ja entam vôs teréys tído, *ye ſhall (then already) have had.*
Ja entam elles terám tido, *they ſhall (then already) have had.*

* Some expreſs the Preterpluperfect, tho' improperly, by *tivera, tivéras, tivéra; tivéramos, tivéreys, tivéram.*

Imperative

Imperative Mood. *Firſt Tenſe.*

Sing.
Has no firſt Perſon.
Tem ou ténhas tu, *have thou.*
Ténha elle, *let him have.*

Plur.
Ténhamos nôs, *let us have.*
Tende ou tenháys vôs, *have ye.*
Ténham elles, *let them have.*

Second Tenſe.

Sing.
Has no firſt Perſon.
Terás tu, *thou ſhalt have.*
Terá elle, *he ſhall have.*

Plur.
Terémos, nôs, *we ſhall have.*
Teréys vôs, *ye ſhall have.*
Terám elles, *they ſhall have.*

Optative Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Sing.
Oxala ténha eu, *would to God I may have.*
Oxala ténhas tu, *would to God thou mayſt have.*
Oxala ténhà elle, *would to God he may have.*

Plur.
Oxala tenhámos nôs, *would to God we may have.*
Oxala ténhays vôs, *would to God ye may have.*
Oxala ténhem ellès, *would to God they may have*

Imperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Oxalá tivéra, tivéſſe eu, *wiſh to God I had.*
Oxala tivéras, tivéſſes tu, *wiſh to God thou hadſt.*
Oxala tivéra, tivéſſe elle, *wiſh to God he had.*

Plur.
Oxala tivéramos, tivéſſemos, nôs, *wiſh to God we had.*
Oxala tivéreys, tivéſſeys vôs, *wiſh to God ye had.*
Oxala tivéram, tivéſſem elles, *wiſh to God they had.*

Uncertain Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu tería, *I would or might have.*
Tu terías, *thou wouldſt or mightſt have.*
Elle tería, *he would or might have.*

Plur.
Nôs teríamos, *we would or might have.*
Vôs teríeys, *ye would or might have.*
Elles teríam, *they would or might have.*

Preterperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Quéyra Deos que eu ténha tido, *God grant that I may have had.*
Quéyra Deos que tu ténhas tido, *God grant that thou mayſt have had.*
Quéyra Deos que elle ténha tido, *God grant that he may have had.*

Plur.
Quéyra Deos que nôs ténhamos tido, *God grant that we may have had.*
Quéyra Deos que vôs ténhays tido, *God grant that ye may have had.*
Quéyra Deos que elles ténham tido, *God grant that they may have had.*

Preterpluperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Prouvéra Deos que tivera ou tivéſſe eu tido, *would to God I had had.*
Prouvéra Deos que tivéras ou tivéſſes tu tido, *would to God thou hadſt had.*
Prouvéra Deos que tivéra ou tivéſſe elle tido, *would to God he had had.*

Plur.
Prouvéra Deos que tivéramos ou tivéſſemos nôs tido, *would to God we had had.*
Prouvéra Deos que tivéreys, ou tivéſſeys vôs tido, *would to God ye had had.*
Prouvéra Deos que tivéram ou tiveſſem elles tido, *would to God they had had.*

Firſt

Firſt Future Tenſe.

Sing.
Quando eu tivér, *when I ſhall have*
Quando tu tivéres, *when thou ſhalt have.*
Quando elle tivér, *when he ſhall have.*

Plur.
Quando nôs tivérmos, *when we ſhall have.*
Quando vós tivérdes, *when ye ſhall have.*
Quando elles tivérem, *when they ſhall have.*

Second Future Tenſe.

Sing.
Quando eu tivér tido, *when I ſhall have had.*
Quando tu tivéres tido, *when thou ſhalt have had.*
Quando elle tivér tido, *when he ſhall have had.*

Plur.
Quando nôs tivérmos tido, *when we ſhall have had.*
Quando vôs tivérdes tido, *when ye ſhall have had.*
Quando elles tivérem tido, *when they ſhall have had.*

Infinitive Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Ter, *to have.*

Preterperfect Tenſe.

Ter tido, *to have had.*

Future Tenſe.

Avêr de ter (*to ſhall or will have, to be to have*) *to have hereafter.*

Gerund.

Tendo, *in having*; de ter, *of having.*

Participle Preſent.

Em ter, *having*; o que tem, *he that has.*

Participle Preterperfect.

Tido, tida, *having had*; o que ha tido, *he that has had*

Participle Future.

o que ha de ter, o que eſpéra de ter, *he that is to have, or hopes to have.*

Obſervations on the Verb *Ey* and *Tenho.*

The Verb *Ey* has one Irregularity peculiar to itſelf, and not to be found in other Verbs, which is, that in all Moods, Tenſes, and Perſons of the Singular Number, it ſerves Nouns both Singular and Plural; *e. g. ha hum anno*, it is a Year; *ha múitos annos*, it is many Years; *avia hum anno, & avía múitos annos*, as the *French* ſay, *il y a un an, & il y a pluſieurs années*, which is alſo a uſual Way of expreſſing themſelves in the *Spaniſh* Language.

This Verb is made uſe of in all Moods, Tenſes, and Perſons, with the Addition of the Particle *de*, with the Preſent and Imperfect of the Verb Subſtantive *Sou* and *Eſtóu*; as *ey de ſer, amar, ler*, I ſhall be, love, read; *avía de ſer, amar, ler*, and *óuve de ſer, amar, ler.* The Verb *Tenho* in this Form is improper, altho' elegant enough in *Spaniſh*; for the *Portugueſe* do not ſay *tenho de amar, ler, eſcrever*; but the *Spaniards* ſay properly enough *tengo de amar, ler, eſcrivir*, I am to love, read, write, *&c.*

The

The Particle *me* is alſo ſometimes added, and muſt always be placed before the Particle *de*; as *ha me de cuſtar*, it will coſt me; *ha me de dar*, he ſhall give me; it being improper to ſay *ha de me dar*, *ha de me cuſtar*, &c.

The Verb *Ey* is alſo often uſed with the Particle *de*, and the Infinitive of the Verb *Sou*, that is, *ſer*, join'd with the Participle Preterperfect of any Verb in the Paſſive Voice, *e. g. ey de ſer amado*, I am to be loved; *ey de ſer lido*, *ouvido*, &c. I am to be read, heard; ſo *avía de ſer amado*, *lido*, *ouvido*, and ſo thro' all the Numbers and Perſons.

The Verb *Ey* in Paſſive Voice is always put before the Infinitive *ſer*; as *ey de ſer*, *avía de ſer*, &c. but in the Active Voice it is not only put before the Verb to which it is join'd, but ſometimes after; as *ſe me fizerdes a vontáde*, *deyxár vos ey por méu erdéyro*, if you pleaſe me, I will make you my Heir; *ſe fordes obediénte a voſſos páys*, *far-vos ha Deos muytas mercés*, if you are obedient to your Parents, God will beſtow many Bleſſings on you.

The Word *ouve*, I had, he had, the firſt or third Perſon in Singular of the firſt Preterperfect Tenſe of the Verb *Ey*, is the ſame with *ouve*, the third Perſon Singular Preſent Indicative of the Verb *ouço*, I hear, which muſt be diſtinguiſh'd by Experience.

The Verb *Tenho*, I have, is often join'd with Verbs Active and Neuter, not in all the Tenſes, only the Preterperfect and Preterpluperfect of the Indicative, Optative, and Subjunctive Moods; as alſo in the Futures Perfect of the Indicative and Conjunctive. Examples; *tenho amado*, I have loved; *tivera (tinha) amado*, I had lov'd; *prouvera Deos que tivera eu amado*, would to God I had lov'd; *tendo amado*, having lov'd; *ter amado*, to

have loved; *eu terey amado*, I ſhall have loved; *quando eu tiver amado*, when I ſhall have loved.

The Verb *Tenho* is auxiliary to other Verbs through all its Moods and Tenſes, only in an Active Senſe, with the Addition of a Participle Preterperfect Tenſe of the ſaid Verb; as *tenho amado*, I have loved; *tens, tem amado, lido, ouvido*, loved, read, heard; *tinha*, I had, *tinhas, tinha amado, lido, ouvido*, &c. And note, That the three auxiliary Verbs, *ſou*, *ey*, and *tenho*, are often auxiliary to one another; as *ey de ſer*, I ſhall be; *tenho ſido*, I have been; *tenho avido*, I have had; and ſometimes the ſame Verb is auxiliary to itſelf; as *ey de aver*, I ſhall or am to have; *tenho tido*, I have had, *&c.* but is not well join'd with all Participles of the Active Voice; for it would be improper to ſay *tenho podido*, I have been able; or *tenho querido*, I have deſired; *tenho rido*, I have laugh'd; *tenho abhorrecido*; I have abhorred; for *ey podido, querido, rido, abhorrecido*, becauſe the Verb *tenho* doth not ſquare with the Signification of all Verbs, of which Experience will be the beſt Informer.

Note, That the Verbs which admit not of the auxiliary Verb *tenho*, are generally of the ſecond or third Conjugation, and thoſe rare; it is join'd with all of the firſt Conjugation, excepting the Verb *matar*, to kill; for it would be improper to ſay *tenho matado*, but rather *tenho morto*, I have killed.

☞ The Imperfect Tenſe of the Verb *tenho*, *tinha*, I had, is exactly expreſs'd as the Word *tinha*, a Scald Head: *Tinha* is alſo both the firſt and third Perſon Singular of the Imperfect Indicative Mood; the third Perſon Singular of the Indicative Preſent equivocates with the third in the Plural; thus you write, *ellé tem, & elles tem*,

tem, he has and they have. Likewiſe the Verb *ponho*, I put, is in the third Perſon Singular *elle poem*; and in the third Perſon Plural of the Indicative Preſent you ſay *elles poem*, they put. The Verb *ſoy* equivocates alſo in the firſt Perſon Singular of the Imperfect Indicative with the third Perſon Singular; as *eu era, & elle era*, I was and he was; ſo you ſay *eu tivera & elle tivera*, all which is eaſily learnt by Experience, and the Senſe the Words ſtand in.

CHAP. XII.

Of the Verbs Sou *and* Eſtou, *I am.*

Indicative Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Sing.
- Eu ſóu, eſtóu, *I am.*
- Tu es, eſtás, *thou art.*
- Elle he, eſtá, *he is.*

Plur.
- Nôs ſômos, eſtámos, *we are.*
- Vôs ſôys, eſtáys, *ye are.*
- Elles ſám, eſtám, *they are.*

Imperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
- Eu éra, eſtáva, *I was.*
- Tu éras, eſtávas, *thou waſt.*
- Elle éra, eſtáva, *he was.*

Plur.
- Nôs erámos, eſtávamos, *we were.*
- Vôs éreys, eſtáveys, *ye were.*
- Elles éram, eſtávam, *they were.*

Firſt Preterperfect Tenſe

Sing.
- Eu fóy, eſtíve, *I have been.*
- Tu foſte, eſtivéſte, *thou haſt been.*
- Elle foy, eſteve, *he has been.*

Plur.
- Nôs fomos, eſtivémos, *we have been.*
- Vôs foſtes, eſtivéſtes, *ye have been.*
- Elles fóram, eſtivéram, *they have been.*

Second

Second Perfect.

Sing.
Eu ténho ſido, *ou* eſtado, *I have been.*
Tu téns ſido, *ou* eſtado, *thou haſt been.*
Elle tém ſido, *ou* eſtado, *he has been.*

Plur.
Nôs témos ſido, *ou* eſtado, *we have been.*
Vôs téndes ſido, *ou* eſtado, *ye have been.*
Elles tém ſido, *ou* eſtado, *they have been.*

Preterpluperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu * tinha ſido, eſtado, *I had been.*
Tu tinhas ſido, eſtado, *thou hadſt been.*
Elle tinha ſido, eſtado, *he had been.*

Plur.
Nôs tínhamos ſido, eſtado, *we had been.*
Vôs tínheys ſido, eſtado, *ye had been.*
Elles tínham ſido, eſtado, *they had been.*

Future Imperfect.

Sing.
Eu ſeréy, eſtaréy, *I ſhall or will be.*
Tu ſerás, eſtarás, *thou ſhalt or wilt be.*
Elle ſerá, eſtará, *he ſhall or will be.*

Plur.
Nôs ſerémos, eſtarémos, *we ſhall or will be.*
Vôs ſeréys, eſtaréys, *ye ſhall or will be.*
Elles ſerám, eſtarám, *they ſhall or will be.*

Future Perfect.

Sing.
Ja entám eu teréy ſido, ou eſtado, *I ſhall then already have been.*
Ja entam tu terás ſido, ou eſtado, *thou ſhalt then already have been.*
Ja entam elle terá ſido, ou eſtado, *he ſhall then already have been,*

Plur.
Ja entam nôs terémos ſido, ou eſtado, *we ſhall then already have been*
Ja entam vôs teréys ſido, ou eſtado, *ye ſhall then already have been.*
Ja entam elles terám ſido, ou eſtado, *they ſhall then already have been.*

* Some uſe *fora* & *eſtivera*, *foras*, *eſtiveras*, &c. for the Pluperfect *tenho ſido*, which however is not ſo proper.

Imperative Mood. *Firſt Tenſe.*

Has no firſt Perſon.

Sing.
- Sé tu, eſtá, *be thou.*
- Seja elle, eſtéja, *be he, or let him be.*

Plur.
- Sejámos nôs, eſtejámos, *let us be.*
- Séde vôs, eſtáy, *be ye.*
- Séjam élles, eſtejam, *let them be.*

Second Tenſe.

Has no firſt Perſon.

Sing.
- Serás tu, eſtarás, *thou ſhalt be, or be thou.*
- Será élle, eſtará, *he ſhall be, or be he.*

Plur.
- Serémos nôs, eſtarémos, *we ſhall be.*
- Seréys vôs, eſtaréys, *ye ſhall be, or be ye.*
- Serám elles, eſtarám, *they ſhall be, or be they.*

Optative Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Sing.
- Oxala ſéja eu, ou eſtéja; *wiſh to God I may be.*
- Oxala ſéjas tu, ou eſtéjas, *wiſh to God thou mayſt be.*
- Oxala ſéja elle, ou eſtéja, *wiſh to God he may be.*

Plur.
- Oxala ſejámos nôs, ou eſtejámos, *wiſh to God we may be.*
- Oxala ſéjays vôs, ou eſtéjays, *wiſh to God ye may be.*
- Oxala ſéjam elles, ou eſtejam, *wiſh to God they may be.*

Imperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
- Oxala fóra eu ou foſſe, eſtivéra ou eſtiveſſe, *would to God I were.*
- Oxala fóras tu ou foſſes, eſtivéras ou eſtiveſſes, *would to God thou wert.*
- Oxala fóra elle ou foſſe, eſtivêra ou eſtiveſſe, *would to God he were.*

Plur.
- Oxala fóramos nôs ou fóſſemos, eſtivéramos ou eſtivéſſemos, *would to God we were.*
- Oxala fóreys vôs ou fóſſeys, eſtivéreys ou eſtivéſſeis, *would to God ye were.*
- Oxala fóram elles ou fóſſem, eſtivéram ou eſtivéſſem, *would to God they were.*

The Uncertain Tenſe.

Sing.
- Eu ſeria, eſtaria, *I might be.*
- Tu ſerias, eſtarias, *thou mightſt be.*
- Elle ſeria, eſtaria, *he might be.*

Plur
- Nós ſeríamos, eſteríamos, *we might be.*
- Vós ſeríeys, eſtaríeys, *ye might be.*
- Elles ſeriam, eſtaríam, *they might be.*

Preterperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
- Queyra Deos que eu tenha ſido eſtado, *God grant I may have been.*
- Queyra Deos que tu tenhas ſido eſtado, *God grant that thou mayſt have been.*
- Queyra Deos que elle tenha ſido eſtado, *God grant that he may have been.*

Plur.
- Queyra Deos que nôs ténhamos ſido eſtado, *God grant that we may have been.*
- Queyra Deos que vôs ténheys ſido eſtado, *God grant ye may have been.*
- Queyra Deos que elles ténham ſido eſtado, *God grant that they may have been.*

Pre-

Preterpluperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Prouvéyra Deos que eu ouvéra, ouvéſſe ſido, *would to God that I had been.*
Prouvéyra Deos que tu ouvéras, ouveſſes ſido, *would to God that thou hadſt been.*
Prouvéyra Deos que elle ouvéra, ouveſſe ſido, *would to God that he had been.*

Plur.
Prouvéyra Deos que nôs ouvéramos, ouveſſemos ſido, *would to God that we had been.*
Prouvéyra Deos que vôs ouveréys, ouveſſéys ſido, *would to God that ye had been.*
Prouvéyra Deos que elles ouvéram, ouvéſſem ſido, *would to God that they had been.*

Firſt Future Tenſe.

Sing.
Quando, praza á Deos que eu for, eſtiver, *when or pleaſe God I ſhall or may be hereafter.*
Quando, praza á Deos que tu fores, eſtiveres, *when or pleaſe God thou ſhalt or may be hereafter.*
Quando, praza á Deos que elle for, eſtiver, *when or pleaſe God he ſhall or may be hereafter.*

Plur.
Quando, praza á Deos que nôs formos, eſtivermos, *when or pleaſe God we ſhall or may be hereafter.*
Quando, praza á Deos que vôs fordes, eſtiverdes, *when or pleaſe God ye ſhall or may be hereafter.*
Quando, praza á Deos que elles forem, eſtiverem, *when or pleaſe God they ſhall or may be hereafter.*

Second Future Tenſe.

Sing.
Quando eu tivér ſido, ou eſtado, *when I ſhall have been.*
Quando tu tivéres ſido, ou eſtado, *when thou ſhalt have been.*
Quando elle tivér ſido, ou eſtado, *when he ſhall have been.*

Plur.

Plur.
Quando nôs tivérmos ſido, ou eſtado, *when we ſhall have been.*
Quando vôs tiverdes ſido, ou eſtado, *when ye ſhall have been.*
Quando elles tivérem ſido, ou eſtado, *when they ſhall have been.*

Infinitive Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Ser, eſtár, *to be.*

Preterperfect Tenſe.

Aver ſido, eſtado, *to have been.*

Future.

Aver de ſer, eſtar, *to be hereafter.*

Gerund.

Sendo, eſtando, *in having*; de ſer, eſtár, *of having.*

Supine.

á ſer, eſtar, & pera ſer, eſtar, *to be.*

Participle Preſent.

Em ſer, eſtar, *being*; o que he, eſtá, *one (he) that is.*

Participle Perfect.

Sido, eſtado, *having been*; o que ha ſido, eſtado, *he (one) that has been.*

Participle Future.

o que ha, ou eſpera de ſér, ou eſtar, *he (one) that is or hopes to be.*

Obſer-

Obſervations on the Verb *Sou*, I am.

The Verb *Sou*, I am, is exactly expreſs'd and pronounced in the Preterperfect Tenſe, like the Verb *vou*, I go, by the Word *eu fuy* in both, for I have been and I went; only with this Diſtinction, that the Preterperfect Tenſe of the Verb *vou*, I go, is always followed by a Subſtantive of Place and Motion: As for Example, *fuy a Roma*, I went to Rome; *fuy a Londres*, I went to London; and ſometimes with an Adjective adjoined; as *fuy a famoſa Roma*, I went to famous Rome. Sometimes follows a Verb of the Infinitive Mood; as *fuy ver*, *fuy ler*, I went to ſee, I went to read; but the Preterperfect Tenſe of the Verb *Sou* hath always a Subſtantive or Adjective following it, and ſignifies no Motion; *e. g. fuy bom eſtudiante*, I have been a good Student; *Liſboa foy fondada por Uliſſes*, Liſbon was founded by Ulyſſes, *&c.* See the Verb *vou*, I go.

Beſides theſe Equivocations, there are alſo many others of the like Nature, *v. g.* the third Perſon of the Preſent Tenſe of the Indicative Mood of the Verb *ſou*, *ſam*, they are, is written and pronounc'd as the Word *ſam*, well or ſound; *era*, I or he was, and *era*, an Ivy-tree; *eras*, thou waſt, and *eras*, Ivy-trees; *ou fora*, I might be, and *fora*, without; *fóram*, they might have been, and *forám*, a Ferret, diſtinguiſh'd only by the Accent; *ſeram*, they ſhall be, and *ſeram*, the Beginning of the Night; *ſe tu*, be thou, and *ſe*, himſelf; *ſede vos*, be ye, and *ſede*, Thirſt; *tu eſtás*, thou art, and *éſtas*, theſe; *eſtá*, he is, and *éſta*, this; which Words are to be diſtinguiſh'd by the Accent, or Connexion of the Diſcourſe.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

Of the Regular Verbs, and their three Conjugations.

The Firſt Conjugation in *ar.*

Indicative Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Sing.
Eu ámo, *I love.*
Tu ámas, *thou loveſt.*
Elle áma, *he loveth.*

Plur.
Nôs amámos, *we love.*
Vôs ámays, *ye love.*
Elles ámam, *they love.*

Imperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu amáva, *I loved or did love.*
Tu amávas, *thou lovedſt or didſt love.*
Elle amáva, *he loved or did love.*

Plur.
Nôs amávamos, *we loved or did love.*
Vôs amáys, *ye loved or did love.*
Elles amávam, *they loved or did love.*

Firſt Preterperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu améy, *I have loved.*
Tu amáſte, *thou haſt loved:*
Elle amóu, *he hath loved.*

Plur.
Nôs amémos, *we have loved.*
Vôs amáſtes, *ye have loved.*
Elles amaram, *they have loved.*

Second Preterperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu tenho amado, *I have loved.*
Tu tens amado, *thou haſt loved.*
Elle tem amado, *he has loved.*

Plur.

Plur.
Nôs temos ámado, *we have loved.*
Vôs tendes amado, *ye have loved.*
Elles tem amado, *they have loved.*

Preterpluperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu * tínha amado, *I had loved.*
Tu tínhas amado, *thou hadſt loved.*
Elle tínha amado, *he had loved.*

Plur.
Nôs tínhamos amado, *we had loved.*
Vôs tínheys amado, *ye had loved.*
Elles tínham amado, *they had loved.*

Future Imperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu amarey, *I ſhall or will love.*
Tu amarás, *thou ſhalt or wilt love.*
Elle amará, *he ſhall or will love.*

Plur.
Nôs amarémos, *we ſhall or will love.*
Vôs amaréys, *ye ſhall or will love.*
Elles amarám, *they ſhall or will love.*

Future Perfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Ja entam eu teréy amado, *I ſhall then have loved.*
Ja entam tu terás amado, *thou ſhalt then have loved.*
Ja entam elle terá amado, *he ſhall then have loved.*

Plur.
Ja entam nôs terémos amado, *we ſhall then have loved.*
Ja entam vôs teréys amado, *ye ſhall then have loved.*
Ja entam elles téram amado, *they ſhall then have loved.*

* Some uſe *amara, amaras, amara,* &c. for the Preterpluperfect, which by the beſt Criticks is judged an Impropriety, it being the Imperfect of the Optative Mood.

Imperative Mood. *Firſt Tenſe.*

Sing.
Has no firſt Perſon.
Ama tu, *love thou.*
Ame elle, *let him love.*

Plur.
Amémos nôs, *let us love.*
Amáy vôs, *love ye.*
Amem elles, *let them love.*

Second Tenſe.

Sing.
Has no firſt Perſon.
Amarás tú, *thou ſhalt love.*
Amara elle, *he ſhall love.*

Plur.
Amarémos, nôs, *we ſhall love.*
Amaréys vôs, *ye ſhall love.*
Amaràm elles, *they ſhall love.*

Optative Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Sing.
Oxala áme eu, *I wiſh I may love.*
Oxala ámes tu, *I wiſh thou mayſt love.*
Oxala áme elle, *I wiſh he may love.*

Plur.
Oxala amémos nôs, *I wiſh we may love.*
Oxala ámeys vôs, *I wiſh ye may love.*
Oxala ámem elles, *I wiſh they may love.*

Imperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Oxala amára, ou amáſſe eu, *would I might or could love.*
Oxala amáras, ou amáſſes tu, *would thou mighteſt or couldſt love.*
Oxala amára, ou amáſſe elle, *would he might or could love.*

Plur.
- Oxala amáramos, ou amáſſemos nôs, *would we might or cou'd love.*
- Oxala amareys, ou amáſſeys vôs, *would ye might or cou'd love.*
- Oxala amáram, ou amáſſem elles, *would they might or cou'd love.*

Uncertain Tenſe.

Sing.
- Eu amaria, *I might love.*
- Tu amarias, *thou mightſt love.*
- Elle amaria, *he might love.*

Plur.
- Nôs amaríamos, *we might love.*
- Vôs amaríeys, *ye might love.*
- Elles amaríam, *they might love.*

Preterperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
- Queyra Deos que ténha eu amádo, *God grant that I may have loved.*
- Queyra Deos que ténhas tu amado, *God grant that thou mayſt have loved.*
- Queyra Deos que ténha elle amádo, *God grant that he may have loved.*

Plur.
- Queyra Deos que ténhamos nôs amádo, *God grant that we may have loved.*
- Queyra Deos que ténhays vôs amádo, *God grant that ye may have loved.*
- Queyra Deos que ténham elles amádo, *God grant that they may have loved.*

Preterpluperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
- Prouvéyra Deos que tivera ou tiveſſe eu amado, *would to God that I had loved.*
- Provéyra Deos que tiveras ou tiveſſes tu amado, *would to God that thou hadſt loved.*
- Prouvéyra Deos que tivera ou tiveſſe elle amado, *would to God he had loved.*

Plur.
Prouvéyra Deos que tivéramos ou tiveſſemos nôs amado, *would to God that we had loved.*
Prouvéyra Deos que tivéreys ou tivéſſeys vôs amado, *would to God that ye had loved.*
Prouvéyra Deos que tivéram ou tiveſſem elles amado, *would to God that they had loved.*

Firſt Future.

Sing.
Quando eu amar, *when I ſhall or will love.*
Quando tu amares, *when thou ſhalt or wilt love.*
Quando elle amar, *when he ſhall or will love.*

Plur.
Quando nôs amármos, *when we ſhall or will love.*
Quando vôs amardes, *when ye ſhall or will love.*
Quándo elles amárem, *when they ſhall or will love.*

Second Future.

Sing.
Quando eu tiver amado, *when I ſhall or will have loved.*
Quando tu tivéres amado, *when thou ſhalt or wilt have loved.*
Quando elle tivér amado, *when he ſhall or will have loved.*

Plur.
Quando nôs tivérmos amado, *when we ſhall or will have loved.*
Quando vôs tivérdes amado, *when ye ſhall or will have loved.*
Quando elles tivérem amado, *when they ſhall or will have loved.*

Infinitive Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Amár, *to love.*

Preterperfect Tenſe.

Tér amado, *to have loved.*

Future

Future Tenſe.

Tér de amar, ou eſperár de amar *(to have to love, to hope to love) to love hereafter.*

Gerund.

Amando, *in loving*; *and* de amar, *of loving.*

Supine.

á amar, ou pera amar, *to love.*

Participle Preſent.

Amante, *loving*; o que ama, *he (or one) that loves.*

Participle Perfect.

Amado, *having lov'd*; o que ha amado, *he (or one) that has lov'd.*

Participle Future.

O que ha de amar, ou eſpéra de amár, *he (or one) that is to love, or hopes to love.*

The Firſt Conjugation in the Paſſive Voice.

Indicative Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Sing.
Eu ſou amádo, *I am lov'd.*
Tu es amádo, *thou art lov'd.*
Elle he amádo, *he is lov'd.*

Plur.
Nôs ſómos amádos, *we are lov'd.*
Vôs ſoys amádos, *ye are lov'd.*
Elles ſam amádos, *they are lov'd.*

Imperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu éra amádo, *I was loved.*
Tu éras amádo, *thou wert loved.*
Elle éra amado, *he was loved.*

Plur. { Nôs éramos amádos, *we were loved.*
Vôs éreys amádos, *ye were loved.*
Elles éram amádos, *they were loved.*

Preterperfect Tenſe.

Sing. { Eu fúy amádo, *I have been loved.*
Tu foſte amádo, *thou haſt been loved.*
Elle fóy amádo, *he has been loved.*

Plur. { Nôs fómos amádos, *we have been loved.*
Vôs fóſtes amádos, *ye have been loved.*
Elles fóram amádos, *they have been loved.*

Theſe three Tenſes may ſuffice to ſhew how the Verb Paſſive is conjugated, which conſiſts in this, that you conjugate the Verb Subſtantive *Sóu* thro' all the Moods and Tenſes, adding the Participle of the Perfect Tenſe of the Verb to it; as *amado, lido, ouvido*, which in the Plural Number are put in *os*, or in *as* if of the Feminine Gender; thus you ſay, *os homens ſam amados*, the Men are beloved; *as mulheres ſam amadas*, the Women are beloved.

Note, If you ſpeak but to one Perſon, you put the Verb *ſou* in Plural, but the Participle in Singular; as *digo a Voſſé que ſoys amado, amada, lido, lida, & ouvido, ouvida*, I tell you, Sir, or Madam, that you are beloved, read, and heard; for the Plural, or when you ſpeak to more than one Perſon, you ſay, *e. g. digo a Voſſés que ſoys amados, amadas, lidos, lidas, & ouvidos, ouvidas*, I tell you (to Men or Women) that you are beloved, read, and heard.

Example

Example of the Second Conjugation in *er.*

Indicative Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Sing.
Eu léyo, *I read.*
Tu lés, *thou readeſt.*
Elle lé, *he reads.*

Plur.
Nôs lémos, *we read.*
Vôs lédes, *ye read.*
Elles lém, *they read.*

Imperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu lía, *I read or did read.*
Tu lías, *thou readeſt or didſt read.*
Elle lía, *he read or did read.*

Plur.
Nôs líamos, *we read or did read.*
Vôs líeys, *ye read or did read.*
Elles líam, *they read or did read.*

Firſt Preterperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu lí, *I read.*
Tu leſte, *thou readeſt.*
Elle léo, *he read.*

Plur.
Nôs lemos, *we read.*
Vôs leſtes, *ye read.*
Elles léram, *they read.*

Second Preterperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu ténho lido, *I have read.*
Tu tens lido, *thou haſt read.*
Elle tem lido, *he has read.*

Plur.
Nôs témos lido, *we have read.*
Vôs téndes lido, *ye have read.*
Elles tem lido, *they have read*

Preterpluperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu * tínha lido, *I had read.*
Tu tínhas lido, *thou hadſt read.*
Elle tínha lido, *he had read.*

Plur.
Nôs tínhamos lido, *we had read.*
Vôs tínheys lido, *ye had read.*
Elles tínham lido, *they had read.*

Future Imperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu lerêy, *I ſhall or will read.*
Tu lerás, *thou ſhalt or wilt read.*
Elle léra, *he ſhall or will read.*

Plur.
Nôs lerémos, *we ſhall or will read.*
Vós leréys, *ye ſhall or will read.*
Elles lerám, *they ſhall or will read.*

Future Perfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Ja entám eu terêy lido, *I then ſhall have read.*
Ja entám tu téras lido, *thou then ſhalt have read.*
Ja entám elle terá lido, *he then ſhall have read.*

Plur.
Ja entám nôs terémos lido, *we then ſhall have read.*
Ja entám vôs teréys lido, *ye then ſhall have read.*
Ja entám elles terám lido, *they then ſhall have read.*

Imperative Mood. *Firſt Tenſe.*

Sing.
Has no firſt Perſon.
Lé tu, *read thou.*
Léya ellé, *let him read, read he.*

Plur.
Leyámos nôs, *let us read.*
Lede vôs, *read ye.*
Léyam elles, *let them read.*

* Some expreſs the Preterpluperfect by *lera, leras, lera,* &c. tho' improperly, it being the Imperfect of the Optative Mood.

Second

Second Tenſe.

Sing.
Has no firſt Perſon.
Lerás tu, *thou ſhalt read.*
Lerá elle, *he ſhall read.*

Plur.
Lerémos nôs, *we ſhall read.*
Leréys vôs, *ye ſhall read.*
Lerám elles, *they ſhall read.*

Optative Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Sing.
Oxala léya eu, *would to God I may read.*
Oxala léyas tu, *would to God thou mayſt read.*
Oxala léya elle, *would to God he may read.*

Plur.
Oxala léyamos nós, *would to God we may read.*
Oxala léyas vôs, *would to God ye may read.*
Oxala léyam elles, *would to God they may read.*

Imperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Oxala lera, ou leſſe eu, *would I might or could read.*
Oxala leras tu, ou leſſes tu, *would thou mightſt or couldſt read.*
Oxala lera elle, ou leſſe elle, *would he might or could read.*

Plur.
Oxala léramos nôs, ou léſſemos nós, *would we might or could read.*
Oxala léreys vôs, ou léſſeys vôs, *would ye might or could read.*
Oxala léram elles, ou léſſem elles, *would they might or could read.*

Preterperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Quéyra Deos que tenha eu lido, *God grant that I have or may have read.*
Quéyra Deos que tenhas tu lido, *God grant that thou haſt or mayſt have read.*
Quéyra Deos que tenha elle lido, *God grant that he hath or may have read.*

Plur.

Plur.
- Quéyra Deos que ténhamos nôs lido, *God grant that we have or may have read.*
- Quéyra Deos que ténhays vôs lido, *God grant that ye have or may have read.*
- Quéyra Deos que ténham elles lido, *God grant that they have or may have read.*

Preterpluperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
- Prouvéra á Déos que tivéra ou tivéſſe eu lído, *would to God I had read.*
- Prouvéra á Deos que tivéras ou tivéſſes tu lído, *would to God thou hadſt read.*
- Prouvéra á Déos que tivéra ou tivéſſe elle lído, *would to God he had read.*

Plur.
- Prouvéra á Déos que tivéramos ou tiveſſemos nôs lído, *would to God we had read.*
- Prouvéra á Deos que tivéreys ou tivéſſeys vôs lído, *would to God ye had read.*
- Prouvéra á Deos que tivéram ou tivéſſem elles lído, *would to God they had read.*

Firſt Future Tenſe.

Sing.
- Quando eu ler, *when I ſhall read.*
- Quando tu léres, *when thou ſhalt read.*
- Quando elle ler, *when he ſhall read.*

Plur.
- Quando nôs lérmos, *when we ſhall read.*
- Quando vôs lérdes, *when ye ſhall read.*
- Quando elles lérem, *when they ſhall read.*

Second Future Tenſe.

Sing.
- Quando eu tivér lido, *when or pleaſe God I ſhall have read.*
- Quando tu tivéres lido, *when or pleaſe God thou ſhalt have read.*
- Quando elle tivér lido, *when or pleaſe God he ſhall have read.*

Plur.

Plur.
Quando nôs tivérmos lido, *when or pleaſe God we ſhall have read.*
Quando vôs tevérdes lido, *when or pleaſe God ye ſhall have read.*
Quando elles tivérem lido, *when or pleaſe God they ſhall have read,*

Infinitive Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Ler, *to read.*

Preterperfect Tenſe.

Ter lido, *to have read.*

Future.

Aver de lér, ou eſperar de ler, *(to be or to have to read) to hope to read, or to read hereafter.*

Gerund.

Lendo, *in reading, and* de lér,, *of reading.*

Supine.

á ler, ou pera ler, *to read.*

Participle Preſent.

Lénte, *reading*; ou que lé, *he (one) that readeth.*

Participle Perfect.

Lido, *having read*; o que ha lido, *he (one) that has read.*

Participle Future.

O que ha dé lér, ou eſpera de lér, *he (one) that is to read or hopes to read.*

The

The Paſſive Voice of the Verb *ler*, to read, is alſo formed by conjugating the Verb *ſer* to be, thro' all its *Moods* and *Tenſes*, and adding the Participle *lido*, read, to it; which in the three Perſons in Singular remains *lido*, and in Plural is *lidos*; as *eu ſou lido*, *tu es lido*, *elle he lido*; *nós ſomos lidos*, *vós ſoys lidos*, *elles ſam lidos*: Thus in Imperfect, *eu era lido*; in Perfect, *fuy lido*; Preterpluperfect, *fora lido*; and in Future, *ſeréy lido*; and ſo thro' all the Moods and Tenſes, as we obſerv'd above of the Verb *amo*.

An Example of the Third Conjugation, in *ir*.

Indicative Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Sing.
Eu ouço, *I hear.*
Tu óuves, *thou heareſt.*
Elle óuve, *he heareth.*

Plur.
Nôs ouvímos, *we hear.*
Vôs ouvíeys, *ye hear.*
Elles óuvem, *they hear.*

Imperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu ouvía, *I heard or did hear.*
Tu ouvías, *thou heardſt or didſt hear.*
Elle ouvía, *he heard or did hear.*

Plur.
Nôs ouvíamos, *we heard or did hear.*
Vôs ouvieys, *ye heard or did hear.*
Elles ouvíam, *they heard or did hear.*

Firſt Preterperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu ouví, *I have heard.*
Tu ouviſte, *thou haſt heard.*
Elle ouvío, *he has heard.*

Plur.

Plur.
Nôs ouvímos, *we have heard.*
Vós ouvíſtes, *ye have heard.*
Elles ouvíram, *they have heard.*

Second Preterperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu tenho ouvído, *I have heard.*
Tu tens ouvído, *thou haſt heard.*
Elle tem ouvído, *he has heard.*

Plur.
Nôs temos ouvído, *we have heard.*
Vôs tendes ouvído, *ye have heard.*
Elles tem ouvído, *they have heard.*

Preterpluperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu * tínha ouvído, *I had heard.*
Tu tínhas ouvído, *thou hadſt heard.*
Elle tínha ouvído, *he had heard.*

Plur.
Nôs tínhamos ouvído, *we had heard.*
Vôs tínheys ouvído, *ye had heard.*
Elles tínham ouvído, *they had heard.*

Future Imperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu ouviréy, *I ſhall or will hear.*
Tu ouvirás, *thou ſhalt or wilt hear.*
Elle ouvirá, *he ſhall or will hear.*

Plur.
Nôs ouvirémos, *we ſhall or will hear.*
Vôs ouvireys, *ye ſhall or will hear.*
Elles ouvirám, *they ſhall or will hear.*

Future Perfect.

Sing.
Ja entam eu térey ouvído, *I ſhall then have heard.*
Ja entam tu teras ouvído, *thou ſhalt then have heard.*
Ja entam elle terá ouvído, *he ſhall then have heard.*

* Some expreſs the Preterpluperfect by *ouvéra, ouvéras, ouvéra, &c.* the Imperfect of the Optative, which the beſt Criticks find fault with.

Plur.

Plur.
- Ja entam nôs terémos ouvído, *we ſhall then have heard.*
- Ja entam vôs teréys ouvído, *ye ſhall then have heard.*
- Ja entam elles téram ouvído, *they ſhall then have heard.*

Imperative Mood. *The Firſt Tenſe.*

Sing.
- *Has no firſt Perſon.*
- Oúve tu, *hear thou.*
- Oúve elle, *let him hear.*

Plur.
- Ouçámos nôs, *let us hear.*
- Ouví vôs, *hear ye.*
- Oúçam elles, *let them hear.*

The Second Tenſe.

Sing.
- *Has no firſt Perſon.*
- Ouvíras tu, *thou ſhalt hear.*
- Ouvíra elle, *he ſhall hear.*

Plur.
- Ouvirémos nôs, *we ſhall hear.*
- Ouviréys vôs, *ye ſhall hear.*
- Ouvirám elles, *they ſhall hear.*

Optative Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Sing.
- Oxala óuça eu, *would I may hear.*
- Oxala óuças tu, *would thou mayſt hear.*
- Oxala óuça elle, *would he may hear.*

Plur.
- Oxala ouçámos nôs, *would we may hear.*
- Oxala óuçays vôs, *would ye may hear.*
- Oxala óuçam elles, *would they may hear.*

Imperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
- Oxala ouvíra ou ouvíſſe eu, *would I might or could hear.*
- Oxala ouvíras ou ouvíſſes tu, *would thou mightſt or couldſt hear.*
- Oxala ouvíra ou ouvîſſe elle, *would he might or could hear.*

Plur.

Plur.
- Oxala ouvíramos ou ouvíſſemos nôs, *would we might or could hear.*
- Oxala ouvíreys ou onvíſſeys vôs, *would ye might or could hear.*
- Oxala ouvíram ou ouvíſſem elles, *would they might or could hear.*

The Uncertain Tenſe.

Sing.
- Eu ouvería, *I might hear.*
- Tu ouverías, *thou mightſt hear.*
- Elle ouvería, *he might hear.*

Plur.
- Nôs ouveríamos, *we might hear.*
- Vôs ouveríeys, *ye might hear.*
- Elles ouveríam, *they might hear.*

Preterperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
- Quéyra Deos que ténha eu ouvido, *God grant that I have heard.*
- Quéyra Deos que ténhas tu ouvido, *God grant that thou haſt heard.*
- Quéyra Deos que ténha elle ouvido, *God grant that he hath heard.*

Plur.
- Quéyra Deos que ténhamos nôs ouvido, *God grant that we have heard.*
- Quéyra Deos que ténhays vôs ouvido, *God grant that ye have heard.*
- Quéyra Deos que ténham elles ouvido, *God grant that they have heard.*

Preterpluperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
- Prouvera Deos que tivera ou tiveſſe eu ouvido, *would to God I had heard.*
- Prouvera Deos que tiveras ou tiveſſes tu ouvido, *would to God thou hadſt heard.*
- Prouvera Deos que tivera ou tiveſſe elle ouvido, *would to God he had heard.*

Plur.

Plur.
- Prouvera Deos que tivéramos ou tivéſſemos nôs ouvido, *would to God we had heard.*
- Prouvera Deos que tivéreys ou tivéſſeys vôs ouvido, *would to God ye had heard.*
- Prouvéra Deos que tivéram ou tiveſſem elles ouvido, *would to God they had heard.*

Firſt Future Tenſe.

Sing.
- Quando eu ouvir, *when I ſhall hear.*
- Quando tu ouvires, *when thou ſhalt hear.*
- Quando elle ouvir, *when he ſhall hear.*

Plur.
- Quando nôs ouvirmos, *when we ſhall hear.*
- Quando vôs ouvirdes, *when ye ſhall hear.*
- Quando elles ouvirem, *when they ſhall hear.*

Second Future Tenſe.

Sing.
- Quando eu tiver ouvido, *when I ſhall have heard.*
- Quando tu tiveres ouvido, *when thou ſhalt have heard.*
- Quando elle tiver ouvido, *when he ſhall have heard.*

Plur.
- Quando nôs tivérmos ouvido, *when we ſhall have heard.*
- Quando vós tivérdes ouvido, *when ye ſhall have heard.*
- Quando elles tivérem ouvido, *when they ſhall have heard.*

Infinitive Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Ouvir, *to hear.*

Preterperfect Tenſe.

Ter ouvído, *to have heard.*

Future

Future Tenſe.

Aver de ouvír, ou eſperar de ouvír, *to be to hear, to hope to hear, or to hear hereafter.*

Gerund.

Ouvindo, *in hearing.*

Supine.

á ouvír, ou pera ouvír, *to hear.*

Participle Preſent.

Ouvente, o que óuve, o que eſta ouvindo, *he (one) that hears, or is hearing.*

Participle Preterperfect.

Ouvido, *having heard*; o que tem ouvido, *he (one) that has heard.*

Participle Future.

O que ha de ouvír, ou eſpéra de ouvír, *he (one) that is to hear, or hopes to hear.*

Obſerve,

Some pretend to enrich the *Portugueſe* Verbs by Moods not common to other Languages; and therefore, beſides the Indicative, Imperative, Optative, and Infinitive Moods, ſet down a Conjunctive Mood, a Conjunctive peculiar to the *Portugueſe* Language, a Potential Mood, and a Permiſſive Mood. The Conjunctive Mood is nothing elſe but the Indicative conjugated with the Particle *como*, as, or when.

The Conjunctive peculiar to the *Portugueſe* Language is the Subjunctive conjugated with the Words *poſto que*, altho', or ſuppoſing that.

The Potential Mood in the Preſent Tenſe is, *que ame eu*, that I may love; the Imperfect Tenſe is *amaria eu*, ſhould or could I love; the Preterperfect Tenſe is *pude eu amar*, I might have lov'd; the Preterpluperfect Tenſe is *eu pudera ter amado*, I might, could, or would have lov'd; the Future Tenſe *amarey*, *poderey amar*, I ſhall or will love, I ſhall or will be able to love.

The Permiſſive Mood in the Preſent Tenſe is *ame eu*, let me love, *dóulhe que ame*, I grant I may love; the Imperfect Tenſe *amara*, I did love, *dóulhe que amara*, I grant I did love; the Preterperfect Tenſe *amaſſe eu*, I have lov'd, *dóulhé*, *que amaſſe eu*, I grant I have loved, and *más que tenha amado*, altho' I have loved; the Preterpluperfect Tenſe *amara eu*, I had loved, *dóulhe que amara*, I grant I had loved; *mas que tivera amado*, altho' I or he had loved; the Future Tenſe *dóulhe que venha ou chegue eu a amar*, I grant that I may come to love.

It appears then that theſe Moods have no extraordinary Terminations belonging to them, but that they are only compoſed of Particles join'd to the Verb in the Mood which thoſe Particles require, and conjugated in the common Manner. I thought it therefore needleſs to ſwell and embroil the Conjugations with thoſe Moods, ſince the Learner, when he comes to be acquainted with the Conjugations, and knows what Moods the ſeveral Conjunctions govern, he not only will find the abovementioned Moods very eaſy to him, but alſo may make as many more if he pleaſes, giving them Names according to the Nature of the Conjunction join'd with them, which may be done in any other Language; and therefore I can't ſee in what Reſpect thoſe Moods are peculiar only to the *Portugueſe*.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

Of the Terminations, Formations, and Equivocations of the three regular Conjugations.

THE firſt Conjugation, as was ſaid above, is known by the Termination of the ſecond Perſon of the Preſent Tenſe of the Indicative Mood, and the Preſent of the Infinitive; as, *amo*, *amas*, and in the Infinitive *amar*, to love; *enſino*, I teach, *enſinas*, thou teacheſt, *enſinar*, to teach; *lóuvo*, I praiſe, *louvas*, thou praiſeſt, *louvar*, to praiſe.

The *firſt Conjugation* is ſo regular, that it keeps the ſame Characters through all its Moods and Tenſes, changing only the laſt Letter into ſuch Letters as the Tenſes are terminated in, *e. g.*

Indic. Preſent.	Imperf. Tenſe.	Perfect Tenſe.
Amo,	amava,	améy,
I love.	*I did love.*	*I have lov'd.*
Chamo,	chamáva,	chaméy,
I call.	*I did call.*	*I have call'd.*

Except the Verb *dou*, I give, which in the reſt of the Tenſes loſeth its two laſt Letters *ou*, *e. g.*

Dou,	Dava,	Déy,
I give.	*I did give.*	*I have given.*

As alſo ſuch Verbs as end in *co*.

Fico,	Ficava,	Fiquéy,
I remain.	*I did remain.*	*I have remain'd.*
Finco,	Fincava,	Finquéy,
I faſten.	*I did faſten.*	*I have faſtened.*

Obſerve here, that in Verbs of the firſt Conjugation in the Preſent Tenſe, the firſt, ſecond, and third Perſons of the ſingular Number are often written and expreſs'd with the very ſame Letters without any Difference, and their Signification is only to be gueſs'd at by the Connexion of the Matter diſcourſed of.

Verbs of the firſt Conjugation equivocate three Ways with Nouns expreſſed in the ſame Form.

Firſt, when the Verb and Noun are expreſſed with the ſame Letters in the Indicative Preſent and the firſt Perſon, as for Example.

Agóuro, *I divine*,	and Agóuro, *Divination.*
Abraço, *I embrace*,	and Abraço, *an Embrace.*
Canto, *I ſing*,	and Canto, *a Song.*
Chóro, *I cry*,	and Chôro, *a Crying.*
Deſprezo, *I deſpiſe*,	and Deſprezo, *a Contempt.*
Dezejo, *I deſire*,	and Dezejo, *a Deſire.*
Enſino, *I teach*,	and Enſino, *a Teaching.*
Furto, *I ſteal*,	and Furto, *a Stealth.*
Livro, *I free*,	and Livro, *a Book.*
Rogo, *I deſire*,	and Rogo, *a Deſire.*
Soluço, *I ſob or ſigh*,	and Soluço, *a Sigh*, &c.

Secondly, Verbs equivalent to, and writ the ſame with Nouns Subſtantive, are very numerous in the ſecond Perſon of the Indicative Preſent; as,

Brigas, *thou fighteſt.*	and Brigas, *Fights and Quarrels.*
Buſcas, *thou ſeekeſt.*	and Buſcas, *Seekings or Searches.*
Culpas, *thou blameſt.*	and Culpas, *Faults*, &c.

Thirdly, alſo of the third Perſon; as,

Briga, *he fighteth*,	and Briga, *a Fight.*
Buſca, *he ſearcheth*,	and Buſca, *a Search.*
Culpa, *he blameth.*	and Culpa, *a Fault*, &c.

There

There are alſo Verbs of the firſt Conjugation, which, in the Indicative Preſent equivocate with Nouns in all three Perſons of the Singular, and the third Perſon Plural, *v. g. amo*, I love, and a Maſter of a Houſe or Family; *amas*, thou loveſt, the Miſtreſſes (of a Houſe) or Nurſes of Children; *ama*, he loveth, Miſtreſs or Nurſe; *barro*, *barras*, *barra*; *ameaço*, *ameaças*, *ameaça*, &c. So in the third Perſon Plural, *arépellam*, they pull out the Hairs, *arepéllam*, a Pulling out or Cutting off the Hair; and ſo in many other Verbs which Uſe muſt teach you, and I here omit to avoid Tediouſneſs.

The *ſecond Conjugation* is of Verbs that in the ſecond Perſon of the Indicative Preſent end in *es*, and in the Infinitive in *er*, as,

Leyo, *I read.*	les, *thou readeſt.*	lér, *to read.*
Conheço, *I know.*	conhéces, *thou knoweſt.*	conhecér, *to know.*
Eſcrevo, *I write.*	eſcréves, *thou writeſt.*	eſcrever, *to write.*

Take Notice, that as there is very little Variety or Difference in the Terminations of Verbs of the firſt Conjugation thro' all its Moods and Tenſes, ſo the ſaid Difference is very conſiderable in the ſecond and third Conjugations, their Verbs not keeping the ſame Letters as in the firſt, but either altogether loſing or changing them. For Example, in the ſecond Conjugation they do not only loſe the laſt Letter *o* of the Preſent Indicative in the other Tenſes, but alſo in the Imperfect and Preterperfect change the Syllable *éy* into *i*, *viz.*

Léyo, *I read.*	lía, *I did read.*	lí, *I have read.*
Créyo, *I believe.*	cría, *I did believe.*	crí, *I have believed.*

The Verb *vejo*, I ſee, loſes the Letter *j* in moſt Tenſes; as *via*, I did ſee; *ví* and *víra*, I have and had ſeen; except the Preſent of the Optative; as *oxala véja eu*, God grant that I may ſee; in the third Perſons Singular and Plural of the Preſent Imperative, as *veja elle*, let him ſee, and *véjam elles*, let them ſee, and in the Preſent of the Conjunctive.

Some Verbs that have *c* before *o* in the Preſent Indicative, change it in the other Tenſes in *d*; as *perco*, I loſe; *perdía*, I did loſe; *perdi*, I have loſt; *perdéra*, or *tinha perdido*, I had loſt.

The third Conjugation is of Verbs that terminate the ſecond Perſon Indicative Preſent in *es*, but the Infinitives end in *ir*, *v. g. ouço*, I hear, *óuves*, thou heareſt, *ouvír*, to hear; *finjo*, I feign, *finges*, thou feigneſt, *fingir*, to feign; *abro*, I open, *abres*, thou openeſt, *abrir*, to open.

In the Verbs of the *third Conjugation* there is to be obſerved a ſtrange Mutation, even in the Preſent Indicative; as in the Verb *ouço*, *óuves*, *óuve*, *ouvímos*, *ouvíys*, *óuvem*. The Verb *ouço* changes its *ç* into a *v* in all the Tenſes except thoſe mention'd above in *vejo*.

The Verb *meço*, I meaſure, changes its *ç* into *d* in the reſt of the Tenſes; as *meço*, *medes*; in Imperfect *medía*; in Perfect *medí*. So *peço*, I deſire, pray, or beg; *pedes*, *pede*, and *pedía*, I did deſire; *pedí*, I have deſired.

Verbs that have a *j* before *o* in the Preſent Indicative, change the *j* into *g* in the other Tenſes; as *finjo*, I feign; *finges*, *finge*; *fingía*, I did feign; *fingi*, I have feigned; *afflijo*, I afflict; *affliges*, *afflige*; *affligía*, I did afflict; *affligí*, I have afflicted, *&c.* So in the Verb *dirijo*, I direct; *frijo*, I fry; *tinjo*, I dye; *cinjo*, I gird, *&c.*

There

There are other Verbs that do not only loſe the laſt, or change the laſt Vowel, but alſo the laſt but one, or the Penultima, and that in two Kinds. The firſt change *i* in the Penultima into *e* in the reſt of the Perſons and Tenſes, *v. g. firo*, I ſtrike, *feres, fere, feria*, I did ſtrike; *feri*, I have ſtruck; *ſigo*, I follow, *ſegues, ſegue*; *ſeguia*, I did follow; *ſeguí*, I have followed; *minto*, I lye, *mentes, mentia*, I did lye; *mentí*, I have lyed. Thus *frijo, freges*; *cirno, cernes*; *ſinto, ſentes*; *perſigo, perſegues*; *ſirvo, ſerves*, and the like; but they keep the Letter *i* in the third Perſons Singular and Plural Preſent of the Imperative; as *ſiga elle, ſigam elles*, let him follow, let them follow; and in the Preſent Optative in all the Perſons; as *oxala ſiga eu, ſigas, ſiga*, &c. Alſo in the firſt Perſons of the Conjunctive; as *como eu ſigo*, when I follow.

The ſecond Kind are ſuch Verbs as have an *u* in the Penultima, and in all the other Tenſes and Perſons change it into *o*; *v. g. bulo*, I meddle with; *boles, bole*; *bolia*, I did meddle with; *bolir*, to meddle with; *durmo*, I ſleep, *dormes, dorme*; *dormia, dormir*; *engulo*, I ſwallow, *engoles, engole*; *engolia, engolir*; *ſumo*, I ſum, *ſomes, ſome*; *ſomia, ſomir*; *cubro*, I cover, *cobres, cobre*; *cobria, cobrir*; *ſubo*, I come or go up, *ſobes, ſobe*; *ſobia, ſobir*; *tuſſo*, I cough, *toſſes, toſſe, toſſia, toſſir*. And thus they are eaſily diſtinguiſh'd from ſuch as never loſe the Vowel *u*, nor change it into *o*; as *concluo, conclues, concluir*; *grunho, grunhes, grunhir*; *zuno, zunes, zunir*. But thoſe Verbs that change *u* into *o*, do not admit of any Change in the third Perſon Singular and Plural of the Preſent Imperative; as *bula ou ſuba elle, bulam ou ſubam elles*, let him or them meddle or come up: So in all Perſons of the Preſent Optative, as *oxala bula, ſuba eu, bulas, ſubas tu*, God grant

that I or thou may or mayſtmeddle or come up, *&c.* Alſo in the firſt Perſons of the Conjunctive, as *como ſubo*, when I go up.

The Participle of the Preterperfect Tenſe of the Verb Paſſive of the ſecond and third Conjugation, are alſo ſubject to ſome Variation; for altho' they commonly end in *ido*, as *lido*, *ido*, *vençido*, *corrido*, yet ſeveral end in *to*, as *féyto*, made or done, from the Verb *faço*, I make or do; *viſto*, ſeen, from *vejo*, I ſee; *roto*, torn, from *rompo*; *bento*, bleſſed, from *benzo*, I bleſs; *poſto*, put, from *ponho*; *cheyo*, full, from *encho*; *eléito*, choſen, from *elejo*; *dito*, ſaid, from *digo*; *abſolto*, abſolved, from *abſolvo*; *reſoluto*, reſolv'd, from *reſolvo*; *eſcrito*, written, from *eſcrevo*. All theſe are of the *ſecond Conjugation*. Of the *third Conjugation* are the following; as *frito*, fryed, from *frigir*; *ſurto*, riſen, from *ſurgir*; *aberto*, open'd, from *abrir*; *cuberto*, cover'd, from *cobrir*; *corréito*, corrected, from *corrigir*. The Verb *venho* and its Compounds end their Participle in *indo*; as *vindo*, come.

But it is remarkable that but few Verbs of the ſecond and third Conjugation equivocate with Nouns; of the ſecond Conjugation are *corro*, I run; *como*, I eat; *ſorvo*, I ſwallow; and *corro*, a Running, *como*, as if, *ſorvo*, a Soop: And of the third *ſayo*, I go out; *río*, I laugh; and *ſaya*, a Petticoat, and *río*, a River, which, tho' they equivocate in the firſt Perſon of the Indicative Mood Preſent, and Singular Number, with Nouns ſo expreſs'd, they are altogether different in other Perſons.

CHAP.

CHAP. XV.

Of the Irregular Verbs, and their Formation.

IT has been already obſerv'd, that few or no Verbs of the firſt Conjugation are reputed irregular; but of the ſecond and third there are found ſeveral. Of the *ſecond* the Verb *ſou, ſer*, is accounted one, the ſecond Preſent Perſon Indicative ending in *es*. So likewiſe are the Verbs *ey* and *tenho*, with all its Compounds; as *atenho, contenho, detenho, mantenho, retenho, ſoſtenho*, and the following Verbs.

Ind.Pr.	*Imperf.*	*Perf.*	*Infin.*
Sey,	ſabia,	ſoube,	ſaber, *to know.*
Poſſo,	podia,	pude,	poder, *to be able.*
Quero,	queria,	quiz,	querer, *to deſire, will or love.*
Faço,	fazia,	fiz,	fazer, *to do, make.*
Digo,	dizia,	dice,	dizer, *to ſay.*
Trago,	trazia,	trouxe,	trazer, *to bring.*

Likewiſe the Defective Verb

	Preterp.	*Infin.*
Agradame, *it pleaſeth me*,	agradoume,	agradecer,
agradate,	agradalhe.	

As alſo the Defective Verb

Soes, ſoe, & ſoem, ſoía, ſoias, ſoia, *as* ſoe fazer, *he is accuſtom'd to do.*

Irregular Verbs belonging to the *third Conjugation.*

Ind.Preſ.	*Imperf.*	*Perf.*	*Infin.*	
Cayo,	cahia,	cahi,	cahir,	*to fall.*
Sayo,	ſahia,	ſahi,	ſahir,	*to go out.*
Poſſuo,	poſſuya,	peſſuy,	poſſuir,	*to poſſeſs.*
Venho,	vinha,	vim,	vir,	*to come.*

As

As alſo its Compounds, *Avenho*, *antevenho*, *convenho*, *intervenho*, and the Impersonal *convém*, it behoveth; Preterperfect *convéyo*; Infinitive *convir*; it wants a Participle Perfect.

Hitherto is alſo referr'd the Verb *vóu*, which, as it is a very common Word, and one of the moſt irregular, we will conjugate it here at large.

Indicative Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Sing.
Eu vou, *I go.*
Tu vas, *thou goeſt.*
Elle vay, *he goeth.*

Plur.
Nôs vamos, *we go.*
Vôs vays, *ye go.*
Elles vam, *they go.*

Imperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu hia, *I went or did go.*
Tu hias, *thou wentſt or didſt go.*
Elle hia, *he went or did go.*

Plur.
Nôs híamos, *we went or did go.*
Vôs híeys, *ye went or did go.*
Elles híam, *they went or did go.*

Firſt Preterperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu fuy, *I have gone or have been.*
Tu foſte, *thou haſt gone or haſt been.*
Elle foy, *he has gone or hath been.*

Plur.
Nôs fomos, *we have gone or have been.*
Vôs foſtes, *ye have gone or have been.*
Elles foram, *they have gone or have been.*

Second Preterperfect.

Sing.
Eu tenho ido, *I have gone or have been.*
Tu tens ido, *thou haſt gone or haſt been.*
Elle tem ido, *he hath gone or hath been.*

Plur.
Nôs temos ido, *we have gone or have been.*
Vôs tendes ido, *ye have gone or have been.*
Elles tem ido, *they have gone or have been.*

Preterpluperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu * tinha ido, *I had gone or had been.*
Tu tinhas ido, *thou hadſt gone or hadſt been.*
Elle tinha ido, *he had gone or had been.*

Plur.
Nôs tínhamos ido, *we had gone or had been.*
Vôs tínhes ido, *ye had gone or had been.*
Elles tínham ido, *they had gone or had been.*

Firſt Future Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu irey, *I ſhall or will go.*
Tu iras, *thou ſhalt or wilt go.*
Elle irá, *he ſhall or will go.*

Plur.
Nôs irémos, *we ſhall or will go.*
Vôs iréys, *ye ſhall or will go.*
Elles iram, *they ſhall or will go.*

Second Future Tenſe.

Sing.
Ja entam eu teréy ido, *I ſhall then have gone or been.*
Ja entam tu terás ido, *thou ſhalt then have gone or been.*
Ja entam elle terá ido, *we ſhall then have gone or been.*

Plur.
Ja entam nôs terémos ido, *we ſhall then have gone or been.*
Ja entam vôs teréys ido, *ye ſhall then have gone or been.*
Ja entam elles terám ido, *they ſhall then have gone or been.*

* Some conjugate the Pluperfect *fora, foras, fora, foramos, fôreys, foram.*

Imperative

Imperative Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Sing.
Has no firſt Perſon.
Va tu, *go thou.*
Va elle, *let him go.*

Plur.
Vamos nôs, *let us go.*
íde vôs, *go ye.*
Váyam elles, *let them go.*

Future Tenſe.

Sing.
Has no firſt Perſon.
Irás tu, *thou ſhalt go.*
Irá elle, *he ſhall go.*

Plur.
Irémos nôs, *we ſhall go.*
Iréys vôs, *ye ſhall go.*
Irám elles, *they ſhall go.*

Optative Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Sing.
Oxala vaya eu, *would to God I may go.*
Oxala vayas tu, *would to God thou mayſt go.*
Oxala vaya elle, *would to God he may go.*

Plur.
Oxala vayámos nôs, *would to God we may go.*
Oxala váyais vôs, *would to God ye may go.*
Oxala váyam elles, *would to God they may go.*

Imperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Oxala fora & foſſe eu, *would I might go.*
Oxala foras & foſſes tu, *would thou mightſt go.*
Oxala fora & foſſe elle, *would he might go.*

Plur.
Oxala fóramos & fóſſemos nôs, *would we might go.*
Oxala fóreys & fóſſeys vôs, *would ye might go.*
Oxala fóram & fóſſem elles, *would they might go.*

The

The Uncertain Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu iria, *I might or would go.*
Tu irias, *thou mightſt or wouldſt go.*
Elle iria, *he might or would go.*

Plur.
Nôs iríamos, *we might or would go.*
Vôs iríeys, *ye might or would go.*
Elles iríam, *they might or would go.*

Preterperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Quéyra Deos que eu tenha ído, *God grant that I may have gone or been.*
Quéyra Deos que tu tenhas ído, *God grant that thou mayſt have gone or been:*
Quéyra Deos que elle tenha ído, *God grant that he may have gone or been.*

Plur.
Quéyra Deos que nôs ténhamos ído, *God grant that we may have gone or been.*
Quéyra Deos que vôs ténhays ído, *God grant that ye may have gone or been.*
Quéyra Deos que elles ténham ído, *God grant that they may have gone or been.*

Preterpluperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Provéra Deos que eu tivéra, ou tiveſſe ído, *would to God I had gone or been.*
Provéra Deos que tu tivéras, ou tiveſſes ído, *would to God that thou hadſt gone or been.*
Provéra Deos que elle tivéra, ou tiveſſe ído, *would to God that he had gone or been.*

Plur.
Provéra Deos que nôs tivéramos, ou tiveſſemos ído, *would to God that we had gone or been.*
Provéra Deos que vôs tivéreys, ou tivéſſeys ído, *would to God that ye had gone or been.*
Provéra Deos que elles tivéram, ou tiveſſem ído, *would to God that they had gone or been.*

Firſt

Firſt Future Tenſe.

Sing.
- Quando ou como eu for, *when or as I ſhall have gone or been.*
- Quando ou como tu fóres, *when or as thou ſhalt have gone or been.*
- Quando ou como elle for, *when or as he ſhall have gone or been.*

Plur.
- Quando ou como nôs formos, *when or as we ſhall have gone or been.*
- Quando ou como vôs fordes, *when or as ye ſhall have gone or been.*
- Quando ou como elles forem, *when or as they ſhall have gone or been.*

Second Future Tenſe.

Sing.
- Como ou quando eu tiver ído, *when or as I ſhall go or ſhall have gone or been.*
- Como ou quando tu tivéres ído, *when or as thou ſhalt go or ſhalt have gone or been.*
- Como ou quando elle tiver ído, *when or as he ſhall go or ſhall have gone or been.*

Plur.
- Como ou quando nôs tivérmos ído, *when or as we ſhall go or ſhall have gone or been.*
- Como ou quando vôs tiverdes ído, *when or as ye ſhall go or ſhall have gone or been.*
- Como ou quando elles tivérem ído, *when or as they ſhall go or ſhall have gone or been.*

Infinitive Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Ir, *to go.*

Preterperfect Tenſe.

Tér ído, *to have gone.*

Future

Future Tenſe.

Tér de ir, *to go hereafter (to have, or to be to go.)*

Gerund.

hindo, *going.*

Participle Preſent.

o que va, *he (or one) that goes.*

Participle Preterperfect.

ido, *gone.*

Participle Future.

O que tem de ir, *he (or one) that is to go.*

We ſaid above that there are but three Conjugations and Terminations of Verbs, in *ar*, *er*, and *ir*, which Rule is ſo far general, that it has but one Exception, to wit, the Verb *ponho*, in the Infinitive *pór*, with its fourteen Compounds, *anteponho*, *poſtponho*, *deponho*, *componho*, *diſponho*, *exponho*, *imponho*, *interponho*, *opponho*, *preponho*, *reponho*, *ſupponho*, *treſponho*; but as it is not worth while to make a fourth Conjugation for the ſake of one Verb, we let it paſs among the Irregulars, and becauſe it is very frequently uſed, we here conjugate it at Length.

Indicative Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Sing.
Eu ponho, *I put.*
Tu poens, *thou putteſt.*
Elle poem, *he puts.*

Plur.
Nôs pónhamos, *we put.*
Vôs pônheys, *ye put.*
Elles poem, *they put.*

Imperfect

Imperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu punha, *I did put.*
Tu punhas, *thou didſt put.*
Elle punha, *he did put.*

Plur.
Nôs púnhamos, *we did put.*
Vôs púnheys, *ye did put.*
Elles púnham, *they did put.*

Firſt Preterperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu puz, *I put.*
Tu puzéſte, *thou putteſt.*
Elle poz, *he put.*

Plur.
Nôs puzémos, *we put.*
Vôs puzéſtes, *ye put.*
Elles puzéram, *they put.*

Second Preterperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu tenho poſto, *I have put.*
Tu tens poſto, *thou haſt put.*
Elle tem poſto, *he hath put.*

Plur.
Nôs temos poſto, *we have put.*
Vôs tendes poſto, *ye have put.*
Elles tem poſto, *they have put.*

Preterpluperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu * tinha poſto, *I had put.*
Tu tinhas poſto, *thou hadſt put.*
Elle tinha poſto, *he had put.*

Plur.
Nôs tínhamos poſto, *we had put.*
Vôs tínheys poſto, *ye had put.*
Elles tinham poſto, *they had put.*

Firſt Future.

Sing.
Eu pórey, *I ſhall or will put.*
Tu porás, *thou ſhalt or wilt put.*
Elle porá, *he ſhall or will put.*

* Some conjugate the Preterpluperfect *puzéra, puzéras, puzêra, puzéramos, puzéreys, puzéram.*

Plur.

Plur. Nôs porémos, *we ſhall or will put.*
Vôs poréys, *ye ſhall or will put.*
Elles porám, *they ſhall or will put.*

Second Future.

Sing. Eu terey poſto, *I ſhall have put.*
Tu teras poſto, *thou ſhalt have put.*
Elle terá poſto, *he ſhall have put.*

Plur. Nôs terémos poſto, *we ſhall have put.*
Vôs teréys poſto, *ye ſhall have put.*
Elles terám poſto, *they ſhall have put.*

Imperative Mood. *Firſt Tenſe.*

Sing. *Has no firſt Perſon.*
Póem tu, *put thou.*
Pónha elle, *let him put.*

Plur. Ponhámos nôs, *let us put.*
Ponháys vôs, *put ye.*
Pónham elles, *let them put.*

Second Tenſe.

Sing. *Has no firſt Perſon.*
Porás tu, *thou ſhalt put.*
Porá elle, *he ſhall put.*

Plur. Poremos nôs, *we ſhall put.*
Poreys vôs, *ye ſhall put.*
Poram elles, *they ſhall put.*

Optative *and* Subjunctive Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Sing. Oxala ponha eu, *would to God that I may put.*
Oxala ponhas tu, *would to God that thou mayſt put.*
Oxala ponha elle, *would to God that he may put.*

Plur.
- Oxala ponhámos nôs, *would to God that we may put.*
- Oxala pónhays vôs, *would to God that ye may put.*
- Oxala ponham elles, *would to God that they may put.*

Imperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
- Oxala puzéra ou puzeſſe eu, *would to God I did put.*
- Oxala puzéras ou puzeſſes tu, *would to God thou didſt put.*
- Oxala puzéra ou puzeſſe elle, *would to God he did put.*

Plur.
- Oxala puzéramos ou puzéſſemos nôs, *would to God we did put.*
- Oxala puzéreis ou puzéſſeis vôs, *would to God ye did put.*
- Oxala puzeram ou puzeſſem elles, *would to God they did put.*

Preterperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
- Quéyra Deos que tenha eu poſto, *God grant I have or may have put.*
- Quéyra Deos que tenhas tu poſto, *God grant thou haſt or mayſt have put.*
- Quéyra Deos que tenha elle poſto, *God grant he has or may have put.*

Plur.
- Quéyra Deos que ténhamos nôs poſto, *God grant we have or may have put.*
- Quéyra Deos que ténhays vôs poſto, *God grant ye have or may have put.*
- Quéyra Deos que ténham elles poſto, *God grant they have or may have put.*

Preterpluperfect

Preterpluperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Prouvéra Deos que tivera ou tiveſſe eu poſto, *would to God I had put.*
Prouvéra Deos que tiveras ou tiveſſes tu poſto, *would to God thou hadſt put.*
Prouvéra Deos que tivera ou tiveſſe elle poſto, *would to God he had put.*

Plur.
Prouvéra Deos que tivéramos ou tiveſſemos nôs poſto, *would to God we had put.*
Prouvéra Deos que tivéreys ou tivéſſeis vôs poſto, *would to God ye had put.*
Prouvéra Deos que tivéram ou tivéſſem elles poſto, *would to God they had put.*

Firſt Future Tenſe.

Sing.
Quando eu puzer, *when I ſhall put.*
Quando tu puzeres, *when thou ſhalt put.*
Quando elle puzer, *when he ſhall put.*

Plur.
Quando nôs puzermos, *when we ſhall put.*
Quando vôs puzerdes, *when ye ſhall put.*
Quando elles puzerem, *when they ſhall put.*

Second Future Tenſe.

Sing.
Quando eu tivér poſto, *when I ſhall have put.*
Quando tu tivéres poſto, *when thou ſhalt have put.*
Quando elle tivér poſto, *when he ſhall have put.*

Plur.
Quando nôs tivérmos poſto, *when we ſhall have put.*
Quando vôs tivérdes poſto, *when ye ſhall have put.*
Quando elles tivérem poſto, *when they ſhall have put.*

Infinitive Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Pór, *to put.*

Preterperfect Tenſe.

Ter poſto, *to have put.*

Future Tenſe.

Ter de pór, *to (be to put) put hereafter.*

Gerund.

Pondo, *in putting.*

Participle Preſent.

O que poem, *one (he) that puts.*

Participle Preterperfect.

poſto, *put.*

Participle Future.

O que tem de pór, *one (he) that is to put.*

CHAP. XVI.

Of the Reciprocal Verbs.

REciprocal Verbs are called thoſe that have in all their Moods, Tenſes, Numbers, and Perſons, join'd to them the Pronouns *me*, *te*, *ſe*, *nôs*, *vôs*, *ſe*, me, thee, him or herſelf, us, you and themſelves; as *eu me queixo*, I complain; *tu te queixavas*, thou didſt complain; *elle ſe queixou*, he complained; *nôs nôs tínhamos queixado*, we did complain; *vós vôs queixaréys*, you will complain; *elles ſe quexáram*,, they ſhall or will complain.

Of

Of the ſame Kind are the Verbs *irárſe* and *agaſtárſe*, to grow angry; *deitárſe*, to lie down, *deſconfiarſe*, to miſtruſt; *lembrarſe*, to remember; *arrependerſe*, to repent; *acentar ſe*, to ſit down; *&c.* which are alſo reciprocal in the *Italian*, *French*, and *Spaniſh* Languages, except *irarſe*, to grow angry, which is in the *Italian andar in colera*, and *acentarſe*, in *Italian ſedere*.

The Pronoun ſtands before theſe Verbs in the Indicative and Subjunctive Moods, but in the Imperative and Infinitive behind them.

As theſe Verbs do not differ from the others in their Conjugations, we ſhall only ſet down here one Example to ſhew how they are handled.

Indicative Mood *Preſent Tenſe.*

Sing.
Eu me acento, *I ſit down.*
Tu te acentas, *thou ſitteſt down.*
Elle ſe acenta, *he ſits down.*

Plur.
Nôs nôs acéntamos, *we ſit down.*
Vós vôs acéntays, *ye ſit down.*
Elles ſe acéntam, *they ſit down.*

Imperfect Tenſe.

Sing.
Eu me acentava, *I did ſit down.*
Tu te acentavas, *thou didſt ſit down.*
Elle ſe acentava, *he did ſit down.*

Plur.
Nôs nôs acentávamos, *we did ſit down.*
Vôs vôs acentáveys, *ye did ſit down.*
Elles ſe acentávam, *they did ſit down.*

Firſt Preterperfect Tenſe.

Eu me acentéy, *I ſat down.*

Second Preterperfect Tenſe.

Eu me tenho acentado, *I have ſat down.*

Preterpluperfect Tenſe.

Eu me acentára ou tinha acentado, *I had ſat down.*

Firſt Future.

Eu me acenterey, *I will ſit down.*

Second Future.

Ja entam eu me terey acentado, *I ſhall then have ſat down.*

Imperative Mood. *Firſt Tenſe.*

Sing.
Has no firſt Perſon.
Acéntate, *ſit thou down.*
Acénte ſe elle, *let him ſit down.*

Plur.
Acentémos nôs, *let us ſit down.*
Acentáyvôs, *ſit ye down.*
Acéntem ſe elles, *let them ſit down.*

Second Tenſe.

Sing.
Has no firſt Perſon.
Acentaraſte, *thou ſhalt ſit down.*
Acentaraſe elle, *he ſhall ſit down.*

Plur.
Acentarémos nôs, *we ſhall ſit down.*
Acentaréys vôs, *ye ſhall ſit down.*
Acentarámſe elles, *they ſhall ſit down.*

Optative *or* Subjunctive Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Oxala eu me acente, *would I may ſit down.*

Imperfect Tenſe.

Oxala eu me acentára ou aſſentaſſe, *would I might ſit down.*

Uncertain Tenſe.

Eu me acentaria, *I might or could ſit down.*

Preter-

Preterperfect Tenſe.

Quera Deos eu me tenha acentado, *pleaſe God I may have ſat down.*

Preterpluperfect Tenſe.

Praça a Deos eu me tivera ou tiveſſe acentado, *pleaſe God or wiſh to God I had ſat down.*

Firſt Future Tenſe.

Como ou quando eu me acentar, *as or when I ſhall ſit down.*

Second Future Tenſe.

Quando eu me tiver acentado, *when I ſhall have ſat down.*

Infinitive Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Acentarſe, *to ſit down.*

Preterperfect Tenſe.

Terſe acentado, *to have ſat down.*

Gerund.

Acentando ſe, ou em acentar ſe, *in ſitting down.*

Participle Preſent.

O que ſe acenta, *he (or one) that ſits down.*

Participle Preterperfect.

Acentado, *ſat down.*

Participle Future.

O que ha ou tem dacentarſe, *one (or he) that is to ſit down.*

☞ Obſerve, that all Verbs Active may be made reciprocal.

As for Example, you may ſay,

Sing.
Eu me amo, *I love myſelf.*
Tu te amas, *thou loveſt thyſelf.*
Elle ſe ama, *he loveth himſelf.*

Plur.
Nôs nôs amamos, *we love ourſelves.*
Vôs vôs amays, *ye love yourſelves.*
Elles ſe amam, *they love themſelves.*

And ſo in all the other Tenſes.

Of the Impersonal Verbs.

There are three Sorts of Impersonal Verbs that have but the third Perſon in Singular.

The firſt are thoſe that are properly impersonal of themſelves, and require no Pronoun with 'em; as,

He meſter, *it is neceſſary.*
Chove, *it rains.*
Trovoa, *it thunders.*
Pedriſca, *it hails.*
Neva, *it ſnows.*

The ſecond come from the Verbs Active, and are accompanied by the Particle *ſe*, which renders them impersonal, and gives them a Paſſive Signification, as *ſe diz*, it is ſaid; *ſe cré*, it is believed; *ſe eſcreve*, it is wrote, which anſwers to the *French* Expreſſion, *on dit*, *on croit*, *on ecrit*: This Way of expreſſing themſelves is very common to the *Portugueſe* and *Spaniards*.

The third Sort reſemble the Reciprocal Verbs, and are conjugated with the Pronouns, *me*, *te*, *ſe*, *lhe*, *nôs*, *vôs*, *ſe*, and *lhes*. Such are *a mim me ſucede*, it happens to me; *a mim me baſta*, it is enough for me; *a mim me parece*, it ſeems to me.

Note, Theſe are alſo often uſed like thoſe of the firſt Order.

The

☞The Verb *da*, he or it gives, is alſo often uſed as an Impersonal of this Claſs; for when they would ſay, I do not fancy this, or this doth not pleaſe me, they expreſs it *nam ſe me da diſto*, or he doth not fancy it, *nam ſe lhe da diſto.*

The firſt is conjugated thro' all or moſt of the Tenſes and Moods, but only in the third Perſon, and can never have any Perſon join'd to it; as,

Indic. Preſ. Trovoa, *it thunders.*
Imperfect. Trovoava, *it did thunder.*
Preterperfect. Trovoau, *it has thunder'd.*

The Word *he meſter*, it is neceſſary, is conjugated by changing the Verb *ey*, or third Perſon *he*, through all the Tenſes and Moods, the Word *meſter* remaining inflexible; as,

Indic. Preſ. He meſter, *it is neceſſary.*
Imperfect. Avia meſter, *it was neceſſary.*
Preterperfect. Ouve meſter, *it has been neceſſary.*

The ſecond Sort, which are accompanied by the Particle *ſe*, are alſo ſometimes expreſs'd by the third Perſon in Plural, without the Pronoun *ſe*; as *dizem*, *eſcrevem*, *lém*, they ſay, they write, they read, which is the ſame Senſe as it is ſaid, it is wrote, it is read; as *ſe diz que eſte homém he muito rico*, it is ſaid that this Man is very rich; and *dizem que eſte homem he muito rico*, they ſay that this Man is very rich.

The third Sort of the Impersonal Verbs are thoſe which are conjugated with the Pronouns *me*, *te*, *ſe*, *lhe*, *nôs*, *vôs*, *ſe lhes*. Example,

Indicative

Indicative Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Sing.
A mim me parece, *it ſeems to me.*
A ti te parece, *it ſeems to thee.*
A elle lhe parece, *it ſeems to him.*

Plur.
A nôs nôs parece, *it ſeems to us.*
A vôs vôs parece, *it ſeems to you.*
A elles lhes parece, *it ſeems to them*

Imperfect Tenſe.

A mim me parecía, *it did ſeem to me.*

Firſt Preterperfect Tenſe.

A mim me pareceo, *it ſeem'd to me.*

Second Preterperfect Tenſe.

A mim me ha parecido, *it has ſeem'd to me.*

Preterpluperfect Tenſe.

A mim me avia parecido, *it had ſeem'd to me.*

Firſt Future.

A mim me parecerá, *it will ſeem to me.*

Second Future.

A mim me avera parecido, *it will have ſeem'd to me.*

Optative Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Oxala a mim me pareſa, *would it may ſeem to me.*

Imperfect Tenſe.

Oxala a mim me parecera ou pareceſſe, *would it might ſeem to me.*

Uncertain Tenſe.

A mim me pareceria, *it would, could, or might ſeem to me.*

Preterperfect

Preterperfect Tenſe.

Oxala a mim me aja parecido, *would it may have ſeemed to me.*

Preterpluperfect Tenſe.

Oxala ou prouvera a Deos a mim me ouvera ou ouveſſe parecido, *would or pleaſe God it had ſeemed to me.*

Firſt Future.

Quando ou como a mim me parecer, *when or as to me it ſhall ſeem.*

Second Future.

Como ou quando a mim me ouvéra parecido, *as or when to me it ſhall have ſeem'd.*

Infinitive Mood. *Preſent Tenſe.*

Parecer, *to ſeem.*

Participle Preſent.

Parecido, *ſeemed, &c.*

Verbs of this Order are alſo, *a mim me ſucede*, it happens to me; *a mim me deſcontenta*, it diſpleaſes me; *a mim me agrada*, and *a mim me contenta*, it pleaſes me; *a mim me peſa*, I am ſorry; and many others, which the Reader, by the Help of the above Obſervations, will eaſily diſcover.

The Verb *ha*, he, ſhe, or it has, in the third Perſon Singular of the Indicative Preſent ſerves likewiſe often for an impersonal Verb, and is joined with Nouns both in the Singular or Plural Number, in the ſame Manner as the *French* uſe their *il y a*; and as they ſay, *il y a un homme*, and *il y a pluſieurs hommes*, ſo the *Portugueſe* ſay likewiſe, *ha hum homem*, and *ha múitos homens*, there

is

is one Man, and there are many Men; and *avera hum homem*, & *avera múitos homens*, there will be one Man, and there will be many Men; which Way of expreſſing themſelves is alſo uſual in the *Spaniſh* Language.

☞Obſerve, that the *Portugueſe*, both for Elegancy of Sound, and Conciſeneſs of Expreſſion, join to their Verbs the following Particles, *me*, *te*, *ſe*, *lhe*, me, thee, him; *nôs*, *vôs*, *lhes*, us, you, them: Alſo *mó*, *tó*, *lhó*, contracted from *me o*, *te o*, *lhe o*, it to me, it to thee, it to him or her; alſo *má*, *tá*, *lhá*, her to me, her to thee, her to him; and in Plural *mós*, *tós lhós*, *más*, *tás*, *lhás*, them to me, them to thee, them to them.

Alſo *nôlo*, *vôlo*, from *nôs o*, *vôs o*, it to us, it to you, and *nôla*, *vôla*; *nôlos*, *vôlos*, *nôlas*, *vôlas*, her to us, her to you, them to us, them to you.

The Articles *o*, *a*, *os*, *as*, are likewiſe joined to the End of Verbs, as in the Gerund *ſendoo*, *ſendoa*, he or it being, ſhe being; and in Plural *ſendoos*, *ſendoas*, they being; *amandoo*, *amandoa*, *lendoo*, *lendoa*, *amandoos*, *amandoas*, *lendoos*, *lendoas*, &c. But when the Articles *o*, *a* are joined to a Verb in the Infinitive Preſent, the *r* is changed into a *ll*; as *amallo*, *amalla*, to love him, it, or her; *dallo*, *dalla*, &c.

The following Example may ſerve to illuſtrate theſe Difficulties.

A preſente he para referirlhe, que tenho comprado o relogio de prata, por 8 *libras Eſtarlinas. Eu ví dous outros dóuro, bem condicionados, mas não podrey procurarlhos pollo preço que aponta; ſem embargo diſto offreceomos por* 20 *Guineos cada hum*, &c. The Preſent is to adviſe you that I have bought the Silver

Silver Watch for 8 *l.* Sterling. I have ſeen two others of Gold, well condition'd, but I ſhall not be able to procure 'em you for the Price you appoint; however, he has offer'd 'em to me for 20 Guineas each.

Elle não quer dárnolo, dárvolo, dárnola, dárvola, dárnolos, dárvolos, dárvolas, por eſſe dinheiro, he will not give it us, give it you, give them to us, give them to you, for that Money.

THE

THE

SYNTAX.

Some General Remarks.

THE Word *Syntax* comes from the *Greek* συντάσσω, I put in order, and therefore whatever Obſervations or Rules contribute towards a juſt Uſe and Diſpoſition of all the Parts of Speech, belong properly under this Head.

The Conſtruction or Compoſition of Words into Sentences, is divided into Common and Figurative. The Common is that which we uſe in common Diſcourſe. By converſing with Men who ſpeak a Language correctly, we may learn to ſpeak Grammatically true, and arrive to ſuch a Nicety that the Ear ſhall be ſhock'd to hear any one ſpeak againſt the Rules of Grammar, tho' we cannot give any Reaſon for our Diſlike: For Example, if one was to ſay *many People has been*, &c. or *Yeſterday will be a fine Day*, there is hardly a Peaſant who would not find fault with it, tho' he were not able to ſhew the Soleciſm. The Figurative deviates ſomewhat from the common way of expreſſing one's Thoughts, and is uſed by Authors for Conciſeneſs or Elegancy.

Three Things are chiefly to be obſerved in the *Syntax*; the firſt, that the Adjective, Pronoun, and Participle are never applied in Speech without a Noun Subſtantive expreſs'd or underſtood, with which it muſt agree in Gender, Number, and Caſe. Thus when the Noun Subſtantive is of

of the Maſculine Gender, and in Nominative Singular, the Noun Adjective and Pronoun muſt be joined to it in the ſame Order, as *eſte homem he muy caritativo*, this Man is very charitable; and in Plural, *eſtes homens ſam muy caritativos*: Example of the Feminine, *eſſa moça he fermoſa*, that young Woman is handſome, *eſſas moças ſam fermoſas*, thoſe young Women are handſome.

The ſecond, that the Verb may be placed in the due Tenſe, and always fitted in Perſon and Number to the Nominative or Perſon it ſpeaks of; as *eſtes homens*, theſe Men, the Pronoun ſtanding in Plural, and being of the third Perſon, the Verb to be joined with it muſt alſo be of the third Perſon Plural, and therefore you are to ſay, *eſtes homens ſam*, theſe Men they are; and not *eſtes homens ſoys*, theſe Men ye are, or *eſtes homens he*, theſe Men is.

Thirdly, the Relative ought always to correſpond with the Antecedent Noun in Gender and Number, as *o livro, nó qual tenho lido*, the Book in which I have read; and not *o livro ná qual*, &c. *livro* the Noun to which *nó qual* refers being Maſculine. As *cidades as quáys ſam deſtroídas*, the Cities which are deſtroyed; and not *as cidades os quays*, nor *cidades a qual*; *cidades* being of the Feminine Gender and in Plural Number, with which the Relative *as quays* ought to agree.

Theſe three are the fundamental Rules of the *Syntax*, which being well fixed in the Learner's Mind, the reſt will ſeem very eaſy to him.

CHAP. I.

Of the Genders.

THE Genders of all Nouns in this Language are reputed only to be two, as Maſculine and Feminine, which are known by the Articles

o & *a*, *dó* & *dá* There is alſo a Neuter Gender uſed ſometimes in the Article *o*, and the Pronouns *iſſo* and *aquillo*, as may be ſeen in the Beginning of this Grammar; and ſome Words partaking both of the Maſculine and Feminine Gender are ſaid to be of the Common Gender.

The Particles *o* & *ao*, or *os* and *aos* preceding any Noun, it is a certain Sign of its being of the Maſculine Gender; and *a*, *á*, & *as* & *ás*, denote the Feminine.

Obſerve, the Letter *a* is ſometimes found before *e* Maſculine, as *convem á pedro*, it behoveth *Peter*; *elle matóu a ſeu irmão*, he has kill'd his Brother; of which *ſee the Article Indefinite.*

The following Rules may ſerve to diſtinguiſh the Genders of the Nouns Subſtantive by their Signification.

It is a general Rule, tho' not without Exceptions, that thoſe which end in *o* are of the Maſculine, and thoſe in *a* of the Feminine Gender.

All proper Names of Men are of the Maſculine Gender; alſo all Names of Angels, all the heathen Gods, the Names of the Winds; all Titles, as *Emperador*, *Rey*, *Principe*, &c. the Names of Trades, as *alfayáte*, a Taylor; *çapatéyro*, a Shoemaker; *tavernéyro*, a Vintner, or Tavern-keeper; all the Names of the Months. Of the Feminine Gender are all Women's Names, as *Maria*, *Anna*, *Catherina*, &c. all heathen Goddeſſes; alſo the Names of Nymphs, and Names of Dignity, as *Emperatrîz*, and whatſoever other Nouns concern the Feminine Sex. All the Names of Iſlands, Provinces, Cities, Villages, Ships, *&c.* ending in *a* are of the Feminine Gender; alſo all Names of Fruits, Trees, and Flowers, terminating in *a*. Thoſe that are not comprehended in theſe Rules, are beſt learnt from Obſervation; too many Rules commonly ſerving rather to embroil than to inſtruct a Beginner.

Ob-

Obſervations how to know the Genders of Nouns Subſtantive by their Terminations.

1. Nouns ending in *a* or *ãa* are Feminine, whether Proper or Common, as *Maria*, *Roma*, *França*, &c. *Poeſia*, *Villa*, *Muſica*, *Romãa*, *Maãa*, *Avellãa*, Mary, Rome, France, Poetry, a Town, Muſic, a Pomegranate, an Apple, a Small-nut. Except ſuch Names as denote a manly Office; as *marióla*, a Porter, *meſtréſcola*, a School-maſter, and Sirnames, and the Word *dia*, a Day; alſo ſeveral Words deriv'd from the *Greek* and *Latin*, as *clima*, *fantaſma*, *poema*, *epigramma*, *enigma*, *diadema*, *dilemma*, *eſtratagema*, *cometa*, *planeta*, which are all of the Maſculine Gender. The Word *cada*, every, is adapted to both Genders; as *cada homem*, *cada mulher*, every Man, every Woman.

2. Nouns ending in *é* are Maſculine, as the proper, *Dunquerque*, *Albuquerque*; common, as *barrete*, a Cap; *ſinete*, a Seal; *capote*, a Cloak; *vinagre*, Vinegar; *azêite*, Oil, *&c.* But this Rule has the following Exceptions; firſt, all Names of Virtues, Vices, Faculties and Paſſions of the Mind are of the Feminine Gender, as *virtude*, *ſantidade*, *bondade*, *fé*, Virtue, Holineſs, Goodneſs, Faith; *inimizade*, *ocioſidade*, *vaidade*, *menenice*, *moroſidade*, *borachiſſe*, *vontade*, &c. Enmity, Idleneſs, Vanity, Childiſhneſs, Moroſeneſs, Drunkenneſs, Will, *&c.* Secondly, the following are alſo of the Feminine kind, as *idade*, Age; *velhice*, old Age; *ruſticidade*, Ruſticity; *capacidade*, Capacity; *felicidade*, Felicity; *ſorte*, fortune; *morte*, Death; *arte*, Art; *parte*, Part; *árvore*, a Tree; *ave*, a Bird; *carne*, Fleſh; *fertilidade*, Fertility; *ſede*, Thirſt; *ſebe*, a Hedge; *cóuve*, Cabbage; *erdáde*, Inheritance; *trindade*, Trinity; *chaminé*, Chimney; *parede*, a Wall; *ſaúde*, Health; *rede*, a Net; *maré*, the

Tide; *chave*, a Key; *trempe*, a Trivet; *lebre*, a Hare; *febre*, Fever; *ſerpente*, a Serpent; *galé*, a Galley.

3. All Words ending in *i* are Maſculine; as *nebrí*, a Hawk; *biberiquí*, a Gimlet, *&c.*

4. Words ending in *o* are Maſculine; except ſome few, as *náo*, a Ship; *filhó*, a thin Cake, a Pancake; *eyro*, an Eel; *mó*, a Mill, *&c.*

5. All Words ending in *u* are Maſculine; as *bambú*, *perú*, *mú*, *groú*, a Cane, a Turkey, a Mule, a Crane.

6. All Words ending in *al*, *el*, *il*, *ol*, *ul*, are Maſculine.

7. All Words ending in *am* are Maſculine; as *pam*, *melam*, *roupam*, *trovam*, &c. except *mam* and *cozam*, and ſome Words derived from the *Latin*, denoting an Action, *viz. perſeyçám*, *exaggeraçám*, *compoſiçám*, *declaraçám*, *recreaçám*, *&c.*

8. Words in *em* are Maſculine; as *péntem*, *bodém*, *armazem*, *homem*, &c. except *órdem*, *ádem*, *virgem*; and Words ending in *agem*, which are Feminine, as *ervagem*, *imagem*, *viagem*, &c.

Note, The Word *Salvagem* is of both Genders; thus you ſay, *varám ſalvagem*, and *mulher ſalvagem*, a wild Man, a wild Woman.

9. All Words ending in *im*, *om*, *um*, are Maſculine, as *fim*, *eſpadím*, *tom*, *ſom*, *attúm*, *dobrúm*, &c.

10. Words in *ar*, *er*, *ir*, *or*, *ur*, are Maſculine; as *néctar*, *polegár*, *alvanér*, *prazer*, *ophir*, *mártyr*, *açór*, *caçadór*, *catur*; except *colhér*, *mulher*, *flor*, *dor*, *cor*.

11. All Words ending in *as* are Feminine, *e.g. ándas*, a Litter; *cálças*, Breeches; *álças*, a Fee or Advance in Rent; *cócegas*, tickling, *&c.* all which Words are writ in the Plural, but have a ſingular Signification.

12. All

12. All Words in *es*, *is*, *os*, *us*, whether Singular or Plural, are Maſculine, *v. g.* *alféres*, *dátiles*, *gis*, *calçóes*, *óculos*, an Enſign, Dates, Chalk, Breeches, Spectacles, *&c.*

13. Words in *az*, *ez*, *iz*, *oz*, *uz*, are Maſculine, except *paz*, *torquez*, *rez*, *tez*, *fez*, *vez*; *aboiz*, *perdiz*, *codorníz*, *raíz*, *matríz*; *noz*, *foz*, *voz*; *luz*, *cruz*, which are Feminine; the Word *apprendiz*, an Apprentice, is common to both Genders.

Note, Words ending in *i* are more or leſs as many Maſculines as Feminines; as *réy*, *páy*, *bóy*, Maſculine, and *máy*, *léy*, *gréy*, *&c.* Feminine.

Obſerve alſo, that the Epicene Gender, expreſſing both Sexes at once, is not wanting here; as *pulga*, *piolho*, *moſca*, *moſquito*, *minhoca*, &c.

The Nouns Adjective ending in *o* are of the Maſculine, and thoſe in *a* of the Feminine Gender; of the Maſculine Gender are alſo thoſe terminating in *u*; as *cru*, *crúa*, crude, raw; *nú*, *núa*, naked; and in *um*, as *hum*, *huma*; *comum*, *comúa*, &c.

Thoſe that terminate in *al*, *el*, *il*, *az*, *iz*, *oz*, *es*, and in *e*, are both of the Maſculine and Feminine Gender.

The Pronouns Adjective have three Genders, as we obſerved above, *viz.* Maſculine, Feminine, and Neuter; as *aquelle*, *aquella*, and *aquillo*, that Man or Woman, and that Thing; ſo *eſte*, *eſſe*, *eſta*, *eſſa*, *iſto*, *iſſo*, this, that; where note, the *e* in the Neuter is turn'd into *l*; as *aquelle*, *aquillo*; *eſte*, *iſto*; *eſſe*, *iſſo*.

But the Genders of the Pronouns appear plain enough in the Chapter of Pronouns, to which I refer the Reader.

CHAP. II.

Of the Definite and Indefinite Articles.

THERE are two Sorts of Articles, the Definite and Indefinite. The Definite marks the Gender, Number, and Caſe of the Noun it goes before; as *o homem, dó homem, ao homem, os homens, dós homens, aos homens; a mulher, dá mulher, à mulher; as mulheres, dás mulheres, às mulheres*; the Articles *o, dó, ao, os, dós, aos; a, dá, à, as, dás, às*, are here the Definite Articles, becauſe they point out the Maſculine or Feminine Gender, and the Singular or Plural Numbers.

The Definite Article has ſix Caſes, *viz. Nominative, Genitive, Dative, Accuſative, Vocative, Ablative*, and is declined as may be ſeen in the Beginning of this Grammar.

This Article is made uſe of, 1*ſt*, to ſpecify a particular Perſon; as *o Rey manda aos ſubditos*, the King commands the Subjects.

2. It is applicable to a whole Species; as *os homens ſam fortes*, Men are ſtrong; *o leam he feroz*, the Lion is fierce.

3. It is always put before God when the Word *Déos* has any Attribute join'd to it; as *o Déos de miſericordia*, the God of Mercy.

4. It is join'd with a Title to diſtinguiſh a Perſon; as *minha ſenhora a Princeſſa de, &c.* my Lady the Princeſs of, *&c.*

5. All Nouns Subſtantive common demand this Article; as *a caſa, a terra, a meſa, o livro, o vinho, o leyte, o fogo, a lúa, o ſol*, &c.

6. It is put before the Names of Countries, Rivers, and the Months; as *a França, o Portugal,*

gal, a Ingalaterra, a Tamiſa, o Tejo, o mes de Março, o mes de Junho, &c.

7. It is put before any Epithet; as *Judas o traidor,* Judas the Traytor.

8. The Superlative Degree of Adjectives requires alſo this Article; as *o principe Eugenio he o melhor general de todos,* Prince Eugene is the beſt General of all.

9. The Pronouns Poſſeſſive, *meu, teu, ſeu, noſſo* and *voſſo,* and the Relatives *hum, outro, qual,* require the Definite Article; as *elle he teu inimigo e o meu tambem,* he is thy Enemy and mine likewiſe; *o hum he mais ſabio dó que o outro,* one is more learned than the other; *meu livro o qual,* my Book which, *&c.* All the other Pronouns are join'd with the Indefinite Article.

☞ Obſerve here that the Indefinite Article is alſo join'd with *meu, teu, ſeu, noſſo, voſſo,* &c. when they ſtand between two Nouns Subſtantive, the latter of which ſtands in the Genitive Caſe; as *eſſa he caſa de meu irmão,* that is my Brother's Houſe; *em ſatisfação de ſeus pecados,* in Satisfaction of his Sins; *tu não conheces os livros de noſſo pay,* thou doſt not know the Books of our Father, (our Father's Books.)

10. This Article is join'd to the Infinitive of a Verb when it is taken in the Senſe of a Noun; as *o ler nam he difficultoſo,* reading is not difficult.

Obſerve, no Article is required when a Preposition is join'd with the Noun; as *ſervia com ardór,* to ſerve with Warmth; *obrar por dinheiro,* to work for Money.

The Indefinite Articles

Are *de* and *a*; *de* may be placed before the Maſculine as well as the Feminine Gender; as

hum arratel de pam, a Pound of Bread, and *hum arratel de carne*, a Pound of Fleſh.

This Article is alſo put before the Singular and Plural promiſcuouſly; as *hum arratel de ceréjas*, a Pound of Cherries; *hum numero de mulheres*, a Number of Women.

In the ſame Manner the Article *a* ſerves for the Maſculine and Feminine Gender, and the Singular and Plural Numbers; as *iſto nam ſe diz á meninos*, that is not ſaid to Children, and *iſto ſe ha de faſer á mulheres*, that muſt be be done to Women.

This Article has but four Caſes, *viz. Genitive*, *Dative*, *Accuſative*, and *Ablative*, *de*, *a*, *a*, & *de*.

☞ It is neceſſary here to obſerve, that the *Portugueſe* as well as the *Spaniards* join this Article to the Pronouns and Nouns of an indefinite Signification in the Accuſative Caſe, which Beginners are often perplexed at, eſpecially thoſe who know *French* or *Italian*, which two Languages admit of no Article in that Caſe. In the following Examples you'll find it join'd with the Accuſative Caſe, *viz. o reo com as mãos atadas fez a ſua confiſſão*, the Guilty with his Hands tied made his Confeſſion; *perguntey a eſtes homens*, I have aſked theſe Men; *perguntey a eſtas mulheres*, I have aſked thoſe Women; *perguntey a Joam que horas são*, I have aſked John what a Clock it is; *os Eſpanhoys combatéram a Napolis*, the Spaniards have fought againſt Napolis. (See Chap. V. of the *Articles*, *&c.*)

By the Help of theſe ſhort Rules I hope it will be eaſy to diſtinguiſh which of the two Sorts of Articles ſhould be apply'd, *viz.* When a particular Perſon or Thing is ſpoke of and pointed out, then the Definite Article takes place; but when the Subject ſpoke of is not pointed out, but left

in

in a general Senſe, then the Article Indefinite obtains; as when you ſay, *hum arratel de pam*, a Pound of Bread, you do not determine which or whoſe Bread it is, therefore the Indefinite Article is apply'd; but when you ſay *a Pound of my Father's Bread*, then you point out whoſe Bread it is, and cauſe the Word Bread to obtain a determined or definite Senſe; wherefore the Definite Article muſt be made uſe of, and you ſay *hum arratel dó pam de meu pay*, and not *hum arratel de pam de meu pay*.

To know the Caſes by the Particles and Prepoſitions, we muſt have regard to the Variety of Caſes which theſe Articles govern. The Article *a* ſerves ſometimes the Nominative, Dative, and Accuſative Caſe; as when we ſay *a caſa he fermoſa*, the Houſe is beautiful, which is the Nominative; and *ir à caſa*, to go home, which is the Accuſative; and *convem à caſa*, it is convenient for the Houſe, which is the Dative Caſe.

When the Particle *de* is join'd with the Pronouns *eſte*, *eſta*, *eſſa*, *iſto*, *iſſo*, as *déſte*, *déſta*, *díſto*, *díſſo*, it ſometimes ſtands in the Genitive, ſometimes in the Ablative Caſe; but the Particle *n*, as *néſte*, *néſta*, *níſto*, *néſſe*, *&c.* always denotes the Ablative. See the *Propoſitions*.

The Particles *lho* and *lha* are often join'd to Verbs to ſignify the Words *it*, *him*, and is a Contraction of the Article *o*, *a*, and the Pronoun *elle*; thus they ſay, *doulho de graça*, I give it him freely, and *doulha* (i. e. *couça*) *de graça*, I give it (*i. e.* that Thing) him freely; the Articles *o* and *a* ſtand here in the Accuſative.

The Particles *de* and *da*, and *dó*, ſometimes denote the Genitive and ſometimes the Ablative Caſe, *e. g. parte dá caſa*, Part of the Houſe, being the Genitive; and *venho de* or *dá caſa de Pedro*, I come from *Peter*'s Houſe, which is the Abla-

tive; as alſo *venho dó Templo*, I come from the Church, Ablative.

The Particle or Prepoſition *pera* is ſometimes related to the Accuſative, and ſometimes to the Dative Caſe, *v. g. vou pera caſa*, I go home, Accuſative; and *pera minha caſa baſta iſto*, this is ſufficient for my Houſe, which is the Dative.

The Particles *em*, *ná*, *nó*, *com*, *ſem*, always denote the Ablative Caſe in both Numbers, *v. g. eſtou em caſa*, or *ná caſa de Pedro*, I am in the Houſe of Peter; *eſtóu com caſa*, *& com armaçam ou ſem caſa*, *ſem armaçam de Pedro*, I am with or without the Houſe or Furniture of Peter, Ablative.

The Particle *ao* ſometimes ſerves the Dative, and ſometimes the Accuſative Caſe, *e.g.* Dative, *convém ao Templo eſtar ornado*, it is convenient that a Church be adorned; Accuſative, *vóu ao Templo de*, &c. I go to the Church of, *&c. Vid.* the Chapter of the *Prepoſitions*.

CHAP. III.

Of the Uſe and Concordance of Nouns.

AS Nouns are reckon'd the firſt in the Parts of Speech, therefore I ſhall begin with them, and explain what is neceſſary to know concerning them.

It is a general Rule, both in the *Portugueſe* as well as in the *Latin*, that the Noun Adjective muſt ever agree with the Subſtantive in Gender, Number and Caſe, without Exception; as *hum bom livro*, a good Book; *huma mulher má*, a bad Wife or Woman; *homens diſcretos*, diſcreet Men.* And here obſerve, the Noun Adjective is commonly placed after the Noun Subſtantive.

Remarks

* See p. 110, 111.

Remarks on the Compariſons of Adjectives.

The Force of the Compariſon lies often in the Particle *que*, as indeed it doth in the *Latin*, and the Languages derived from it; the *Latin* has *quam*, the *Italian di*, the *Spaniſh que*, the *Portugueſe que*, the *French que*, the *Engliſh than*. As for Example, *o vinho he melhor que a cerveja*, Wine is better *than* Beer; *a peſte he peór que a ſarna*, the Plague is worſe *than* the Itch.

You alſo make Compariſons with the Adverbs *máis* and *ménos*; as *meu cavallo he mais alto que o teu*, my Horſe is higher than yours (thine.)

The Superlative is often formed, as in *Latin*, by adding *iſſimus*; as *excellens*, *excellentiſſimus*, *Lat.* So the *Portugueſe* ſay *excellentiſſimo*, *generoſiſſimo*, *&c.* but it is oftener expreſs'd by putting the Article *o* and *a* before the Sign of the Comparative Degree; as *o Rey d' Ingalaterra he hum principe o mais poderoſo*, *&c.* the King of England is the moſt powerful Prince, *&c. eſta Senhora he a mais bella mulher dó mundo*, this Lady is the fineſt Woman in the World. (*vid. p.* 29.)

Obſervations on the Nouns of Numbers.

All Numbers are diſtributed into four Claſſes; the firſt is what we call Cardinal or Principal; as *hum*, *dous*, *tres*, *quatro*, *dez*, *vinte*, *trinta*, *quarenta*, *cincoenta*, *cem*, *mil*, *&c.* one, two, three, four, ten, twenty, thirty, forty, fifty, hundred, a thouſand.

Thoſe of the ſecond Order are called Ordinals; as *primeiro*, *ſegundo*, *tercéiro*, *quarto*, *quinto*, *ſexto*, *decimo*, *vintéino*, *centeſimo*, *miléſimo*, *&c.* the firſt, the ſecond, the third, the fourth, the fifth, the ſixth, the tenth, the twentieth, the hundredth, the thouſandth, *&c.*

The

The third Claſs contains the Collectives; as *huma duzia, huma vintéina, &c.* a Dozen, a Score.

The fourth Claſs are Numbers which mark an Augmentation; as *o dobro*, the Double, *&c.*

Though all theſe Nouns of Numbers are Adjectives in their Nature, yet there are ſome which don't vary their Termination, that is to ſay, from one, *hum, huma*, and in the Plural *huns, humas*, ſome; and *dous, duas*, two, to *duzentos, duzentas*, two hundred; *trecentos, trecentas*, three hundred, *&c.* which again have the Feminine Termination; as *duzentos homens, & duzentas mulheres*, two hundred Men and two hundred Women.

CHAP. IV.

Of the Pronouns.

THE Pronouns having the ſecond Place allotted them in the Parts of Speech in all Grammars, I ſhall treat of them next after the Noun, and firſt conſider the *Pronoun Perſonal*, of which there are three Sorts, *viz.* of the firſt, ſecond, and third Perſon.

☞Some Grammarians diſtinguiſh the Pronouns into Subſtantives and Adjectives. The Pronouns Subſtantive are *eu* I, *tu* thou, and *ſi* himſelf, and all the reſt they call Adjectives; but for Method's ſake we ſhall treat of them in the following Order.

The Pronoun Perſonal of the firſt Perſon *eu* I, has no determined Gender, and is joined to either the Maſculine or Feminine, and declined with the indefinite Article, as may be ſeen in the Declenſions. There is but one Pro-

noun of the firſt Perſon, and it always agrees with the Verb in Number and Perſon; as *eu ſou*, I am; *nôs ſomos*, we are; and it is ſometimes ſuppreſs'd by Way of Elegancy, and in Imitation of the *Latin*; as *amo a eſſas raparigas*, I love thoſe Girls; *leyo a méos livros*, I read my Books; tho' in *Engliſh* it cannot be left out.

The Pronoun *me* me, is joined with the Particles *o* and *a* in the following Manner; *mó* and *má* in the Singular, and *mós* and *más* in the Plural Number are made uſe of, *v. g. muy caro vendeomo*, i. e. *livro*, he ſold it me very dear, *i. e.* the Book; *muy cara vendeoma*, i. e. *couſa*, he ſold it me very dear, *i. e.* the Thing; *vendeomos muy caros*, i. e. *os livros*, he ſold 'em me very dear, *i. e.* the Books; *vendeomas muy caras*, i. e. *as ſedas*, he ſold 'em me very dear, *i. e.* the Silks.

The Rules given for the firſt Perſon alſo ſerve for the ſecond, without any Exception.

The Pronun *tu* is alſo with the Article *o* and *a*, *os* and *as*, contracted into *to*, *ta*, *tôs*, *tás*, and joined to the End of Verbs, which makes this Language very conciſe and expreſſive; thus they ſay, *douto de graça*, i. e. *o livro*, I give it thee freely, *i. e.* the Book; for *doute o*, &c. *douta de graça*, i. e. *a ſeda*, I give it thee freely, *i. e.* the Silk; for *doute a*. So in the Plural Maſculine, *doutós de graça*, i. e. *os livros*, I give 'em you freely, *i. e.* the Books, for *doute os*; and *doutás de graça*, i. e. *as ſedas*, I give 'em you freely, *i. e.* the Silks, for *doute as*.

The Plural *vôs* is alſo often joined to *o*, *a*, *os*, and *as*, by changing the Letter into an *l*. Example, *eu vôla dou*, I give it you, for *eu vôs a dou*; and *eu vólas dou*, I give them you, for *eu vôs as dou*. Likewiſe the Infinitive of Verbs is joined with *o*, *os*, *a* and *as*, by changing the *r* into *l* as *quero vélo* I will ſee him or it, for *quero ver o*; and *quero*

vélos

vêlos, I will ſee them, for *quero ver os*. See the Chapter of the Verb.

The Pronoun of the third Perſon, *ſi* or *ſe* himſelf, which is the common Gender, both Maſculine and Feminine, and has no Plural Number, is declined with the indefinite Article, as may be ſeen in the Beginning of this Grammar.

Elle is commonly expreſs'd by the Particle *lhe* in the Singular, and *lhes* in the Plural, and the Dative Caſe is comprehended therein; as *á elle* and *á elles*; as *nam ſe lhe dá dêſſo*, and *nam ſe lhe da a elle dîſſo*, he cares not for it. So in the Plural *nam ſe lhes da díſſo*, or *nam ſe lhes dá á elles d'iſſo*, they care not for it, or they value it not. (See *p.* 33)

Pronouns Poſſeſſive.

There are three Pronouns poſſeſſive; as *meu teu, ſeu*, mine, thine, his, in Singular; *meus, teus, ſeus*, in Plural. They are joined with a Noun Subſtantive both in Singular and Plural, and have two Genders, *viz.* Maſculine and Feminine; thus *meu* mine, is *minha* in Feminine; *teu, tua, Vid.* the Declenſion of the Pronouns; *meu livro*, my Book; *minha caſa*, my Houſe; *meu olho*, my Eye; *minhas palavras*, my Words, *&c.*

Theſe Pronouns have the Article before them when the Conjunction Copulative comes between, *e. g. teu irmão e o meu*, thy Brother and mine, *minha irmãa e a ſua*, my Siſter and his; *teus cavallos e os meus*, thy Horſes and mine; *tuas caſas e as minhas*, thy Houſes and mine.

Pronouns Demonſtrative.

Such are *elle, ella, eſte, eſſe, aquelle*; the Words *elle, ella*, anſwer the *Engliſh he* and *ſhe*; *eſte* is uſed when

when we ſay in *Engliſh this*; *Eſſa* anſwers the *Engliſh that*; and *aquelle that there* or *yonder*, which is almoſt out of ſight, is remote, or not in ſight at all; *e. g. eſte homem he muy honrado*, this is a Man of Honour; *eſſa mulher he fermoſa*, that Woman is handſome; and *fuy dez annos em aquella cidade*, I have been ten Years in that City.

Pronouns Interrogative.

Que, *quem*, *qual*, *cujo*, and *cuja*. The Pronoun *que* is indeclinable; as *qué homem he eſte?* what Man is that? *qué mulheres ſam eſſas?* what Women are thoſe? When *que* is an Interrogagative it ought to be writ with an Accent, otherwiſe not.

When you ſpeak of inanimate Things you may uſe indifferently the Word *qual*, or *quem*; as *qual déſtes retratos he o melhor?* which of theſe Pictures is the beſt? or *quem déſtes retratos*, *&c.* But when you ſpeak of Things having Life you muſt make uſe of *quem* only, except you put the Article before *qual*, *e. g. quem dás duas mulheres he a mais fermoſa?* which of the two Women is the handſomeſt? or *a qual dás*, *&c.* which however is not ſo polite a Way of Expreſſion as the firſt.

Pronouns Relative. See the Chapter of *Pronouns*.

Pronouns Improper.

Theſe Pronouns are divided into two Claſſes; the firſt is of Perſonals, the other Mix'd, which has Regard to both Perſons and Things.

The Perſonal only is *quem*, who and which.

The Mix'd are *nehum*, *cadahum*, *outro*, *cada*, *certo*, *meſmo*, *algum*, *todo*, *tal*, *qualquer*, noboby, every

every one, another, every, a certain, the ſame, ſomebody, every, ſuch, which, or whoſoever.

Some of theſe Pronouns have but one only Termination; as *quem*, *cada*, *qualquer*, *tal*, which are of the Maſculine and Feminine Gender both; *quem* and *cada* are indeclinable, but *qual* is in the plural *quays*, and *tal tays*; thus you ſay *quayſqueres homens*, *ou quayſqueres mulheres*. All the others have a Maſculine and Feminine Termination, and are declinable; as *nenhum*, *nenhuma*, *nenhums*, *nenhumas*, *cadahum*, *cadahuma*, *cadahuns*, *cadahumas*; *outro*, *outra*, *outros*, *outras*; *certo*, *certa*, *certos*, *certas*, &c.

One of them is only negative, as *nenhum*, *nenhuma*; all the reſt are Affirmatives.

Note, The Pronouns *meu*, *teu*, *ſeu*, *noſſo*, *voſſo*, *hum*, *outro*, and *qual*, mine, thine, his, ours, yours, one (or a) another, or which, are declined with the Definite; but all the reſt with the Indefinite Article.

CHAP. V.

Of the Verbs.

TO know how to conjugate the Verbs, and to apply them well, is a very material Thing to ſpeak a Language in Perfection. The Conjugations have been ſhewn above, and here we ſhall compile a few Rules how they are to be applied in their proper Moods, and Tenſes, Numbers, and Perſons.

All the Tenſes of Verbs (except the Infinitive) ſhould have before them a Nominative, either expreſs'd or underſtood, with which they ſhould agree in Number and Perſon.

Expreſs'd; as *eu amo* I love; *tu ouves*, thou heareſt; *Pedro canta*, *Peter* ſings.

Under-

Underſtood; as *amo* I love; *ouvimos*, we hear; *cantam*, they ſing.

☞ The *Portugueſe* as well as *Spaniards*, when they ſpeak to a Perſon whom they reſpect, they put the Verb in the third Perſon Singular; as *V M tem rezão*, you are in the right (your Worſhip is in the right.) When they ſpeak to one whom they have leſs Regard for, they ſay, *Voſſé*, (inſtead of *Voſſa mercé*) *tem rezão*. When they would expreſs ſtill leſs Regard, they ſpeak in the ſecond Perſon Plural, without *V M*, or *Voſſé*, and ſay *tendes rezão*, you are in the right, or you have Reaſon; and the moſt familiar Way of all, as from a Father to a Son, or a Maſter to his Servant, is when they ſpeak in the ſecond Perſon Singular, *tems rezão*, thou haſt right (Reaſon)

The Verb Active governs the Accuſative; as *amo a meu irmão*, I love my Brother; *digo a verdade* I ſay the Truth.

The Verb Paſſive is preceded by a Nominative, and follow'd by an Ablative Caſe; as *os juezes ſão amados dós Principes*, Judges are loved by Princes; *os juezes* ſtanding in the Nominative, and *dós principes* in the Ablative Caſe.

When the Particle *to* follows a Verb the *Portugueſe* as well as the *Engliſh* put the next following Noun in the Dative Caſe; as *dóu a minha irmãa*, I give to my Siſter; *dezia ao principe*, he ſaid to the Prince, which has been ſufficiently explain'd, *p.* 15.

The Conjunctions which are between two Verbs oblige the laſt of the two Verbs to be of the ſame Number, Perſon, and Tenſe with the firſt: Example, the King wills and commands, *o Rey quer e manda*, he ſings and dances very well, *elle canta*

canta e danſa muito bem; we ſaw and heard, *vimos e ouvimos*, *&c.*

Of the Moods.

The Indicative has properly no Conjunction belonging to it, tho' ſometimes the following are join'd with it, *viz. que*, *ſe*, *quando*, and *como*, e. g. *o Senhor A. B. eſcreve, que téndes ſeu livro*, Mr. A. B. writes that you have his Book; *faz iſſo ſe me amas*, do that if you love me? *quando queréys vir*, when will you come? *como tu amas a elles, elles te amarám*, as thou loveſt them they will love thee.

The Imperative Mood

Requires neither Prepoſition nor Conjunction, except only in the third Perſon Singular and Plural, when it is preceded by another Verb, otherwiſe not; as *manda que fallem*, order them to ſpeak.

Note, It is a Point of Controverſy among the Grammarians whether there is any Difference of Tenſes in the Imperative Mood. Some of the *Portugueſe* Grammars have two Tenſes, *viz.* the Preſent and Future, whereas in Reality no Command can regard any other than a Future; for the Action muſt be ſubſequent to the Command. The ſecond, which they call the Future, is entirely borrow'd from the Future of the Indicative Mood, only with this Alteration, that no firſt Perſon is allowed in the Singular, and the Pronoun is put after the Verb. The *Spaniards* have but one Tenſe in the Imperative, which they call Future, and correſponds with the firſt Tenſe of our Imperative; and indeed if two Tenſes are to be allowed, the only Difference I can perceive is, that what is commanded by the firſt is to be executed immediately, but the ſecond at a greater, and not a limited, Diſtance of Time; for which

Reaſon

Reaſon I, not being willing to reject the ſecond entirely, have kept them, and call'd one the firſt, and the other the ſecond Tenſe.

The Optative and Conjunctive

Require ſome Particle before each Tenſe, tho' the Preſent is ſometimes uſed without any; as *praça a Deos*, pleaſe God; *Deos o faſſa*, God grant it. When no Certainty of Action is mark'd, and the Particle *que* is join'd with the Verb, it muſt always be put in the Optative; as *ha meſter que tenha eu*, 'tis neceſſary I ſhould have. The Conjunctive is very elegantly uſed on ſeveral Occaſions, and expreſs'd by the Particle *como*; as *cómo voſſo páy vos ama tanto, ſente múyto voſſa auſência*, as your Father loves you ſo much, he is much troubled at your Abſence; *como voſſo páy vos amava, amóu, amára tanto, &c.* and in ſhort the Particle *como* prefix'd to any of the Tenſes of the Indicative expreſſes the Conjunctive Mood.

The *Portugueſe* alſo not inelegantly make uſe of the Gerund to expreſs the Conjunctive Mood, *e. g. nam vôs coréys de fazer tays couſas, ſendo nobre*, for *como ſoys nobre*, don't you bluſh (colour) to do ſuch Things, being a Perſon of Quality; *fugíys, fugíſtes de voſſo pay amando vôs elle tanto*, did you, have you run away from your Father, he loving you ſo well?

The Conjunctive alſo is very elegantly (nay more elegantly than by the Particle *como*, or the Gerund) expreſs'd by the Particles *poys* and *depóys*, v. g. *nam me eſpanto fallardes tam audaſmente, poys ſoys ſoldado*, I wonder not that thou talkeſt ſo boldly ſince thou art a Soldier; *morréo ao priméiro de Setembro depóys de ſer Réy ſete annos, óu avendo ſete annos que tinha eſtado Rey*, he died the Seventh of September, after he had been King ſe-

ven Years, or it being ſeven Years that he had been King.

The Optative is alſo join'd with the Particles *poſto que, ſe, que, quenám, peraque, nám, aindaque, comtantoque,* altho', if, that, that not, why, why not, altho', whilſt or as long as; as, *rogo te que ſejas liberal,* I deſire thee to be liberal; *pera que ſejas liberal, &c.*

All Verbs which ſignify *Will, Command, Doubt, Deſire, Admiration, Supplication,* or *Pretenſion,* when follow'd by the Conjunction *que,* govern the Subjunctive Mood; as *rogolhe que venha pera minha caſa,* I deſire him to come to my Houſe; *deſejo múito que proſpere em ſeus negocios,* I deſire very much that he may proſper in his Buſineſs; *quera Deos (praça a Deos) que ſeja,* God grant he may be.

The Conjunction *aindaque,* altho', always demands the Subjunctive Mood; as, *aindaque ſeja tempo não quero hir ainda,* altho' it be Time, I do not care to go yet; *aindaque elle o diga não o creyo,* altho' he ſays it, I do not believe it.

The Infinitive

Has an indeterminate Signification, and can be employ'd neither abſolutely nor determinately, except in ſpeaking in general, *e. g. podér vivér, e ſaber viver, he a verdadéyra filoſofia,* to be able to live, and to know to live is the true Philoſophy. Sometimes the Infinitive is elegantly, in Imitation of the *Latin,* made a Subſtantive, and has the Article *o* prefix'd to it; as *o viver e o morrér ſam as cóuſas mais certas que témos,* to live and to die are the moſt certain Things we have; and in this Manner the Particles or Prepoſitions *nó* and *dó* are often joined with it; as *nó correr nembum o excede,* in Running no one exceeds him; *não ſe falla do lér agora,* we don't ſpeak now of Reading.

They

They alſo very elegantly make uſe of this Mood with the Particle *que*, when we place the Words ſomething or nothing before the Infinitive in *Engliſh*; as *tenho que fazer*, I have ſomething to do, *não tenho que eſcrevér*, I have nothing to write.

The Pronouns *me*, *te*, *ſe* are often joined with the Infinitive Mood, *v. g. aſſanharſe*, to be exaſperated; *entreterſe*, to entertain one's ſelf.

When two Verbs are put together, the ſecond commonly is in the Infinitive; as *devo amar*, I muſt love; *quéro vér*, I deſire to ſee.

Sometimes the Particles *por*, *ſem*, *á*, *de*, *pera*, and *em* precede the Infinitive; as *por ſer virtuoſo me perſiguem os máos*, for being virtuous, or becauſe I am virtuous, the Wicked perſecute me; *ſem ſer letrado dóu a minha opinião*, without being a Lawyer, I give my Opinion; *á fallar a verdade*, to ſpeak the Truth, *&c. ſey que avéys de ſer homem douto*, I know you are to be a learned Man; *prometo de ſer fiel*, *jurava de ſer fiel*, I promiſe to be faithful, he ſwore to be faithful.

When the Verb is in the Infinitive Mood and Future Tenſe, then the auxiliary Verb *ey* is added; as, *amaturus ſum illum*, Latin, *amalo ey*; *laudaturus ſum illum*, Latin, *ouvilo ey*, I will love him, I will praiſe him; *accordarlhe ey*, I will wake him; *agaſtarſe ha*, he will be angry.

When the Particles *lo*, *la*, *los*, *las*, him, it, her, and them are joined with the Infinitive, the Verb loſes the Letter *r*; as *quero louválo*, *louvála*, *louvalos*, *louvalas*, I will praiſe him and praiſe it, praiſe her, praiſe them; *quero ouvilo*, *ouvila*, I will hear him or it, hear her. But when the Particles *lhe* and *lhes* ſtand inſtead of the foremention'd Diminutives, the Letter *r* remains in its Place; as, *quero agradecerlhe*, *e agradecerlhes*, I will thank him, her, and thank them; *quero fallarlhe*, *fallarlhes*, I will ſpeak to him, her, ſpeak to them.

When they uſe the Infinitive to accompany a third Perſon in the Plural, it is common with the *Portugueſe* to add *em*, and to make uſe of *ſer*, *ſerem*, *amar*, *amarem*. Thus they ſay, *fico queixoſo da minha deſdita de faltarem as occaſiõens de deſempemharme*, I remain complaining of my Misfortune to want Opportunities (that Opportunities are wanting) to acquit myſelf; *nã̃o quero os libros por ſerem elles prohibidos*, I don't care for the Books becauſe they are prohibited: *nã̃o quiz accompanhallos por amarem elles a beber tanto*, I did not care to accompany them becauſe they love to drink ſo much, *&c.*

Remarks on the Tenſes.

To avoid Repetition, I refer the Reader to what has been ſaid in the Beginning of this Grammar on this Head.

Since the Preterperfects definite and indefinite are often confounded one with the other, we'll lay down here ſome Rules to diſtinguiſh 'em by. The Preterperfect definite, or ſecond, is employ'd when we ſpeak of a Time perfectly paſt; and the indefinite or firſt when the Time is not totally, but paſt in part, and in part preſent or paſſing: For example, in ſpeaking of the laſt Year, you may not ſay *tenho eſcrito huma carta nó anno paſſado*, I have wrote a Letter laſt Year, becauſe the Time or Year is entirely paſt. But to ſpeak properly, we muſt ſay *eſcrevi huma carta nó anno paſſado*, I wrote a Letter laſt Year, which Difference is alſo obſerv'd in the *Engliſh* Tongue; for it would be as improper in *Engliſh* to ſay *I have wrote a Letter laſt Year*, for *I wrote a Letter laſt Year*, as it is ſhocking to a nice Ear in the *Portugueſe* to ſay *tenho eſcrito*, &c. In ſpeaking of the preſent Year, which being but in part paſt, it won't be allow'd me to ſay *compuſey hum livro eſte anno*,

I compoſed a Book this Year; but I muſt ſay *tenho compoſto hum livro eſte anno*, I have compoſed a Book this Year, which is alſo more proper in *Engliſh*. This Diſtinction may be acquired by the Ear, but as this is not done but by long Converſation with thoſe who ſpeak the Language in Perfection, I would adviſe the Beginner not to truſt to Practice only in this Article, but to fix well theſe Remarks in his Mind, ſince otherwiſe he may chance to get an ill Habit of confounding theſe two Tenſes, which afterwards is not eaſily diſcarded.

The Preterpluperfect and the two Futures are eaſily diſtinguiſh'd by what we have ſaid in the Beginning of this Grammar.

Of the Uncertain Tenſe.

This Tenſe is by the Ignorant often put for the Preterimperfect of the Optative Mood. Its Termination is in *ria*, and ought not tō be uſed indifferently for the Preterimperfect but when we ſpeak either conditionally (but then the Condition muſt follow) or with ſome Doubt; but it can never take *ſe*, if, and *aindaque*, altho', before or after it, if you'll ſpeak correctly; and the Preterimperfect muſt always be preceded by *ſe*, if, and *aindaque*. By the following Examples you'll perceive how much the Senſe of a Period is alter'd by the Difference of theſe Tenſes. To begin with the Uncertain, *daria á Voſſa merce dez cruzados ſe fora homem honrado*, I would give you ten Cruſadoes were he an honeſt Man; *fallaria a verdade ſe nam recedra o caſtigo*, I would or ſhould ſpeak the Truth did I not fear the Puniſhment; and it would be falſe and contrary to the Idiom of the Language to ſay *daſſe* or *dara dez dobroens*, and *fallara* ou *fallaſſe a verdade*, &c. Example of the

Preterimperfect, *aindaque fallara ou fallaſſe a verdade, nemhum me créra*, tho' I ſhould ſpeak the Truth, no Body will believe me. *Note*, When they uſe the Imperfect inſtead of the Uncertain Tenſe, it is the Termination in *ara*, and not that in *aſſe*.

Of the Verb Paſſive.

The Paſſive Verb or Voice, as we have ſaid at the Conjugations, is made by conjugating the Verbs *ſou* and *eſtou* with the Participle of the paſt Tenſe; but the *Portugueſe* (as well as the *Spaniards*) commonly expreſs the Paſſive Voice by joining the Pronoun *ſe* with the Verb Active in the following Manner. Example,

Pello que o Senhor tem dito ſe vé o contrario, for *he ou eſta viſto o contrario*, by what this Gentleman has ſaid, the contrary *ſees itſelf*, for *the contrary is ſeen or appears*.

As circumſtantias ſe contam, e ſe deve fazer poco caſo de muitas dellas pello odio que ſe tem a eſta gente, Circumſtances count themſelves, (are counted) and it muſt make itſelf little in Caſe of (and little Regard ought to be had to) many of them, (by the Hatred that holds itſelf to this People,) or by reaſon of their Hatred towards this People; *que ſe diz de novo?* What News ſays itſelf, or is ſaid? *que ſe eſcreve de novo de Paris?* what News writes itſelf from Paris, or is wrote from Paris?

The Paſſive Voice is alſo ſometimes expreſs'd by the third Perſon in Plural of the Active Verb. Example, *dizem (ſe diz) que avera guerra*, they ſay (it is ſaid) there will be a War; *eſcrevem (ſe eſcreve) de Paris que o Rey eſtá com ſaude*, they write (it is wrote) from Paris that the King is in Health, *&c.*

Of the Gerunds.

The Gerunds in this Language end in *do*; as *amando*, *léndo*, *&c.* in loving, in reading, *&c.* and govern the ſame Caſes as the Verbs of which they are Part, tho' ſome compoſe Gerunds by putting the Particles *em*, *pera* and *de*, with the Infinitive Preſent; as *em dar*, *pera dar*, *de dar*, in giving, of giving; as *eſcrevéndo eſſa carta*, in writing that Letter; *fallando á meu pay*, ſpeaking to my Father; by which it appears they govern the ſame Caſes as the Verbs they are derived from; for *carta* ſtands here in the Accuſative, and *a meu pay*, in the Dative.

The Gerunds have neither Tenſe, Number, or Perſons, but agree with all. Example of the Preſent, *trabalhándo bem nam ha que temer*, in working well he need fear no Body; of the Perfect, *foy feito eſcrevendo elle a carta*, it was done when he wrote the Letter. Example for the Number and Perſon, *eu o veréy*, *vôs o veréys*, *elle os vera paſſando polla rúa*, I ſhall ſee him, you ſhall ſee him, he ſhall ſee them paſſing thro' the Street.

Sometimes two Gerunds are join'd together; as *eſtando eſcrevendo eſta carta recebí a voſſa*, whilſt I was writing this Letter I received yours; *morréo de repente*, *eſtando diſputando dá morte*, he died ſuddenly whilſt he was diſputing about Death.

The Verb and Gerund are alſo ſometimes Companions; as *eſpirôu avendo quatro annos intéiros que jazía entrevado*, he died (expired) having lain four whole Years bedridden.

CHAP. VI.

Of the Participles.

THE Participles are of three Sorts, *viz.* of the *Paſt*, *Preſent*, and *Future Tenſe*; as *amado*, beloved; *amante*, *(o que ama)* loving, or he that loves, and *o que tem de amar*, he that ſhall or will, or is to love.

When that of the Paſt Tenſe is compoſed with the Verb *ſer*, to be, then the Participle ought to agree with the foregoing Noun Subſtantive in Gender and Number. Example, the Captain is beloved, *o capitam he amado*; Virtue is eſteemed, *a virtude he eſtimado*; the Lazy will be blamed, *os preguiçoſos ſeram culpados*; thoſe Houſes will be ſold, *eſſas caſas ſeram vendidas.*

The Participle of the Paſt Tenſe, ſtrictly taken, infers a Paſſive Signification; as *lido*, read, *amado*, loved, *ouvido*, heard; but the *Portugueſe* (and *Spaniards)* often uſe it alſo in the Active Senſe; as *como vôs tenho eſcrita muitas cartas, e não ey recebido nenhuma repoſta*, as I have wrote you many Letters, and have not received any Anſwer.

☞ The *Spaniards* and *Portugueſe* very elegantly make uſe of this Participle with the Ablative abſolute, to imitate their Mother Tongue, the *Latin*; thus they ſay *acabada a céa ſe foy á dormir*, Supper being ended, he went to ſleep, *(finita cæna ivit cubitum)*; *tirada a cauſa ceſſa o effeito*, the Cauſe being taken away, the Effect ceaſes *(ablata cauſa ceſſat effectus)*; *partido voſſo pay chegóu voſſa irmãa*, when your Father was departed, your Siſter arrived; in this Caſe the Gerunds *ſendo* and *avendo* are underſtood; as *a çea ſenda acabada, ſe foy a dormir, a cauſa ſendo,*

ſendo, tirada ceſſa o effeito; o voſſo pay ſendo partido chegou voſſa irmãa.

The Participles of the Preſent Tenſe, *amante*, loving, *ouvente*, hearing, *&c.* are of the common Gender, and are declined like Nouns Adjective, and muſt agree with the Noun or Pronoun they are joined with in Number and Caſe; as, *os ouvintes (homens) & as ouvintes (mulheres) iſto por certo não dizem, que tendes rezão*, theſe (Men or Women) who are hearing it, for certain do not ſay that you have right; but the *Portugueſe* commonly expreſs this Participle by the Indicative Preſent, join'd with the Particles *o* or *a*, which they decline, and the Pronoun *que*. Example, *os (homens) & as (mulheres) que ouvem iſto, por certo, não dizem que tendes rezão*, the (Men and Women) which hear that, for certain, do not ſay that you have right.

The Participle of the Future Tenſe is of two Voices, *viz.* the Active and Paſſive. That of the Active *o que tem de amar, ler, ouvir*, he that is to love, read, or hear, is likewiſe adapted to the Gender and Number of the Noun it is join'd with, by declining the Article *o* and *a*, and putting the Verb *tenho* in the Number and Perſon agreeable thereunto; as *os homens & as mulheres que tem de amar, ler, ouvir*, the Men or Women that are to love.

The Participle of the Future Tenſe in the Paſſive Voice is *o & a que ha ou tem de ſer amado, amada; os & as que ham ou tem de ſer amados, amadas*, he or ſhe that is to be loved; they (both Maſculine and Feminine) that are to be loved: Which is alſo regulated by the Article and Verb in the Maſculine Gender or Plural Number, as the Noun demands in it; Example, *o livro que ha de ſer eſcrito*, the Book that is to be writ; *as cartas*

que

que ham de ſer lidas, the Letters that are to be read.

CHAP. VII.

Of the Adverbs.

THE Grammarians differ about theſe Words, *dêntro*, *fora*, *emcîma*, *embaixo*, *antes*, and *diante*, ſome putting them in the Rank of Adverbs, and others placing them among the Prepoſitions; and they are both Adverbs and Prepoſitions. When they are follow'd by nothing they are Adverbs; as *eſta dentro*, he is within; *vay fora*, he goes out or abroad; *eſta encima*, he is on the Top; *eſta debaixo*, he is below; *vay antes*, he goes before; *vay diante*, he goes before, becauſe they here maintain the Character of Adverbs, which is, they are join'd with Verbs to declare or explain the Manner of their Signification. They are Prepoſitions when they are follow'd by ſome Caſe of a Noun; as *eſta dentro ná caſa*, he is in the Houſe; *eſta fora da caſa*, he is out of the Houſe, *&c.*

The Adverb is always put before the Adjective and Participle, but follows the Verb; as *eſte hómem he muito barbaro*; this Man is very barbarous; *eſtóu bem perſuadido*, I am well perſuaded.

The Adverbs in their Order are as follow.

Adverbs of Time.

Agora, *now.*
Ja, *already.*
Ja entám, *then already.*
Jamáys, *never.*
Jagora, *juſt now.*
Tarde, *late.*
Sedo, *ſoon, early.*
Entám, entonces, *then.*
Sempre, *ever.*
Nunca, *never.*
Ao preſente, *at preſent.*
Algumahóra, *ſometimes.*
Aínda, *yet.*
Anteſque, *before.*
Supitamente, *ſuddenly.*

Cada

Cada dia, *daily.*
Hoje, *to-day.*
Amenhãm, *to-morrow.*
Depóis, *afterwards.*
Ontem, *yeſterday.*
Deſde, *ſince then.*
Dáqui adiante, *hence-forward.*
Entretanto, *mean while.*

Adverbs of Place.

Aqui, *here.*
Allí, *there.*
Acolá, *in this or that Place.*
Daquí, *hence.*
Pera alli, *hither.*
Atelí, *hitherto.*
Cá, *hither.*
La onde, *there, where.*
Onde, *where.*
Ondequer, *wherever.*
Dentro, *within.*
Fora, *without.*
Alem, *on the other Side.*
Acima, *above.*
Debáixo, *below.*

Adverbs of Quantity.

Múyto, *much.*
Póuco, *little.*
Aſſas, baſtantemente, *enough.*
Demaſiado, *too much.*
Abundantemente, *abundantly.*
Muyto máis, *much more.*
Pouco máis, *a little more.*
Pouco mais ou menos, *little more or leſs.*

Adverbs of Quality.

Prudenteménte, *prudently.*
Atrevidaménte, *boldly.*
Elegantemente, *elegantly*
Adréde, *dextrouſly.*
Suavamente, *ſweetly.*
Diſcretamente, *diſcreetly*
Engenhoſamente, *ingeniouſly.*
Galantemente, *gallantly.*
Legeyramente, *neatly.*
Gentilmente, *genteely.*
Facilmente, *eaſily.*

Adverbs of Number.

As vezes, *ſometimes.*
Vez, vézes, *Time, Times.*
Muitas vézes, *oftentimes.*
Huma vez, *once.*
Quatro vézes, *four times.*
Cem mil vézes, *hundred thouſand times.*

Adverbs Negative.

Nam, *not.*
Ainda nam, *not yet.*
Nomáys, *no more.*
Nãada, *nothing.*
Tam póuco, *neither.*
Nunca, jamais, *never.*
Reparay vos, *look ye.*

Adverbs

Adverbs demonſtrating.

Eisaqui, *behold.*
Além díſto, *moreover, beſides.*
Finalmente, *finally.*
Em fin, *at laſt.*
Dedeſque, *ſince.*
Eylo aqui, *look here.*

Adverbs of Doubt.

Por ventura, *perhaps.*
A caſo, *perchance.*

Adverbs Interrogatory.

Como, *how.*
Por que rezám, *wherefore.*
A que propoſito, *to what Purpoſe.*
Para que, *why.*
Que, *what.*

Adverbs of Uniting.

Apar, juntamente, *together.*
Entreambos, *between both.*

Adverbs of Separation.

Aparte, *ſingly.*
Seperadamente, *ſeparately.*
Eſpalhadamente, *ſcatteringly.*
Apartadamente, *diſtinctly.*

Adverbs of Intention.

Fortiſſimamente, *ſtrongly.*
Intenſiſſimamente, *moſt intenſely.*
Com grande cuydado, *moſt ſtudiouſly.*

Adverbs of Remitting.

Póuco á póuco, *little by little.*
Paſſo á paſſo, *ſtep by ſtep.*
Preguiſoſamente, *idly.*
Froxamente, *remiſly.*

Adverbs of Haſtening.

Depreſſa, *quickly.*
Apreſſadamente, *haſtily.*
Arrebadamente, *furiouſly.*
Em hum inſtante, *inſtantly.*
Logo, *preſently.*

Adverbs of Compariſon.

Aſſim como, *ſo as.*
Quaſi, *almoſt.*
Como, *as.*
Máys, *more.*
Menos, *leſs.*

Adverbs of Choice.

Antes, *rather.*
Dóutra manéyra, *otherwiſe.*

Debalde,

Debalde, envâm, *in vain.*
Atravéz, *tranſverſly.*
Ao contrario, *on the contrary.*
A olhos viſtos, *openly.*
A longe, *afar off.*
De perto, *near.*
Ao menos, *at leaſt.*
á pe de letra, *by preſcription.*
Ao redor, *about.*
Ao vivo, *to the life.*
Aos côuces, *by the heels.*
A outro propóſito, *for another End.*
De corrida, *nimbly.*
Diariamente, *daily.*
As eſcondidas, *privately.*
De dia em dia, *from day to day.*
De gatinhas, *creeping.*
De galope, *leaping.*
De giolhos, *kneeling.*
Daveſſo, *tranverſly.*
Debilmente, *weakly.*

CHAP. VIII.

Of the Conjunctions.

THE ſeveral Sorts of Conjunctions are Copulatives, Disjunctives, Cauſals, Illatives, of Oppoſition, Exception, Conditionals of Doubting, of Declaration, of Interrogation, of Compariſon, of Augmentation, of Diminution, *&c.*

The chief Conjunction Copulative is *e*, and, which is uſed as in all other Languages; *tambem*, *tanto*, *quanto*, *como*, *nem*, and *tampoco*, are of the ſame Order.

Tambem, alſo, or as well, is always placed at the End of the Phraſe; as *voſſê o quer*, *e eu tambem*, you deſire it (will have it) and I alſo.

Tanto, *quanto*, *como*, always ſpeak with a Relation to other Things.

Nem disjoins the Parts of the Period as to the Senſe, but unites them in the Period; as *não he nem homem nem mulher*, it is neither, Man nor Woman; *tampoco*, neither, is uſed after the ſame Manner.

Ou is a Disjunctive, and is uſed in the ſame Senſe as *vel* in *Latin*, and *or* in *Engliſh*.

Porém, *entretanto*, *com todo iſſo*, *ſem embargo*, but, mean while, for all that, notwithſtanding, are of Oppoſition, and are employ'd in Diſcourſe as the *Engliſh* Words that ſignify them.

Senam, and *amenos que*, if not, and unleſs that, are of the excepting kind; *ſenam* ſtands ſometimes for but; as *não quero ſenam iſſo*, I deſire but that.

Se, if, *poſto que*, and *ſuppoſto que*, ſuppoſing that, are of the conditional Order, and are join'd with the Subjunctive Mood; as *ſe não ouvera lido*, if I had not read; *poſto que eu venha*, *&c.* ſuppoſe I come. *Quando*, when, is ſometimes uſed for a Conjunction of this Sort, and in ſuch Caſe 'tis always joined with the Subjunctive; as *ſe* or *quando fallára bem*, *entonces*, *&c.* if he would ſpeak well, then, *&c.*

Declaratives are, *he de ſaber*, to wit, and *como*, as, which govern neither Mood nor Tenſe of any Verb.

Paraque, *áque*, *ſobre que*, *porque*, wherefore, for what, upon what, for why, are Interrogatives; as *não ſey porque*, *nem paraque*, I don't know for what nor wherefore; *por que rezão*, for what reaſon; *á que propoſito*, to (for) what purpoſe.

Augmentatives and Diminutives are, *o demas*, *aindaque*, *ao menos*, for the reſt, altho', at leaſt, *&c.*

Cauſal Conjunctions are ſuch as mark the Reaſon of Things done; they anſwer the *Latin*, *quia*, *ergo*, *enim*. Such are *pois*, *porque*, *como*, *emquanto*, *logo*, *á fim que*, then, becauſe, as, inaſmuch, preſently, to the End that.

The Particle *que* is the moſt frequent of all Conjunctions, and of the moſt Importance to be taken notice of; it is both a Pronoun and a Conjunction, but the latter is what we ſpeak of here.

When

When it is not preceded by any Verb, it is a kind of Exclamation; as *que me exponha á fazer iſſo he impoſſibel*, that I ſhould expoſe me to do what is impoſſible. When *que* is preceded by a Verb, that Verb muſt be in the Indicative, and the Verb following *que* in Subjunctive; as *duvido que o Réy aja chegado á, &c.* I doubt that the King is not arrived, *&c.*

☞Obſerve here, that the *Portugueſe* as well as the *Spaniards*, *French*, and *Italians*, join no Negative with the Verb *I doubt*, as the *Engliſh* do. Thus the *Portugueſe* ſay, *duvido que o Rey aja chegado*, and not *que o Rey não aja chegado.*

But when *que* anſwers the *Latin quam*, how, it governs the Indicative Mood; as *o que fermoſa he eſta mulher!* O how handſome is that Woman! I need ſay nothing more about this Particle, for if the Student obſerves theſe Rules, and is careful in diſtinguiſhing when it ſtands for the Pronoun *what*, or for the Conjunction *that* and the Adverb *how*, he will find no Difficulty in uſing it correctly.

CHAP. IX.

Of the Prepoſition.

THE Prepoſitions, as has been ſaid in the Chapter of the Parts of Speech, are indeclinable Particles join'd with *Nouns*, *Pronouns*, and *Verbs*, to declare their Signification.

As the *a* is not only a Prepoſition, but alſo a Particle uſed in a very different Manner, I ſhall, by the following Explanation, ſhew how you may diſcern when it is a Prepoſition and when a Particle.

1. It

1. It is indeclinable when it is in Compoſition, as it often is both with Nouns, Pronouns, Verbs, and Adverbs, and ſometimes augments or diminiſhes the Signification; as *adinhéirado*, to be full of Money, compounded of *a* and *dinheiro*; it is the Participle of *adinhéirar*, to heap up Money; *ajoelhárſe*, to kneel, is a Verb Neuter reciprocal, compounded of *a* and *joelho*, a Knee; *adiante* is an Adverb, compounded of *a* and *diante*.

2. It is a Particle when it ſtands between two Infinitives; as *começar à jurar*, to begin to ſwear.

3. It is a Particle when it follows a Participle or Adjective, and is follow'd by an Infinitive Mood; as *eſtóu prompto à obedecér*, I am ready to obey.

4. It is a Particle when it is between two Nouns of Number, or more properly between a Noun of Number and its Repetition; as *ir dous à dous*, to go two and two; *quatro à quatro*, four and four; *viéram duzia à duzia*, they came by Dozens.

5. When it marks a Diſtance of Time or Place, it is a Particle; as *vive vinte milhas de Londres*, he lives twenty Miles from London.

6. The *a* is a Prepoſition marking the Dative Caſe in the Declenſion of a Noun proper, whether Maſculine or Feminine; as *eſcrever a Pedro*, to write to Peter; *á Juão*, *á Maria*, *&c.* I ſay it marks the Dative in Nouns proper; for in the declining of Subſtantives of the common Order it takes to itſelf an *o*; as *eſcrever ao Rey*, to write to the King; but when the Noun is of the Feminine Gender, the Particle cannot be diſtinguiſh'd from the Article, except that ſome who are nice in their Orthography put the Accent Grave upon the *à* when a Particle, and an Acute (*á*) when a Prepoſition.

7. The *a* marks the Accuſative after a Verb Active; as *amar a Deos*, to love God; *imitar aos Santos*, to follow the Example of Saints.

It

It may be objected that there is no Dfference between *eſcrever á Pedro*, to write to *Peter*, and *amar a Deos*, to love God; for if the *a* before *Pedro* ſignifies the Dative, it ought alſo to do the ſame before *Deos*; to which I anſwer, that to make the Diſtinction you muſt obſerve, that when it comes after a Verb Neuter it marks a Dative, and after a Verb Active an Accuſative Caſe, and beſides, that it is the Sign of the Dative Caſe to Nouns proper only. Theſe Rules, I doubt not, with ſome Application, will ſoon render the Learner Maſter of this nice Diſtinction.

De ſometimes ſignifies a Prepoſition, and ſometimes a Particle; when it marks the Quality, Cauſe, or Manner of doing a Thing, or anſwers to the Sign of the Genitive in *Engliſh*, it is no Prepoſition, but a Particle; as *he hum homem de mãa vida*, he is a Man of an ill Life.

When *de* anſwers the *Engliſh from*, or *out of*, it is a Prepoſition; as *nãõ tirye iſſo de mim*, you ſhall not take that from me.

De is alſo a Prepoſition when it ſtands before Adverbs of Place or Time; as *de aqui nó diante*, from henceforward; alſo when found before Verbs in the Infinitive Mood; as *he tempo de partir*, it is Time to depart.

Em, in, whence, *nó* and *ná*, in, and *dentro*, within, are alſo Prepoſitions; and to apply them juſtly, you are to obſerve, that when you ſpeak of the Time paſt, the Prepoſition *em* is required; and for the Time to come you are to uſe the Word *dentro*, and not *em*, *nó*, or *ná*; as *lí as obras de Taſſo em quinze dias*, and not *dentro de quinze dias*, I have read the Works of Taſſo in a Fortnight; *chegárey a Londres dentro de tres dias*, I will be at London within (in) three Days; *nó* and *ná*, and *nós* and *nas*, are a Contraction of *em o* and *em a*; *em os*, *em as*; they are put before the Nouns

to ſignify the Prepoſition *em*, and the Article belonging to the Word at the ſame Time; as *não ha nó mundo*, there is not in the World, for *não ha em o mundo*; and *não ha ná caſa*, for *não ha em a caſa*; thus *de o* and *de a* are contracted into *dó* and *dá*, and *de os*, *de as*, into *dós*, *dás*; which has been obſerved above.

Antes ſignifies a Priority in Time; as *Deos creó á Adam antes dó diluvio*, God created *Adam* before the Flood.

Diante is a Prepoſition both of Place and Order, and often anſwers to the *Latin coram*, before; as *tenho minha caſa diante o paço*, my Houſe is before the Palace; *póem eſſa camiſa diante dó fogo*, put this Shirt before the Fire; *eſtávamos diante dó Réy*, we were before the King; *voſſê va diante de mim*, you go before me.

Ante ſometimes ſignifies Priority, and ſometimes it has the Force of the *Latin coram*; as *ante todas cóuſas he meſter lér*, before all Things it is neceſſary to read, *&c. ante nôs ſecretarios*, before us Secretaries, which however is better expreſs'd by *diante*.

Perto, about, marks a Nearneſs of Time, Things, and Place, and requires the Genitive Caſe of Nouns, and the Infinitive of Verbs, with the Particle *de*; as *perto dá huma*, *perto dás tres*, about One, about Three a-Clock; *eſtá perto de perecer*, he is near periſhing.

Depois, ſince or after, is both of Time and Place; when 'tis of Time it anſwers the *Engliſh ſince*; as *depois dó diluvio*, ſince the Deluge; and *depois de aver eſcrito eſta carta*, after I had writ this Letter. When it denotes a Place, it anſwers the *Engliſh after*, and will in that Senſe alſo have the Genitive; *voſſê deve ir depóis de Pedro*, you ought to go after *Peter*.

Detraz is alſo of Place, and anſwers the *Engliſh behind*.

Con

Com is the ſame with, and is uſed exactly like the *Engliſh with*; for like that it marks Union, the Inſtrument and the Manner; as *con migo*, with me.

Entre is both of Place and Time, and anſwers to the *Engliſh between* and *betwixt*; as *entre a creação dó mundo e o diluvio*, between the Creation of the World and the Deluge; *entre o dia dó nacimento e a Paſcoa ſam múytos dias*, between Chriſtmas-Day and Paſſover are many Days. In theſe Examples 'tis plain that Prepoſition ſignifies Time; but in the following it denotes Place, as *o ar eſtá entre o céo e a terra*, the Air is betwixt Heaven and Earth; *entre Londres e Liſbóa*, betwixt London and Liſbon.

Fora anſwers to the *Engliſh out*, except when it is uſed for an Exceptive; *eſtá fora dá caſa*, he is out of the Houſe; *fora dó reyno*, out of the Kingdom. It is Exceptive in the following Examples, *eu conſento, fora dó ir á Roma*, I conſent, except of the going to Rome; *todos ſe fóram fora menos tres óu quatro*, all went away except three or four. The Words *ſalvo* and *ſenão*, except, are often with more Elegance apply'd than *fora*, particularly when it happens to fall in with a Word which reſembles it in Sound, as here it doth with *fóram*, where the Jingle takes off the Smoothneſs of the Sound; therefore you ſay more elegantly *todos ſe fóram ſalvo tres óu quatro*.

The Prepoſition *para* is put before an Infinitive Mood, or between two Infinitives; as *para morrer bem*, for to die well; *o que dizes he fallar para fallar*, what thou ſay'ſt is talking for talking ſake.

This Prepoſition marks the Motive, Cauſe, Reaſon, or End of Things being done; it ſhews why and for what; as *Deos crió todo o mundo para ſeu ſervicio*, God created all the World for his Service; *eu fiz huma caſa para os pobres*, I have made a Houſe for the Poor; *eſte homem he bom*

para hum ſecretario, this Man is good for a Secretary: It denotes alſo Conveniency; as *eſta caſa he muy pequena para mim*, this Houſe is very little for me.

It is alſo a Prepoſition of Time, tho' in the Future only; for when we ſpeak in the Preſent or Perfect Tenſe, we muſt uſe *por*, and not *para*, as we ſhall obſerve in ſpeaking of that Prepoſition; as *agora e para ſempre ſéja o nómem de Déos louvado*, now and for ever let the Name of God be praiſed.

The Prepoſition *por* denotes the Cauſe efficient of a Thing, or the Motive of doing or ordering that Thing. The efficient Cauſe, as *Deos crío todo por ſua omnipotencia*, God created all by his Omnipotence. It marks the Motive of ſome Action; as *todo o que faz he por vingança*, all what he doth is for (out of) Vengeance; *he féito iſto por eſſóutro*, I have done this for the other.

Por anſwers to the *Latin pro*, *v. g. eu vos tenho por amigo*, I hold you for a Friend; *a cidade eſtá por o Rey*, the City is for the King; *trocáyme eſte cavallo por hum óutro*, change me this Horſe for another. Sometimes *por* ſtands for the *Latin propter*, by reaſon of, *v. g. por aver grande tempeſtade*, by reaſon of a great Tempeſt; and in this Senſe the Words *amor*, or *cauſa*, are ſometimes join'd with it; as *por amor dás neves*, and *por cauſa das neves nã̄o paſſo os Alpes*, by reaſon of the Snow I don't paſs the Alps.

When *por* is join'd to the Article *o* and *a*, the *r* is changed into *l*; as *pólo amor de Deos*, for God's ſake; *póla honra*, &c.

Per is apply'd when they deſign to ſhew the Medium by which we proceed in any Action; as *eu vôs moſtraréy per rezóens evidentes*, I will ſhew you by evident Reaſons; *eſte livro fóy compoſto per Virgilio*, this Book was compoſed by Virgil.

When *per* is join'd to the Articles *o* and *a*, it makes *pélo* and *péla*; as *pélo caminho*, by the way; *péla terra*, thro' the Earth.

Contra, againſt, denotes Oppoſition and Place, and in both it is apply'd exactly like the *Engliſh*; as *elle váy contra maré e vento*, he goes againſt Tide and Wind; *contra minha vontade*, againſt my Will; *contra toda rezão*, againſt all Reaſon: It marks a Place in the following Example, *o cam meijó contra á parede*, the Dog piſs'd againſt the Wall.

Além, beſides, when join'd with the Infinitive, requires the Particle *de*; as *alem de comer quiz beber*, beſides eating he wanted to drink; but when put with the finite Moods, it requires *de que* or *dõ que*; as *além dó que tinha féito queria*, *&c.* beſides what he had done he wanted, *&c.*

Deſde and *até*, from and until, denote both Time and Place; as *déſde aquelle tempo atê agora*, from that Time to this Time, (till now,) *deſde aquella caſa*, *até eſta caſa*, from that Houſe to (till) this Houſe.

Sem, without, anſwers the *Latin abſque* and *ſine*, and goes before the Noun and Verb, and governs the Accuſative Caſe; *he homem ſem honra*, he is a Man without Honour; *léyo ſem applicação*, I read without Application.

Sobre anſwers in every Thing to the *Engliſh upon* and *over*, and therefore 'tis not neceſſary to ſay any Thing about it.

Debaixo is a Prepoſition both of Time and Place; it marks a Time when it marks the Reign of any Prince; as *debáixo dó Império de Leopoldo*, under or in the Reign of Leopold. It denotes a Place; as *méus çapátos eſtám debáixo dá cama*, my Shoes ſtand under the Bed. It ſignifies a Subordination; as *os ſoldados eſtam debaixo dá autoridade dó general*, the Soldiers are under the Authority

of the General; and alſo in the metaphorical Senſe it anſwers to the *Engliſh under* and *below*; as *engana ſeu próximo debáixo dá capa de devoçam*, he cheats his Neighbour under the Cloak of Devotion.

Em cima, above or upon, anſwers the *Engliſh* Senſe without Exception; thus you ſay, *em cima dá meſa*, upon the Table; *ſe ha poſto em cima de todo o mundo*, he has put (ſet) himſelf above all the World.

CHAP. X.

Of the Interjections.

THE Interjections we have already obſerv'd, ſerve to expreſs the Paſſions and different Emotions of the Mind, *viz.* Joy, Grief, Deſire, Fear, Averſion, and Admiration, and often one and the ſame Word has different Significations, according to the Tone it is pronounced with; *oh ſe*, oh if! *oxala*, would to God! *hay me*, ah me! *heu*, alas, for pity! *moſino de mim*, oh miſerable me! *animo amigos*, Courage my Friends, *&c.* But as they are very eaſy, and correſpond with the *Engliſh* Idiom, and as alſo they can cauſe no Difficulty when you meet 'em in Authors, they ſufficiently declaring themſelves, theſe Examples may ſuffice.

Of the ORTHOGRAPHY *of the* Portugueſe *Language.*

FIRST, All Proper Names and Sirnames, or Relatives derived from Appellatives, are written with a great Character in the Beginning, *viz. Joam, Pedro, Maria, Coſta.* As alſo all Proper

per Names of Kingdoms, Provinces, Cities, Towns, Mountains, Arms, Rivers, Fountains, Months of the Year, Names of Gods and Goddeſſes, Nymphs, Furies, *&c.* as *Portugal*, *Andaluſia*, *Lisbóa*, *Madrid*, *Olympo*, *Téjo*, *Arethúſa*, *Janéyro*, *Júpiter*, *Venus*, &c. So alſo of Adjectives; as *Románo*, *Portuguéz*, *Ingréz*, *Francéz*, a Roman, a Portugueſe, an Engliſhman, a Frenchman; and Appellatives of any great Dignity; as of an Emperor, King, Prince, Duke, Lord, Biſhop, *&c.* and the Beginning of every Chapter or Section, and after every final Period, which Rules are alſo obſerved in other Languages.

2. Abbreviations common in the *Portugueſe* Tongue are, *V. Mag. Voſſa Mageſtade*; *V. A. Voſſa Alteza*; *V. E. Voſſa Excellencia*; *V. S. Voſſa Senhoria*; *V. M. Voſſa Mercé*; *O R. N S. O Rey Noſſo Senhor*; all which are written with great Characters; of which ſee the Letters.

3. No *Portugueſe* Word either begins or ends with a double Conſonant; as *rr* or *ſſ*; thus it would be ſuperfluous to write *quall* with two *ll*, becauſe the Sound of the laſt Conſonant is entirely loſt.

4. The Letter *m* is always written before *b*, *m*, *p*; as *embravecer*, *immovel*, *impar*. The Letter *n* is always written before *c*, *d*, *f*, *g*, *l*, *n*, *r*, *ſ*, *t*; e. g. *trónco*, *póndo*, *confiſſão*, *angúſtia*, *enleádo*, *anno*, *enregelado*, *inſinuado*, *enteſado*; except the Compounds of the Adverbs *bem* and *circum*, as *bemeſtreado*, *bemquiſto*, *circumferencia*, *circumflexo*, &c.

5. The Pauſes in Writing or Reading are expreſs'd firſt by a Comma (,) which is uſed for a Diſtinction of what we write, and in Diſcourſe to give a little Eaſe for Reſpiration. The chief Uſe of it is after a Verb, with its Caſes, at the End of every little Clauſe, *v. g. quem ama a Deos, ama o proximo*, he that loves God, loves his Neighbour.

bour. It is alſo placed after a Conjunction before a Relative, *viz. aquelle he verdadeyraménte prudente, e ſabio, que com todo, &c.* he (or that Man) is truly prudent, and wiſe, who with all, *&c.* It has alſo its Place before Adjectives, when many occur in the ſame Caſe, *v. g. quem quizér, ſer, nobre, bom, prudente, liberal, &c.* he that deſires to be noble, good, prudent, liberal, *&c.* Alſo before Subſtantives, as, *as virtudes moráys ſam quatro, prudencia, juſticia, temperancia, fortaleza,* the moral Virtues are four, Prudence, Juſtice, Temperance, and Fortitude. It is alſo uſed after ſimple Verbs, without any Caſe; as *pequéy, fallando, obrando, &c.* I have ſinned in ſpeaking, working, *&c.*

But it is difficult to explain the Difference there is betwixt a Colon (:) and a Semicolon (;). The Colon is a compleat Sentence, but the Senſe of the Period is not quite finiſhed. A Semicolon is a Sentence, but ſomething is wanting to make it perfect; and as the Colon is a Diviſion of the Period; ſo the Semicolon is a Subdiviſion of a Colon. This laſt Period may ſerve for an Example; but this nice Diſtinction muſt chiefly be learnt by Practice. The Colon is uſed when we quote the Words of any Author, *e. g. dizía Salamão: nenhúma cóuſa he de todo perféita,* Solomon ſaid: nothing is perfect in every Part. In the ſame manner, when we promiſe to ſay ſomething, as *dirćy ao que me maldiçoár: húyva como lobo, más mam me mordes como cam,* I ſhall ſay to him that ſhall ſpeak ill of me: howl like a Wolf, but bite me not like a Dog.

A ſingle Point is uſed when the Senſe of a Sentence is compleatly conſummated; of which Obſervation will eaſily inform you.

The Interrogative Sign is made thus (?) and is uſed upon all Queſtions, *v g. porque a timeſma nam conheces?* why doſt thou not know thyſelf?

porque

porque nam conſervas o téu? why doſt thou not preſerve thy own? After the Sign of Interrogation the next following Word ſhould begin with a great Letter.

The Sign of an Interjection is (!) which likewiſe requires a great Character after it.

A Parentheſis is known by two Half-Moons or Half-Circles, which incloſe ſome Words, and exempt them from the reſt of the Sentence, *v. g. o pecadór (ſe ſe nam emendár) ſem dúvida ſera punido*, the Sinner (if he doth not mend) without doubt will be puniſh'd. So likewiſe when an Author is quoted; as *bem aventurada ſera a Republica (dizia Platam) ná qual os filóſofos réynem*, happy will be the Republick (ſaid *Plato*) in which Philoſophers govern.

The *&c.* is an Abbreviation of the *Latin* Words *et cætera*, and the reſt, and is made uſe of to expreſs that the Sentence is not perfectly finiſh'd, and that ſomething which is not very material, or obvious to every one, is left for the Reader (or Hearer) to imagine.

The *v. g. verbi gratia*, in *Engliſh* to ſay, and *e. g. exempli gratia*, for Example, are apply'd when ſomething is to be alledg'd to illuſtrate what has been ſaid before.

The Aſteriſks and other Signs we omit for Brevity's ſake, as being what Cuſtom in Reading and Writing will introduce of courſe.

The ETYMOLOGY. *Obſervations on the Nature of the Language itſelf.*

THE *Spaniards* pretend the *Portugueſe* is a Baſtard of their Language, and endeavour to prove it from Hiſtory, and the Idiom of the Lan-

Language itſelf, and many Words which appear to be a Contraction of the *Spaniſh* in ſome meaſure, ſeem to confirm it; as *pó*, *ſó*, *cor*, *dino*, *leóa*, *voár*, *ter*, *pór*, *ſoar*, *cear*, *ſuar*, *ler*, *&c.* in *Spaniſh polvo*, *ſolo*, *color*, *digno*, *leona*, *volar*, *tener*, *poner*, *ſonar*, *cenar*, *ſudar*, Duſt, alone, Colour, worthy, a Lioneſs, to fly, to hold, to put, to ſound, to ſup, to ſweat, *&c.* But as theſe Words all proceed from the *Latin*, the *Portugueſe* have perhaps as good a Right to ſay the *Spaniards* have borrow'd 'em from them, and made them longer, as that they ſhould have had 'em from the *Spaniards*, and made them ſhorter. 'Tis true, the *Spaniards* were Maſters of *Portugal* for a conſiderable Time, and probably introduced many of their Words into that Nation, as the *French* have done likewiſe; but, as upon account of a Settlement the *Romans* had in *Portugal* as well as in *Spain*, it is more than probable they had their Language immediately from the *Latin*; I don't therefore ſee how the *Spaniards* ſhould be allow'd the Honour of fathering this Language, altho' it owes perhaps ſome Words to them.

The *Portugueſe* then derives its Original from the *Latin*, and that it retains a greater Affinity to it than any other Language, is what they much contend for. They can produce whole Sentences which are both good *Latin* and *Portugueſe*, and in both Languages expreſs the ſame Senſe; as *durante iſto vento tam contrario, tu toleras duras & injuſtas miſerias*, during that ſo contrary Wind, thou ſuffereſt hard and unjuſt Miſeries; *ſupplico vos, o Principes, amantes cauſas publicas!* I intreat you, O Princes, loving publick Cauſes! If I had not been ſcrupulous in theſe Examples, even to a Letter, and if I had thought the Reader would allow a ſmall Alteration, as from *us* to *o*, or from *nt* to *m*, or ſome ſuch trifling Changes,

I could have inſerted conſiderable Paſſages of *Portugueſe* all *Latin* Words. And for this Reaſon the *Portugueſe* ſeem to have retained a greater Affinity to the *Latin* than any other of its Deſcendants: Beſides, that their Conſtruction is very like the *Latin*, and that they endeavour to pronounce as they write, and write as they pronounce, are doubtleſs alſo reaſonable Arguments for the Purity of their Language. But as we have ſaid ſomewhat already in the Preface on this Head, we forbear ſaying any more here, to avoid needleſs Repetitions, and proceed to make our Obſervations on the Nature of the Language itſelf.

Such Words as are naturally and originally *Latin*, ought to be written and expreſs'd in the ſame Characters; as *terra*, *maſſa*, *ſyllaba*, except ſuch Words which in their Pronunciation alter their Sound, *v. g.* the Word *choro* in *Latin* is written with an *h*, and ſignifies a Choir and Concert of Muſick; but in the *Portugueſe* with an *h* ſignifies Lamentation, and *coro* ſignifies a Concert and Choir. In the ſame Manner we are not to write *parocho*, but *paroco*; and *caridade*, not *charidade*; *monarca*, not *monarcha*, and the like, becauſe by the *h* the Syllables obtain a quite different Sound.

When the *Latin* Letter is doubled, the *Portugueſe* commonly follow their Example; as *aggravar*, *aggravo*; *exaggerar*, *exaggeraçam*.

The *Latin ti* is commonly changed into *ç*, *ci* or *j*; as in *graça*, *preſença*, *doença*, *paciéncia*, *clemencia*, *violéncia*.

The *c* in *Latin* Words adapted to this Language, is often changed into *u* or *y*; as *doutór*, *reytór*, *perfeyto*, *effeito*, from *doctor*, *rector*, *perfectus*, *effectus*, &c.

As for Words where there is any Doubt whether the Letter *ſ* or *z* is to be uſed, having both the ſame Sound, they generally follow the *Latin*;

as

as they write *uſo*, and not *uzo*; *applauſo*, not *applauzo*; *cauſa*, not *cauza*, and the like.

They generally change the Letters *ph* into *f*; as in *filóſofo*, *ortographia*, *Felippe*, &c.

The Words the *Latins* write with a Diphthong the *Portugueſe* expreſs with a ſingle Vowel; as *Ethiopia*, *Æthiopia*; *edificio*, *ædificium*; *eſtio*, *æſtas*; *herdeyró*, *hæres*; *pena*, *pæna*; *feno*, *fœnum*.

No *Portugueſe* Words end in the following Conſonants, *viz.* *b*, *c*, *d*, *f*, *g*, *n*, *p*, *q*, *t*, *x*; but only in *l*, *m*, *r*, *ſ*, *z*.

Vowels in general are not doubled if they are of the ſame kind, and belong to the ſame Word; I ſay of the ſame kind, becauſe in the Word *mentîys* *i* and *y* are Vowels of a different kind; and I ſay belonging to the ſame Word, becauſe when we ſay *vendoa* and *amavaa*, for *a vendo* and *a amava*, the two laſt Vowels are not duplicate, but one Vowel is joined to the other, which is an Article; and in *irmãa*, *maçãa*, &c. the *aa* is not to be conſider'd as two diſtinct Vowels, becauſe they ſoften themſelves into one Syllable.

As for Conſonants, it is certain that the Letters *x* and *z* can never be duplicate. The doubling of *r* and *ſ*, the Ear is the beſt Judge to diſtinguiſh it; for ſingle and double they have two different Sounds; the one ſoft and weak, as in *amara*; the other harſher and ſtronger, as in *amarra*, a Cable. The ſame may be obſerv'd of the Letter *ſ*; as in the Words *caſo* and *caſſo*, a Fork or Fleſh-Hook; but as to theſe the diſtinguiſhing Ear and Practice of Converſation will give the beſt Rules. In the Word *accento* we eaſily perceive a double Conſonant, and 'tis not difficult at all to be diſtinguiſh'd from the Word *acento*; yet there are ſome Words in which Uſe rather than the Ear teach us whether the Conſonants are duplicate or no; as for Example, in the Words *aforár*,

forár, *affinár*, *affogár*, to pay Tribute, to refine, to ſtrangle. And it ought to be obſerv'd (as above) that in all Words derived from the *Latin*, the *Portugueſe* love to imitate them in doubling of Conſonants, as in the Words *affinidáde*, *aggravár*, *communicár*; ſo *elle*, *amaſſe*, *leſſe*, *ouviſſe*, *foſſe*.

The *ſ* and *c*, before *e* and *i*, have the ſame Sound in *Portugueſe*, and to diſtinguiſh them in Writing, there is no other Rule than that the Words deriving from the *Latin* ought to be written with the ſame Letters; as *cebóla*, *cidáde*, *ſenádo*, *&c.* and not *ſebóla*, *ſidade*, *cenado*. The ſame ſhould be obſerv'd alſo about the Letters *ſ* and *z*, that tho' they have the ſame Sound they ought not to be uſed promiſcuouſly; as *menſa* in *Latin* is in *Portugueſe meſa*, and not *meza* with a *z*; ſo they write *caſa*, not *caza*.

The *Latin* Words ending in *x* change the *x* for a *z* in the *Portugueſe* Language; thus *pax*, *perdix*, *vox*, *lux*, are in *Portugueſe paz*, *perdíz*, *voz*, *luz*, &c.

The *ç*, or *c* with its *Plica* at Bottom, is often uſed for a double *ſ*; but when the Word is derived from the *Latin*, it is juſtly deemed a Miſtake if you ſhould write *ç* for *ſſ*; thus you are to write, *paſſo*, *maſſa*, *profeſſar*, not *paço*, *maça*, *profeçar*.

Of the PROSODIE, *or Accentuation of the Syllables.*

THE Quantity of Syllables is either ſhort or long, tho' ſome pretend to introduce a ſort of a middle Pronunciation, between ſhort and long; which however, to avoid Confuſion, we ſhall take no notice of.

And

And for the ſake of obſerving a regular Method, we ſhall begin with thoſe that have the Penultima in *a.*

The Words ending in *aba, abo, aca, aco, acha, acho, aça, aço, ada, ado, afa, afo, aga, agem, agre, agro, alba, alho, ala,* and *alo,* have their Penultima's long, except *lévado, cágado, eſtómago, ámago, ſcándalo, bígamo, píramo,* &c. and ſome other Words derived from the *Latin,* which are ſhort. Alſo the Penultima's in *apo, apa, aque, ara, aro, arra, arro, ata, ato, ava, avo, axa, axo, aza,* and *azo,* are long, tho' not without Exception; as *cántaro, púcaro, lúparo, tártaro,* &c. and *cóncavo* and *bíſavo,* which are ſhort.

The Penultima in *e.*

The Penultima's in *eba, ebo, eda, edo, eſa, eſo,* are marked with an Accent, but are not pronounced quite ſo long as thoſe terminating in *echa, echo, eca,* and *eco.* The Penultima's in *eça, eço, ega,* and *ego,* are alſo long, tho' not without ſome few Exceptions; as *córrego, cónego, ſóffrego, pécego, fóllego, bátega, cócego,* which are ſhort. Thoſe in *elà,* and *elo, ema, emo, ena, eno, epa, epe, epo, eque, era, ero, eſa, eſo, eta, ete, eto, eva, eve,* and *evo,* are long, except *próſpero* and *áſpero,* which are ſhort.

The Penultima in *i.*

The Words ending in *iba, ibe, ibo, icha, iche, ìcbo, ica, ico, iça, ice, iço, ida, ide, ido, ifa, ife, ifo, iga, igo, ija, ijo, ilha, ilho, ila, ile, ilo, ima, imo, inha, inho, ina, ino, ipa, ipe, ipo, iqua, ique, iquo, ira, ire, iro, iſa, iſe, iſo, iza, izo, ita, ito, iva, ivo, ixa,* and *ixo,* are long; except *mecánico, agárico, crítico,* and the like, from the *Latin* or *Greek,* and *húmido, pállido, tórrido, hórrido, pródigo, ínfimo, anónimo, íntimo, máximo, péſſimo, púlpito, vómito, decrépito, eſpírito,* which are ſhort. The

The Penultima in *o.*

The Words ending in *oba, obe, obo, obra, obre, obro, ocha, ocho, oca, oco, oça, oço, oda, ode, odo, ofa, ofe, ofo, ofra, ofre, ofro, oga, ogue, ogo, oja, ojo, ola, ole, olo, oma, ome, omo, ona, ono, onha, onho, opa, ope, opo, oplo, opra, opre, opro, ora, ore, oro, orra, orro, oſa, oſe, oſo, oza, ozo, ota, ote, oto, ova, ove, ovo, oxa, exo,* are long, except *ſúccobo, íncobo, pírola,* and *frívolo,* which are ſhort.

Words having their Penultima's in *u.*

Thoſe Words ending in *uba, ubo, ubra, ubro, ucha, ucho, uça, uço, uca, uco, uda, ude, udo, ufa, ufe, ufo, uga, uge, ugo, uja, ujo, ulha, ulhe, ulho, ula, ule, ulo, uma, ume, umo, unha, unhe, unho, una, une, uno, upa, upe, upo, uque, ura, ure, uro, uſa, uſe, uſo, uza, uze, uzo, uta, ute, uto, utre, uxa, uxe, uxo, uva, uvo,* are long, except *ſúccubo, íncubo, vocábulo, veſtíbulo, ángulo, régulo, ámbula, trémula,* and *cómputo,* and ſome others derived from the *Latin.*

Obſervations of Penultima's before Vowels.

a before *e* is long, as *ſáe, cae*; before *i* ſhort, as *ſaír, caír*; before *o*, and *ya, yo*, 'tis long, except when to the third Perſon Singular of the Indicative Mood the Particle *o* is added, as *cómao, bébao.*

e before other Vowels.

e before *a* is long, except in *gátea, bôreas,* and in the third Perſon of the Imperative, when the Particle is annex'd, as *mátea*; before *o* it ſounds long, except *páteo,* and in the ſaid Perſons when the Letter *e* is ſubjoined, as *máteo,* and in *fémea, ſémeas, eſcórea,* and other Words derived from the *Latin*; but it is long before the *u*, when the two Vowels melt into a Diphthong, giving a diſtinct Sound of each, as in *coriféu, ſandéu.*

i be-

i before other Vowels.

i before *a*, *e*, and *o* is long, excepting *eſpécia*, *féria*, *comédia*, *ſciencia*, and other Words from the *Latin*.

o before other Vowels.

o before *a*, *e*, and *u* is long; but before *i* 'tis hardly perceived as to its Sound, and reputed to be ſhort, as in the Words *roim*, *poir*.

u before other Vowels.

u before *a* is long, except in *cápua*, *pápua*, *inſeca*; before *e*, *i*, and *o* 'tis long, except in ſome few Words of the *Latin* Produce.

The Accent or Tone of the laſt Syllables.

Firſt thoſe ending with a Vowel; and to begin with a regular Method, thoſe ending in *a* are ſhort, excepting *tafetá*, *bofetá*, *maná*, *cá*, *lá*, *acolá*, *oxalá*, *pá*, *pará*, and in the third Perſons Singular of the Future Tenſe of the Indicative Mood, *v. g. amará*, *lerá*, *ouvirá*, *rirá*, &c.

Words ending in *e*

Make the laſt Syllable ſhort, except *galé*, *polé*, *poté*, *maré*, *chaminé*, *loulé*, *pontapé*, *relé*, &c.

Words ending in *i*

Make their laſt Syllable long; but thoſe that terminate with the Diphthong *ay*, *ey*, *oy*, and *uy*, have their Penultima's long.

Words ending in *o*

Have their laſt Syllable regularly ſhort, except *avó*, *enxó*, *ichó*, *ſilhó*, *teyró*, and the third Perſons Singular of the Preterperfect Tenſe Indicative Mood.

Words ending in *u*

Are generally long in the laſt Syllable, excepting ſuch as have a Vowel precedent to it; for then by forming a Diphthong the Sound is different in the Pronunciation, and the Penultima grows long, as in *amóu*, *levóu*, &c.

Words

Words terminating in *l*, *m*, *r*, *ſ*, *z*.

All Words ending in *al* are long, except only one, *Setúval*, a Sea-Port Town of that Name in *Portugal*.

Thoſe that end in *el* are long in the laſt Syllable, except *agradável*, *viſível*, *amável*, &c.

Words terminating in *il* are long, except *dócil*, *fácil*, *hábil*, and the like, derived from the *Latin*.

All Words ending in *ol* are long, without Exception.

Likewiſe thoſe in *ul*, except *cónſul*, a Conſul

Words terminating in *m*.

The Nouns that end in *am* are long; but the Verbs in the third Perſon Plural of the Indicative Preſent are ſhort; and the third Perſon Plural of the Future Indicative are long, as *amarám*, *lerám*, *ouvirám*, &c.

Thoſe that end in *em* are ſhort, except ſome Nouns, *bedém*, *parabém*; alſo the Verb *tem*, with its Compounds, as *mantém*, *detém*, *retém*, *contém*, with the Words *aquém*, *além*, *porém*, which are long. The Words in *im* are all long. Thoſe in *om* and *um* are alſo long.

Words terminating in *r*.

Thoſe that terminate in *ar* are long, except *açúcar*, *néctar*, *aljófar*, *ámbar*, &c.

Thoſe in *er* are likewiſe long, without Exception. In *ir* are long; ſuch are the Infinitives of the Verbs of the ſecond Conjugation; and here the Verb *mártyr* is only excepted.

In *or* are long.

Very few *Portugueſe* Words end in *ur*; but thoſe that do, ſound long.

Words terminating in *s*.

All Words terminating in *as* being Nouns, in their Pronunciation in the Plural Number imitate the Singular; if ſhort in Singular, they are ſo in the Plural; as *cáſa*, *cáſas*, *cóuſa*, *cóuſas*; and if

long in the Singular, they are the ſame in the Plural; as *tafetá*, *tafetás*; *bofetá*, *bofetás*. The ſame Rule is alſo applicable to all Verbs, in what Tenſe ſoever; for whatever Letter the firſt Perſon ends in, if that be ſhort or long, the ſecond Perſon will be the ſame; as *ámo*, *ámas*, *amáva*, *amáva*, *amávas*, *amarév*, *amáras*.

All Words ending in *es* in the Plural Number, which in the Singular have an *e* ſhort, are likewiſe ſhort in the Plural; as *tígre*, *tígres*, *pádre*, *pádres*; but thoſe that have an *e* long in the Singular, have a long Termination in the Plural; as *maré*, *marés*, *chaminé*, *chaminés*. The Syllable *es* in the ſecond Perſon of the Indicative Preſent in the ſecond and third Conjugation is ſhort; as *eſcréves*, *óuves*, *móves*, *tóſſes*.

Words ending in *is* or *iz* are long, except ſome Words that end in *ays*, *eys*, *oys*, *uys*; as *cáys*, *arráys*, *réys*, *léys*, *caracóys*, *róys*, *páisy*, *azúys*, and the Verbs *amáys*, *enſináys*, *diréys*, *faréys*.

Words ending in *os*, when they derive from a Singular ſhort, the Plurals are ſhort alſo; when the Singular is long, the Plural is ſo too. All the firſt Perſons Plural of all Verbs are ſhort in their laſt Syllables; as *amámos*, *amávamos*, *amémos*, *lémos*, *líamos*, *ouvímos*.

The Nouns ending in *us* are long, except thoſe that have another Vowel before the *u*, and make a Diphthong, as *ſandéu*, *ſandéus*.

Words terminating in *z*.

Whether in *az*, *ez*, *iz*, *oz*, and *uz*, are long, except *appéndiz*.

This may ſuffice to inſtruct the Reader in the general Rules how and in what Manner to place the Accents or Tones upon Words. We might have ſaid much more upon this Subject, but the reſt will ſoon be learned by Reading or Converſation.

A VOCABULARY IN *Engliſh* and *Portugueſe*.

CHAP. I.

Nouns Subſtantive.

Of Things, *De Couſas.*

A *Thing*, a cóuſa.
Nature, a naturéza.
a Beginning, o principio.
an End, o fim.
an Order, a ordem.
Time, o tempo.
a Number, o número.
a Place, o lugár.
a Space, o eſpácio.
a Name, o nome.
a Sign, o finál.
a Mode or Manner, o modo, a manéira.
a Mark, a marca.
a Kind, a ſorte, o género.
a Part, a parte.
a Member, o membro.
a broken Piece, o pedaço.
a cut Piece, o fatia.
a little Piece, o pedacinho.
Nothing, nada.
Matter, a matéria.
Form, a forma.
a Figure, a figura.
a Body, o corpo.

Of the World and the Elements, *dó mundo e dós elementos.*

the World, o mundo.
the Sky, o firmamento.
the Sun, o ſol.
the Moon, a lúa.

a Star, a eſtrella.
a Planet, o planeta.
a Comet, a cometa.
Light, a luz.
a Sun-beam, o ráyo dó ſol.
Darkneſs, a obſcuridade.
a Shadow, a ſombra.
an eclipſe, a eclipſe.
the New Moon, a lúa nova.
the Full Moon, a lúa chéya.
the Wane of the Moon, o mingóante dá lúa.
the increaſing Moon, a lúa crecente.
an Element, o elemento.
Fire, o fogo.
Air, o ár.
Water, a água.
Earth, a terra.
a Flame, a flama.
a Spark, a faíſca.
Smoke, o fumo.
Soot, a ferrúgem.
a Fire, when a Houſe is on Fire, o incéndio.
a Firebrand, o tiſſam acéſo.
a live or hot Coal, o carvám acéſo.
a Coal, o carvám.
Sea-coal, o carvám de pedra.
Embers, or hot Aſhes, a cinza quente, o borralho.
a Cloud, a núvem.
a Fog or Miſt, a névoa.
a Vapour, o vapór.
a Wind, o vento.
a gentle Wind, o Zéfiro, o vento gentíl.
a Whirlwind, o pé de vento.
a Tempeſt, a tempeſtade, a trabuzána.
ſerene Weather, tempo ſereno.
good Weather, bom tempo.
bad Weather, tempo roím.
foggy or dark Weather, tempo nevoádo.
rainy Weather, tempo chuvóſo.
a little Wind, o ventinho.
the Eaſt Wind, o vento d'Eſte.
Eaſt North-Eaſt Wind, o vento d'Eſte Nor d'Eſte.
North-Eaſt Wind, o vento Nor d'Eſte
North North-Eaſt, Nor Nor d'Eſte.
North Wind, o vento de Norte.
North North-Weſt Wind, o vento Nor Nor d'Oéſte.
North-Weſt, Nor Oéſte.
Weſt North-Weſt, Oéſte Nor Oéſte.
Weſt, Oéſte.

Weſt

Weſt South-Weſt, Oéſte Sud Oéſte.
South-Weſt, Sud Oéſte.
South South-Weſt, Sul Sud Oéſte.
South Wind, o vento de Sul.
South South-Eaſt, Sul Sud éſte.
South-Eaſt, Sud eſte.
Eaſt South-Eaſt, Eſte Sud éſte.
a Rainbow, o arco celeſte.
Thunder, o trovám.
Lightning, o relámpago.
Rain, a chuva.
a Shower, a chuva de trovám.
Snow, a neve.
Hail, o pedriſco.
Dew, o orvalho, roſío.
hoar or white Froſt, o gelo.
a great Shower, a borraſca.
a Spring or Fountain, a fonte.
a River, a ribéira.
a great River, o río.
a Brook, o torrente.
a Stream, o corrente.
the Sea, o mar.
the Ocean, o océano.
a Wave, a onda.
the Tide, a maré.
the Flowing, o crecente dá maré.
the Ebb, o vazante dá maré.
a Shore, o bordo.
a Haven or Port, o porto.
a Gulf or Bay, o golfo, a bahía.
an Iſland, a ilha.
a Peninſula, a penínſola.
a Bank, a ribancéira.
a Channel, o canál.
a Ford, o vám.
a Well, o poço.
a Ditch, o foſſo.
a Pool or Pond, a lagóa.
a Marſh or Fen, or fenny Ground, terra alagada.
a Lake, o lago.
a Bog, o atoléyro.
a Slough, o lamaçal.
a Fiſh-pond, o viveyro de péixes.
a Drop of Water, a gotta d'agua.
a Bubble, a ampolla d'agua.
Froth, a eſcuma.
Ice, a geáda.
Cold, frio.
Heat, o calór.
the Continent or main Land, o continente, a terra firme.
a Mountain, o monte.
a Hill, o outéiro.
a Rock, a rocha, a penha.
a plain Field, o campo.
a Valley, o valle.
Mud, o limo, o lodo.

Dirt, o eſterco.
Duſt, o pó.
a Clod of Earth, o torrám.
a Turf, torrám com erva.
Clay, o barro.
Red-oker, o almagre.
Marl, or white Earth, barro branco.
Chalk, a greda, o giz.
Fullers Earth, greda bárro.
Heaven, o céo.
Hell, o inferno.
Purgatory, o purgatório.
God, o Déos.
an Angel, o anjo.
Paradiſe, o paraíſo.
a Soul, a alma.
a Devil, o Diabo.

Of Time and the Seaſons, *de tempo e ſezóens.*

Time, o tempo.
a Day, o día.
a Night, a nóite.
Noon, o méyo dia.
Midnight, méya nóite.
Morning, a manhãa.
Evening, a tarde.
a Sun-dial, o relógio de ſol.
a Clock, o relógio.
an Hour-glaſs, o relógio de area.
a Watch, o relógio de algibéira.
a Watchman, o vigidor.
an Hour, a hora.
Half an Hour, a méya hora.
a Quarter of an Hour, o quarto de hora.
three Quarters of an Hour, tres quartos de hora.
To-day, oje.
Yeſterday, óntem.
To-morrow, a menhãa.
before Yeſterday, antóntem.
this Evening, eſta tarda.
this Morning, eſta menhãa.
after Dinner, depóis dô jantar.
after Supper, depóis dó ceár.
a Week, a ſemána.
a Fortnight, quinze dias.
a Month, o mez.
a Year, o anno.
a Minute, o minuto.
a Moment, o momento.
the Spring, o verão.
the Summer, o eſtío.
Autumn, o outono.
the Winter, o inverno.
Day-break, a madrugada.
Sun-ſet, o ſolpoſto.
Sun-riſe, o nacentedó ſol.
Dusk of the Evening, o luſco fuſco.
Monday, a ſecunda féyra.
Tueſday, a terça féyra.
Wedneſday, aquarta féyra
Thurſday,

Thurſday, a quinta féyra.
Friday, a feſta féyra.
Saturday, o Sábado.
Sunday, o Domingo.
a *Holy-day*, o dia feſtivo.
a *Worky-day*, o dia do trabalho.
New-year's-day, o anno novo.
Eaſter-day, a Páſcoa.
Whitſunday, a Pentecoſte.
St. John's-day, o Sam Joám.
Michaelmas-day, o Sam Miguel.
Chriſtmas-day, o Natal.
January, o Janéiro.
February, o Fevréiro.
March, o Março.
April, o Abril.
May, o Máyo.
June, o Junho.
July, o Julho.
Auguſt, o Agoſto.
September, o Setembro.
October, o Outúbro.
November, o Novembro.
December, Decembro.

Of Countries and Cities, *de terras e cidades.*

Europe, a Europa.
Aſia, a Aſia.
Africa, a Africa.
America, a América.
the Eaſt-Indies, as Indias Orientaes.
the Weſt-Indies, as Indias Occidentaes.
Great Britain, a Grande Bretanha.
England, a Ingalaterra.
Scotland, a Eſcocia.
Ireland, a Irlanda.
Denmark, a Dinamarca.
Norway, a Norvega.
Sweden, a Suecia.
Muſcovy or Ruſſia, a Moſcóvia, a Ruſſia.
Germany, a Alemanha.
France, a França.
Holland, a Ollanda.
the United Provinces, as Provincias Unidas.
Flanders, a Flandes.
Switzerland, a Suiſſa.
Spain, a Eſpanha.
Portugal, o Portugal.
Poland, a Polónia.
Italy, a Italia.
Hungary, a Ungaria.
Turkey, a Turquía.
a *capital City*, a villa capital.
London, Londres.
Edenburg, Edimburgo.
Dublin, Dublin.
Copenhagen, Copenaga.
Drontheim, Drontheim.
Stockholm, Eſtocolmo.
Moſcow, Moſco.
Vienna, Viena.
Paris, Paris.
Amſterdam,

Amſterdam, Amſterdám.
Bruſſels, Bruſſelas.
Baſil, Baſla.
Madrid, Madrid.
Lisbon, Lisbóa.
Cracow, Cracóvia.
Rome, Roma.
Venice, Veneza.
Belgrade, Belgrada.
Conſtantinople, Conſtantinopola.

Of Minerals and precious Stones, *De mineras e pedras precioſas.*

a Mine, a mina.
a Mineral, o mineral.
a Metal, o metál.
Gold, o ôura.
Silver, a práta.
Braſs, o latám.
Copper, o cobre.
Iron, o ferro.
Steel, o aço.
Lead, o chumbo.
Tin, o eſtanho.
Quickſilver, o azógue.
white Lead, o alvayáde.
Vermilion, or red Lead, o vermelhám.
Verdigreaſe, o ferrógem do cobre.
Ruſt, a ferrúgem.
Salt, o ſal.
Alom, o alume.
Brimſtone. o enxófre.
Amber, o ambar.
Salt Petre, o Salitre.
a Stone, a pedra.
a Flint-Stone, a pedra de fogo.
a Whetſtone, a pedra de ſevár.
a Touchſtone, a pedra de toque.
Plaiſter, o geſſo.
Lime, a cal.
Sand, a aréa.
Gravel, o caſcalho.
Marble, o mármore.
a precious Stone, a pedra precioſa.
a Jewel, a jóya.
a Diamond, a diamente.
a Brilliant, o brilhante.
a Roſe, a roſa.
a Saphire, a zafíra.
a Chryſolite, a criſolita.
an Emerald, a eſmeralda.
a Jaſper, o jaſpe.
an Agate, a agatha.
an Amethiſt, a matiſta.
a Ruby, o rubím.
a Turkeiſe, a turqueſa.
a Cornelian, a Cornelina.
a Glaſs, o vidro.
a Cryſtal, o criſtál.
a Pearl, a pérola.
a Coral, o corál.

Of Herbs and Flowers, *De ervas e flores.*

an Herb, a erva.
a Flower, a flor.
Graſs, a erva.

Flax,

Flax, o linho.
Hemp, a cánhamo.
a Stalk, o talo.
a Plant, a planta.
an Artichoke, a alcachofra.
Bean, a fava.
French-Beans, os féyjoins.
a Carrot, a cenóyra.
a Cucumber, o pepino.
a Cabbage, a cóuve.
a Colliflower, a cóuve de flor.
eatable Herbs, as ortaliſas.
Garlick, o alho.
a Gourd, a calabaça.
Lettice, a alface.
a Leek, o porro.
a Melon, o melám.
Muſtard, a Moſtarda.
a Muſhroom, o cugúmelo, o fungo.
an Onion, a cebola,
a Radiſh, o rabo.
Horſe-radiſh, a Marréca.
Turnip, o nabo.
Anis, a erva doce.
Baulm, a erva cidréira.
Baſil, a baſilica.
Borrage, as borrágems.
Burnet, a pimpinela.
Camomile, a camomila.
Caraways, a caravéa.
Chichory, chicoréa.
Creſſes, o maſtruço.
Endive, a ſcaróla.
Fennel, o fenolho.
Hop, o pé de gallo, lúpulos.
Hyſſop, o iſopo.
Jeſſamin, o jaſmin.
Lavender, a lavéndo.
a Lily, o lirio.
Marjoram, a manjorona.
Mint, a ortelãa.
a Nettle, a ortiga.
a Poppy, a dormadeira.
Roſemary, o alecrim.
Rue, a ruda.
a Roſe, a roſa.
Saffron, o aſafram.
Sage, a ſalva.
Sorrel, a azeda.
Spinage, as eſpinafres.
a Thiſtle, o cardo.
Thyme, o tumilho.
Trefoil, o trefolho.
a Tulip, a túlipa.
Tobacco, o tobaco.
a Violet, a viola.
Wormwood, a lozna.
Corn, o gram.
Barley, a ceváda.
Millet, o milho.
Rye, o ſentéyo.
Oat, a avéa.
Rice, o arroz.
Wheat, o trigo.
Meal or Flower, a farinha.
Bran, o farelho.
Pulſe, o legumem.
a Lentil, a lentilha.

a Pea,

a Pea, a ervilha.
a Beard (of Corn) a areſta.
an Ear, a eſpiga.
a Grain or ſingle Corn, hum gram.
Straw, a palha.
Seed, a ſemente.

Of Trees, Shrubs, and Fruits. *De árvores, matas e frúitos.*

a Bramble, a mata.
a Roſe-buſh, a rozéira.
a Vineyard, a vinha.
a Vine, a vide.
a Bunch of Grapes, o cacho de uvas.
a Grape, a uva.
a Tree, a árvore.
a Bough, o ramo.
a Leaf, a folha.
the Stick of a Tree, o tronco.
the Bark, a cortiça.
a Twig, a verga.
the Root, a raiz.
the Juice, o çumo.
Fruit, o frúito.
an Apple-tree, a macéira.
an Apple, a maçãa.
a Pear-tree, a peréira.
a Pear, a pera.
a Cherry-tree, a cerejéyra.
a Cherry, a cereja.
a Plumb-tree, a ameixéira.
a Plumb, a améixa.
a Fig-tree, a figuéyra.
a Fig, o figo.
an Olive-tree, a olivéyra.
an Olive, a azeitóna.
an Aſh-tree, o fréixo.
a Beech-tree, a fáya.
a Poplar-tree, o alemo.
an Elm, o olmo.
an Oak, o carvalho.
a Fir tree, o pinhéiro.
a Willow, o ſalguéiro.
a Nut-ſhell, a caſca dá noz.
a Kernel, o miolo.
a Wall-nut, a noz.
a Small-nut, a avelãa.
a Cheſnut, a caſtanha.
a Medlar, a néſpera.
an Almond-tree, a amendoéira.
an almond, a améndoa.
a Berry, a baga.
a Date, a támara.
a Quince, o marmélo.
an Orange, a laranja.
a Citron, a cidra.
a Lemon, o limám.
an Apricot, o damaſco.
a Peach, o péſſego.
a Strawberry, o morángam.
a Blackberry, a amora bráva.
a Mulberry, o amora.
Currants, as paſſas de coryntha.
a Pomegranate, a romãa.
a Nectarin, o durázio.

a Raſ-

a Rasberry, a amóra do mato.
Wood, o páo.
a Faggot, a fé ze.
a Wood, o boſque.
a Foreſt, a brenha.
a Grove, o arvoredo.
Spice, as eſpécias.
Cinnamon, a canela.
Cloves, os cravos da India.
Ginger, o gingibre.
Mace, a macia.
a Nutmeg, a noz moſcada.
Pepper, a pimenta.
Vinegar, a vinagre.
Frankincenſe, o encenſo.
Myrrh, a mirra.
Muſk, o almiſcár.
Roſin, a reſina.
Turpentine, a termentina.
Pitch, o pez.
Gum, a gomma.

Of Animals in general, *Dos animays em géral.*

a Creature, a criatura.
an Animal, o animál.
Life, a vida.
Senſe, o ſentido.
Sex, o ſexo.
the Sight, a viſta.
the Hearing, ouvido.
the Smell, o cheirár.
the Taſte, o goſto.
the Feeling, o tacto.
a Colour, a cor.
a Sound, o ſom.
a Smell, o chéiro.
a Voice, a voz.
a Taſte, o ſabor.
common Senſe, o ſenſú comum.
the Fancy, a fanteſía.
the Memory, a memoria,
Imagination, a imaginaçam.
a Male, o macho.
a Female, a fémea.
an Inſect, o inſecto.
a Bird, o páſſaro.
a Fiſh, a péixe.
a Beaſt or Brute, a beſta, o bruto.
a Man, o homem.

Of Inſects, *de inſectos.*

a Worm, o bicho.
an Ant, a formiga.
a Flea, a pulga.
a Louſe, o piolho.
a Moth, a traça.
a Silk-worm, o bicho de ſeda.
a Snail, o caracól.
a Spider, a aranha.
a Bug, o perſovejo.
a Fly, a moſca.
a Bee, a abelha.
a Butterfly, a barboleta.
a Gnat, o moſquito.
a Graſs-hopper, a lagoſta.
a Waſp, o beſpám.
a Viper,

a Viper, a víbora.
an Aſp, o aſpid.
a Snake, a cobra.
a Serpent, o ſerpente.
a Lizard, o lagarto.
a Frog, a ram.
a Toad, o ſapo.
a Scorpion, o eſcorpiám.
a Bee-hive, a colméa.
Honey, o mel.
a Honey-comb, o favo.
Wax, a cera.
a Swarm of Bees, o enxame de abelhas.
a Sting, o agulhám.

Of Birds, *de páſſaros*.

a Bird's Bill, o rico da ave.
a Wing, a aſa.
a Feather, a péna.
Down, a penúgem.
a Spur, a eſpora.
a Claw, a unha.
a Neſt, o ninho.
a Cage, a gayóla.
an Egg, o ovo.
a Shell, a caſca.
a Fowler, o caçador de aves.
Birdlime, o viſco.
a Bat, o morcégo.
a Blackbird, a mélroa.
a Capon, o capám.
a Cock, o gallo.
a Chicken, o pintám.
a Crane, o gróu.
a Crow, a gralha.
a Cuckow, o cuco.
a Didapper, omergulhám
a Pigeon, a pomba.
a Turtle-dove, a rola.
a Ring-dove, o pombo torcaz.
a Pigeon-houſe, o pombal.
a Duck, a adem.
an Eagle, a águia..
a Falcon, o falcám.
a Goldfinch, o pintaſilgo.
a Gooſe, o pato.
a Gull, a gaivóta.
an Hawk, o açór.
a Hen, a galinha.
a Heron, a garça.
a Jackdaw, a gralhinda.
a King's-fiſher, a picapéize.
a Kite, o minhoto.
a Lark, a cotovía.
a Nightingal, o rouxinól.
an Owl, a curúja.
a Screech-owl, o búfo.
an Oſtrich, o aveſtrúz.
a Parrot, o papagáyo.
a Partridge, a perdiz.
a Peacock, o pavám.
a Felican, o pelicano.
a Pheaſant, o faiſão.
a Pye, a pega.
a Quail, o codorniz.
a Raven, o corvo.
a Snipe, o narcéjo, francolim.
a Sparrow, o pardál.

a Star-

a Starling, o eſtorminho.
a Stork, a cegonha.
a Swallow, a andorinha.
a Swan, o cirne, ciſne.
a Teal, o marreco.
a Thruſh, o tordo.
a Turkey, o perú.
a Turkey-hen, a perúa.
a Vulture, o abutre.
a Wagtail, a pezpita.
a Wood-cock, a galinhóla.

Of Fiſhes, *de péixes.*

a Fiſh, a péixe.
the Gills, as guelras da péixe.
the Fins, as barbatanas.
the Scale, a eſcama.
a Shell-fiſh, o mariſco de concha.
a Shell, a concha.
a Fiſherman, o peſcador.
a Net, a rede.
an Angle-rod, a cana de peſcar.
a Line, a ſedela.
a Hook, o anzól.
a Bait, a iſca.
a Plummet, o prumo.
a Fiſhmonger, o peſcadéiro.
Salt-fiſh, o badejo.
a Barbel, o barbo.
a Cockle, a améijoa.
a Cod-fiſh, a peſcada.
a Creviſe, o caranguéjo.
a Dolphin, o golfinho.
an Eel, a enguía, o eyro.
a Gudgeon, o cadoz.
a Herring, o arenque.
a Lamprey, a lampréa.
a Mackrel, a ſarda.
a Mullet, a teínha.
Muſcles, os meixilhóens.
an Otter, a lontra.
an Oyſter, a oſtra.
a Salmon, o ſalmám.
a Shrimp, o camaram.
a Sole, a ſolha.
a Sturgeon, a péixe ſolho.
a Thornback, a raya,
a Tortoiſe, a tartaruga, o cágado.
a Trout, a trúita.
a Whale, a baléa.
a Whiting, o fanéco.

Of Beaſts, *de feras ou beſtas.*

a Beaſt, a fera, beſta.
a labouring Beaſt, o jumento.
Cattle, o gado.
an Herd, a manada de gado.
a Hide, o cóuro.
a Horn, o corno.
a Hoof, a unha.
a Mane, a coma.
a Briſtle, a ſeda de porco.
a Tail, o rabo, a cáuda.
an Ape, o bugío.

an Aſs, o aſno.
a Badger, o texúgo.
a Bear, o urſo.
a Beaver, o caſtór.
a Bull, o tóuro.
a Camel, o camélo.
a Calf, a vitela.
a Cat, o gato.
a Coney, o coélho.
a Cow, a vaca.
a Crocodile, o crocodilo.
a Deer, o corço, a corça.
a Fawn, o filho de corça.
a Hart or Stag, o cervo.
a Heifer, a novilha.
a Hind, a cerva.
a Dog, o cám.
a Bitch, a cadella.
a Whelp, o cachorro.
a Maſtiff, o raféiro.
a Spaniel, o cám de caça das aves.
a Mungrel, o cám meſliço.
a Dog's Collar, o colar do cam.
a Muzzle, o cabreſto.
a Dragon, o dragâm.
a Dromedary, o dromedario.
an Elephant, o elefante.
a Ferret, o forám.
a Fox, a raposa.
a He-goat, o cabrám bóde.
a She-goat, a cabra.
a Goat-herd, o cabréiro.
a Kid or Lamb, o cabrito.
a Hare, o lebre.
a Hedgehog, o ouriço cachéiro.
a Hog, o porco.
a Hog ſty, o chiquéiro de porcos.
Hogs Dung, o eſterco de porcos.
Hog-herd, o porquéiro.
wild Boar, o porco montez.
a tame Boar, o porco marrám.
a Sow, a porca.
a Pig, o leitám.
a Horſe, o cavallo.
a Mare, a egoa.
a Gelding, o cavallo capado.
a Race-horſe, o cavallo de carreira.
a Nag, a faca.
an ambling Nag, o quartám.
a Hackney-horſe, o cavallo de alluguér.
a Pack-horſe, o cavallo de bagagem.
a Groom, o eſtribéiro.
a Halter, o cabreſto.
a Lion, o leám.
a Lioneſs, a leóa.
a Monkey, o bugío.
a Mouſe, o ratinho,
a Mouſe-trap, a ratoéira.
a Mule, o mú.
an Ox, o boy.
a Panther, a onça.

a Rat,

a Rat, o rato.
a Sheep, a ovelha.
a Ram, o carnéyro.
a Wether, o carnéyro capado.
a Lamb, o cordéyro.
a Sheepfold, o curral de ovelhas.
a Shepherd, o paſtor.
a Sheep-hook, o cajado.
a Flock, a manada, o rebánho.
Wool, a lám.
a Fleece, o vela de lam.
a Squirrel, o ciúro.
a Tiger, a tire.
a Unicorn, o alicorno.
a Weeſel, a doninha.
a Wolf, o lobo.

Of Man, reſpecting his Age and Kindred, *do hómem, ao reſpéito de ſua ydade e parenteſco.*

Age, a ydade.
an Infant, a Babe, or Child, o menino, a menina.
a little Boy, a little Girl, a criança.
a Boy or Lad, o rapaz.
a Girl, a rapariga.
a young Man, o moço.
a young Woman, a moça, donzella.
a Virgin or Maid, a virgem.
a Bachelor or ſingle Perſon, hum (homem) ſoltéyro
a Maid or ſingle Woman, huma (mulher) ſoltéyra.
a Man, o homem, varám.
a Woman, a mulher.
an old Man, o velho.
an old Woman, a velha.
a Lover, o amante, enamorado, amigo.
a Miſtreſs, a amiga.
a Bridegroom, o nóyvo.
a Bride, a nóyva.
a Husband, o marido.
a Wife, a mulher.
a Marriage or Wedding, o caſamento.
a Kin or Kinſman, o parente, aliado.
the Anceſtors, os anteceſſores.
Poſterity, os ſucceſſores.
a Genealogy or Pedigree, a genelozia.
a Grandfather, o avó.
a Grandmother, a avó.
a Father, o páy.
a Mother, a máy, máem.
a great Grandſon, o biſnetto.
a Grandſon, o netto.
a great grand daughter, a biſnetta.
a Granddaughter, a netta.
a Son, o filho.

a Daughter,

a Daughter, a filha.
a Brother, o irmám.
a Siſter, a irmãa.
a Father-in-law, o ſogro.
a Mother-in-law, a ſogra.
a Son-in-law, o genro.
a Daughter-in law, a nora.
a Brother-in-law, o cunhado.
a Siſter-in-law, a cunhada.
a Step-father, o padraſto.
a Step-mother, a madraſta.
a Step-ſon, o enteado.
a Step-daughter, a enteada.
an Uncle, o tío.
an Aunt, a tía.
a Nephew, o ſobrinho.
a Neice, a ſobrinha.
a Couſin-german or firſt Couſin, o primo, a prima irmam.
a ſecond Couſin, o primo ſegundo, a prima.
a Widower, o viuvo.
a Widow, a viuva.
an Heir, o heredéiro.
an Heireſs, a heredéira.
an Orphan, o orfám.
a God-father, o padrinho.
a God-mother, a comadre.
a God-ſon, o afilhado.
a God-daughter, a afilhada
a Baſtard, o baſtardo, a baſtarda.
Twins, os gémeos.
a Giant, o gigante.
a Dwarf, o pigméo.
an Acquaintance, a Friend o conhecido, o amigo, a conhecida, a amiga.
a Woman in Childbed, a mulher parida.
a Midwife, a partéyra.
a Nurſe, a ama de léite, a ama.
a Delivery or Birth, o parto.
a Miſcarriage, o mao parto.
an Eſtate, o eſtado, a fazenda.
the laſt Will, o teſtamento.

Of the Parts of a Man's Body, *dás partes do corpo de hum homem.*

the Head, a cabeça.
the Trunk, o tronco.
a Limb, o membro.
the Hair, o cabello.
the Ear, a orelha.
the Temples, as fontes dá cabeça.
the Face or Countenance, o roſtro, a cara.
the Forehead, a teſta, a fronta.
a Wrinkle, a arruga.
the Eye, o olho.

the Eyelid, a capella dó olho.
the Eyebrow, a ſobrancelha.
a Noſe, o nariz.
a Mouth, a boca.
a Chin, a barba.
the Noſtrils, as ventas dó nariz.
a Lip, o béyço.
a Cheek, o queyxáda.
the Tongue, a língua.
the Palate, o paladár.
the Throat, o garganta.
the Neck, o peſcoço.
the Breaſt or Cheſt, o péito.
the Boſom, o céyo.
a Breaſt, a mama, a tetta, o péito.
the Nipple, o bico do péito.
the Back, as coſtas.
a Shoulder, o hombro.
the Side, o lado.
the Body, o corpo.
the Belly, a barriga.
the Navel, o embigo.
the Groin, a verilha.
a Loin, o lombo.
the Breech, o cú.
the Buttocks, as nalgas.
an Arm, o braço.
the Elbow, o cotovélo.
a Hand, a mám.
the Fiſt, o punho.
the Palm of the Hand, a palma du mam.
the Thumb, o polegar.
a Finger, o dedo.
the Right Hand, a mam deréyta.
the Left Hand, a mam eſquerda.
a Nail, a unha.
the Hip, a coxa.
the Thigh, a coxa da perna.
the Knee, o joelho.
the Leg, a perna.
the Ancle, o artelho.
the Heel, calcanhar.
the Foot, o pé.
the Sole of the Foot, a planta do pée.
a Toe, o dedo do pée.
Fleſh, a carne.
the Skin, a pelle.
Fat, a gordura.
a Bone, o oſſo.
Marrow, o tutano.
a Griſtle, a cartilágem.
the Brain, o cérebro.
a Nerve, o nervo.
the Bowels, as entranhas.
the Heart, o coraçam.
the Lungs, os bofes.
Breath, a reſpiraçam, o alento.
the Stomach, o eſtómago.
the Guts, as tripas.
the Liver, o fígado.
the Kidney, o rim.
the Bladder, a bexiga.
a Tooth, o dente.
the Ribs, as coſtellas.
Blood, o ſangue.
Choler, a cóllera.

Gall, o fel.
Milk, o léite.
Spittle, a ſaliva.
Sweat, o ſuór.
a Tear, a lágrima.
Piſs or Urine, a ourína.
Excrements, os eſcrementos.

Of Diſeaſes and Remedies, *de doenças e remedios*.

a Diſeaſe, a doença.
a Phyſician, o médico.
Phyſick, a mezinha.
a Surgeon, o çurgião.
an Apothecary, o boticário.
a Wound, a ferida, chaga.
a Scar, a cecatriz.
Smart or Pain, o dor.
a Blow or Stroke, o açoute.
Death, a morte.
an Ague, a terçám.
a quartan Ague, a quartám.
a Bunch or Hump-back, a córcova.
the Conſumption, a tiſica.
a Cough, a toſſe.
the Colick, a cólica.
the Cramp, a caymbra.
the Dropſy, a hydropezía.
a Cold, o catarro, reſfriado.
the King's Evil, as alporcas.
a Fever, a febre.
the falling Sickneſs, a gota coral.
a Fit, o acceſſo.
the French-pox, as bóubas.
the Gout, a gota.
a Hoarſeneſs, a ronquéyra.
a Hickup, o ſaluço.
the Itch, a ſarna.
an Impoſthume, a poſtema.
a Lethargy, o letargo.
a Looſeneſs, as cámaras.
Madneſs, o doudíce.
the Meaſles, o ſarampo.
the Plague, a peſte.
the Palſy, a parlezía.
the Pleuriſy, a pleuris.
a Rupture, a potra.
the Scurvy, o ſcorbutu.
the Stone, a pedra.
the Small-pox, as bexigas.
an Aſthma, a aſma.
a Wart, a verruga.
a Medicine, o medicamento.
a Remedy, o remédio.
a Poiſon, o veneno.
an Ointment, o inguento.
a Plaiſter, o empraſto.
Blood-letting, a ſangría.
Health, a ſaude.
Strength, a força.
Vigour, o vigór.

Of

Of the Affections of the Mind, and the Actions and Qualifications of Man, *dás affeiçoens dá mente, e dás auçoens e qualidades do homem.*

a Mind, a mente.
an Idea, a ydea.
Memory, a memoria.
Underſtanding, o entendimento.
Reaſon, a razám.
Judgment, o juizo.
a Will, a vontade.
a Fantaſy, a fantaſía.
an Opinion, a opiniám.
Knowledge, a ſciencia.
Prudence, a prudencia.
an Error, o erro.
a Virtue, a vertude.
Patience, a paciéncia.
Conſtancy, a conſtáncia.
Charity, a caridade.
Humility, a humilidade.
Civility, a corteſía.
Temperance, a temperança.
Chaſtity, a caſtidade.
Modeſty, a modéſtia.
Compaſſion, a compaixám.
Friendſhip, a amizade.
Thankfulneſs, a gratidám
Generoſity, a generoſidade.
a Vice, o vicio.
Covetouſneſs, a cobiça.
Pride, a ſoberba, a vaidade.
Deceit, o engano.
Craft, a ſutileza.
Lazineſs, a preguiça.
Malice, a malicia.
Lewdneſs, a lacivia.
Impudence, a deſvergonha.
Cruelty, a crueldade.
Ingratitude, a ingratidám.
a Paſſion, a paixám.
Love, o amor.
Hatred, o odio.
Anger, a cólera.
Envy, a emveja.
Pleaſure, o goſto.
Joy, a alegría.
Grief, a dór.
Sadneſs, a triſteza.
Affliction, a afflicçám.
Faith, a fé.
Hope, a eſperança.
Fear, o temor.
Jealouſy, os ciumes.
Dread, o medo.
Deſpair, a deſperaçam.
Courage, o animo.
Cowardice, a covardía.
Shame, a vergonha.
Power, o poder.
Help, o ſocorro, a ajuda.
a Work, a obra, o trabalho.
Buſineſs, o negócio.
a Charge, o cargo.

an Office, o officio.
a Counſel, o conſelho.
an Art, a arte.
Care, o cuidado.
Study, o eſtudo.
Application, a applicação.
Delay, a detenza.
Haſte, a preſſa.
an Action, a acçám.
Fortune, a fortuna.
Proſperity, a proſperidade.
Happineſs, a felicidade.
Misfortune, a deſgraça.
Honour, a honra.
Infamy, a infámia.
Chance, a ſorte.
Riches, a riqueza.
Poverty, a pobreza.
Want, a neceſſidade.
Abundance, a abundancia.
Loſs, a perda.
Gain, o ganho, o provéito.
Wearineſs, a fatiga.
Reſt, o deſcanço.
Hunger, a fome.
Thirſt, a ſede.
Sleep, o ſono.
a Dream, o ſonho.
Loathing, o deſgoſto, a adverçám.

Of Meat and Drink, *de manjares e de beber.*

Meat, a comida.
Victuals, o alimento.
Drink, a bebida.
Proviſion, a proviſam.
Bread, o pam.
the Cruſt, a codia.
the Crum, o miolo.
Butter, a mantéiga.
Cheeſe, o quéijo.
Milk, o léite.
Cream, a natta.
Fleſh-meat, a carne.
Bacon, o toucinho.
a Ham, o prezunto.
Broth, o caldo.
Soop, a ſopa.
a Cake, o bolo.
Sauce, a ſalſa.
Minc'd-meat, o picado.
Roaſt-meat, o aſſado.
Sweet-meats, as confeituras.
a Sallet, a ſalada.
the Deſert, a ſobremeſa.
a Tart, a tortilha.
a Paſty or Pie, o paſtel.
Boil'd-meat, a carne cozida.
a Sauſage, o ſalchicho.
Beef or Ox-fleſh, vaca, a carne de vaca.
Mutton or Sheep's-fleſh, cordéiro, ou carne de cordéiro.

Pork

Pork or Hog's-fleſh, porco, ou carne de porco.
Veal or Calf's-fleſh, vitela, ou carne de vitela.
Veniſon, carne de veado.
a Cook, o cozinhéiro.
Oil, o azéite.
Vinegar, o vinagre.
a Breakfaſt, o almoço.
a Dinner, o jantár.
a Supper, a céa.
Beer, a cervéja.
Wine, o vinho.
Cyder, a cidra, o vinho de maçãas.
a Feaſt, o banquete.
a Gueſt, o convidado.
a Table, a meſa.
a Table-cloth, a toalha da meſa.
a Napkin, a guardanapo.
a Trencher, a trincha.
a Salt-ſeller, o ſaléiro.
Salt, o ſal.
a Knife, a faca.
a Fork, o garfo.
a Diſh, o prato.
a Pottinger, a tigela.
a Plate, o pratinho.
a Spoon, a colher.
a Baſon, a bacia.
a Towel, a toalha.
a Cup, o copo.
a Flaggon, o fraſco.
a Jug, o púcaro.
a Bottle, a garrafa, botelha.

Of Cloathing, *de veſtido.*

Cloth, o pano.
Silk, a ſeda.
Cotton, o algodám.
Velvet, o veludo.
Wool, a lãa.
Linen, o lenço.
Lace, a renda.
a Garment, o veſtido.
Mourning Cloaths, o veſtido de luto.
a Hat, o chapéo.
a Cap, o bonéte.
a Peruke, a peruca.
a Shirt, a camiſa.
a Waiſtcoat, a veſtia.
a Pair of Breeches, os calçóens.
a Morning-gown, a róupa de chambre.
Stockings, as méyas.
a Garter, a jaretéira, a fáixa.
a Cloſe-coat, a caſaca.
an Upper-coat, o gabinardo.
a Riding-coat, o capote.
a Cloak, a capa.
a Cravat, a garavata.
a Pocket, a algibéira.
a Button, o botam.
a Sleeve, a manga.
a Button-hole, as caſas de botóens.
a Shoe, o çapato.
a Slipper, a chinela.
a Boot, a botta.

a Spur, a eſpóra.
a Girdle or Belt, o cingidóuro.
an Apron, o avental.
a Bracelet, as manilhas.
Ear-rings, as arrecadas.
a Fan, o leque, abano.
a Glove, a luva.
a Handkerchief, o lenço.
a Manteau, o manto, capelo.
a Necklace, o colar.
a Maſk, a maſcara.
a Neckhandkerchief, o lenço do peſcoſo.
a Petticoat, a ſáya.
a Woman's Gown, o veſtido de mulhér.
a Buckle, a fivella.
a Ring, o annél.
a Hood, a tóuca.
a Chain, a cadéa.

Of Buildings, *de edificios.*

a Building, o edificio.
a Houſe, a caſa.
a Cottage, a choupana.
a Palace, o palacio.
a Caſtle, o caſtelo.
a Bath, o banho.
a Bridge, a ponte.
Common-ſewer, o cano do deſpejo.
a Wall, a parede.
a Corner, o canto.
a Gate, a porta.
a Door, a porta.
the Entry, a entrada.
a Hall, a ſalla.
a Cieling, céo dó aposento.
a Cloſet, o gabinete.
a Kitchen, a cozinha.
a Floor, o chão.
the Stairs, a eſcada.
a Chamber, o aposento.
a Chimney, o chimené.
a Hearth, a foguéira.
a Window, a janela.
the Roof of the Houſe, o tecto.
a Pillar, o pilár.
a Vault, a boveda.
a Poſt, o poſtigo.
a Lock, a fechadura.
a Key, a chave.
a Cellar, a adega.
the Stable, a eſtrebaria.
Oven, o forno.
a Wall, o poço.
a Pump, a bomba.
a City, a cidade.
a Town, a villa.
a Suburb, o arrebalde.
a Street, a rúa.
a Fortification, a fortaleza.
a Market, a praça.
an Inn, a pouſada.
a Workman, o obréiro.
a Hatchet, o machado.
a Hammer, o martello.
a Saw, a ſerra.
a File, a lima.
a Wedge, a cunha.
a Ruler,

a Ruler, a regra.
Glue, a grude.
a Nail, o cravo.
a Brick, o ladrilho.
Timber, a madéira.
a Board, a taboínha.
a Tile, o tijolo.

Of Houſhold-ſtuff or Furniture, *de alfáyas.*

a Chair, a cadéyra.
a Stool, a trepeſſa.
a Bench, o banco.
an Arm'd-Chair, a cadéyra de mams.
a Couch, a cama de repóuſo.
a Cradle, o berço.
a Bed, a cama.
Curtains, as curtinas.
a Blanket, o cobertor.
Sheets, os lançóes.
a Carpet, o tapete.
a Picture, a pintura.
a Picture or Reſemblance of any Perſon, o retrato.
a Statue, a ſtátua.
a Looking-glaſs, o eſpelho.
a Broom, a eſcóva.
a Grate, as grelhas.
a Sieve, a panéyra.
a Mortar, o almirez.
a Peſtle, o almofariz.
a Pair of Tongs, as tenázas.
a Fire-ſhovel, a pãa.
a Lamp, a lámpada.
a Candleſtick, o candiéyro.
a Candle, a candéya.
a Wax-taper, o cirio.
a Box, a caixa.
a Coffer or Cheſt, a arca, o cofre.
a Basket, o ceſto.
a Tun, o tonnél.
a Pitcher, o jarro.
a Veſſel, o vaſo.
a Hogſhead, o quarto.
a Pipe, a pipa.
a Barrel, o barril.
a Tap, o eſpicho.
a Cork, o ſobro.
a Kettle, o caldeirám.
a Spit, o eſpeto.
a Ladle, o golherám.
a Sponge, a eſponja.
a Pair of Bellows, o fóle.
a Chamber-pot, o ourinól.
a Privy, a privada.
a Wheel, a roda.
a Comb, o péntem.
a Needle, a agulha.
a Pin, a alfinete.
a Razor, a navalha.
a Pair of Spectacles, os ócolos.
a Bruſh, a eſcova, baſſóura.

Of the Country, *da campanha.*

a Village, a aldéa.
a Country-houſe, a quinta.
a Barn, o celéyro.
a Court-yard, o páteo.
a Field, o campo.
a Meadow, o prado.
a Garden, o jardím.
an Orchard, o pomár.
a Hedge, a ſebe.
a Gardener, o jardinéiro.
a Farmer, o quintéiro.
a Countryman, o villám.
a Plough, o harado.
Dung, o eſterco.
a Fork, a forca.
a Sickle or Scythe, a fóuce.
a Flail, o mangual de debulhar.
a Spade, a emxada.
a Wheel-barrow, o carreto.
a Cart, a charreta.
a Waggon, o carro.
a Highway, a eſtrada réal.
a Way, o caminho.
a Journey, a jornada
a Joyage, o viágem.
a Coach, o coche.
a Coachman, o cochéiro.
a Carter, o carroéiro.
an Axle-tree, o éixo.
a Pole, o timám.
a Wheel, a roda.
a Bridle, o fréyo.
a Halter, o cabreſto.
the Reins, as rédeas.
a Yoke, o jugo.
a Whip, o açoute.
a Spur, a eſpóra.
a Saddle, a ſella.
a Stirrup, o eſtribo.

Of Societies, Dignities, Handicraftſmen, Muſick, and Games, *das ſociedades, dignidades, dos artifices, dá muſica e dos jogos.*

a Family, a familia.
a Republick, a republica.
a Kingdom, o réyno.
an Empire, o império.
a Maſter, o amo, o ſenhóra.
a Miſtreſs, a ama, a ſenhóra.
a Man-ſervant, o criado o ſervo, o lacáyo.
a Maid-ſervant, a criada,
a Citizen, o cidadám.
a Magiſtrate, o mageſtrado.
an Emperor, o emperadór.
an Empreſs, a emperatriz.
a King, o réy.
a Queen, a raynha.
a Prince, o principe.
a Princeſs, a princeſſa,

a Duke,

a Duke, o duque.
a Dutcheſs, a duqueza.
a Marquis, o marquéz.
a Marchioneſs, a marqueſa.
a Count or Earl, o conde.
a Counteſs, a condeza.
a Viſcount, o viſconde.
a Viſcounteſs, a viſcondeſa.
a Baron, o barám.
a Baroneſs, a baroneſa.
a Nobleman, o nobre.
a Knight, o cavalhéyro.
a Gentleman, o fidalgo.
the People, o povo.
a Stranger, o foraſtéiro.
the Mob or Rabble, o vulgo.
a Crowd, a multidám.
a Nation, a naçám.
a Crown, a coróa.
a Scepter, o cetro.
a Throne, o trono.
a Court, a corte.
a Vice-roy, o vice réy.
an Ambaſſador, o embaixador.
an Envoy, o enviado.
a Governor, o governador.
a Reſident, o reſidente.
the Lord Chancellor, o chancelor mór.
the Lord Chamberlain, o camaréiro mór.
the Lord Steward, o mor domo mayór.
the Lord Treaſurer, o teſouréyro mór.
a Privy Counſellor, o conſelheiro do conſelho privado.
a Secretary of State, o Secretario de eſtado.
a Courtier, o corteſám.
a Trade, o officio.
a Handicraftſman, o artifices.
an Armourer, o eſpingardeiro.
a Barber, o barbéyro.
a Bookſeller, o livréyro.
a Blackſmith, o ferréyro.
a Maſon or Bricklayer, o pedréyro.
a Butcher, o carnicéyro.
a Cabinet-maker, o caixinhéyro.
a Carpenter, o carpintéyro.
a Chandler, o candiéyro.
a Cobler, o remendám.
a Collier, o carvoéyro.
a Confectioner, o confeitéyro.
a Cooper, o toneléyro.
a Cutler, o faquéyro.
a Dyer, o tinturéyro.
a Farrier, o ferradór.
a Fruiterer, o frutéiro.
a Girdler, o cinturéyro.
a Glaſier, o vidracéyro.
a Goldſmith, o pratéiro.
a Grocer, eſpecéiro.
a Hatter, o chapeléyro.

a Hoſier, o meéyro.
a Joiner, o mercenéyro.
a Mountebank, o charlatám.
a Laundreſs, a lavandéira.
a Merchant, o mercador.
a Miller, o moléiro.
a Mercer, o merciéyro.
a Painter, o pintor.
a Paſtry-cook, o paſteléyro.
a Packer, o embalador.
a Perfumer, o perfumador.
a Plumber, o chumbéiro.
a Porter, o marriola.
a Potter, o olléyro.
a Poulterer, o galinhéiro.
a Printer, o imprimidor.
a Rope-maker, o cordéyro.
a Taylor, o alfayáte.
a Shoe-maker, o çapatéyro.
a Stage-player, o comediante.
a Stone-cutter, o ſcultor de pedras.
a Sword-cutler, o eſpadéyro.
a Vintner, o tavernéiro.
a Weaver, o teſſedor.
a Workman, o obréyro.
an Apprentice, o apprendiz.
a Muſician, o múſico.
an Inſtrument of Muſick, o inſtrumento múſico.
the Harpſicord, o crávo.
the Harp, a harpa.
the Lute, o aláude.
a Flute, a fláuta.
a Violin, a rebeca, o violim.
a Baſs-Viol, o rebecám.
a String, a corda.
a Bow, o arco.
the Bridge, o ponte.
a Tone or Sound, o ſom.
a Diverſion, a diverſám.
a Play or Game, o jogo.
a Dye, o dado.
a Game of Draughts, o jogo de tablas.
the Game of Cheſs, o jogo de enxadres.
a Game of Charts, o jogo de cartas.
a Ball, a pela.
a Racket, a raqueta.

Of a School and Learning, *dá eſcola, e dô apprender.*

a Maſter or Teacher, o méſtre.
a Scholar, o diſcipulo.
Reading, a lectura, o ler.
Writing, a ſcritura.
a Diſcourſe, o diſcurſo.
a Language, a língoa.
an Oration, a oraçám.

a Ser-

a Sermon, o ſermám.
a Letter, a letra.
a Sentence, a ſentença.
a Syllable, a ſílaba.
a Word, a palávra.
a Letter, a carta.
a Book, o livro.
a Treatiſe, o tratado.
a News-paper, as novas, a gazeta.
an Author, o autor.
a Title, o titulo.
a Leaf, a folha.
a Page, a página.
a Pen, a pena.
Ink, a tinta.
an Inkhorn, o tintéiro.
Paper, o papel.
a Quire of Paper, a mam de papel.
a Sheet of Paper, a folha de papel.
a Parchment, o pergaminho.
a Pen-knife, o canivete.
a Line, a linha.
a Rule, a regra.
a Rod, a vara.
a Study, o eſtudo.
a Science, a ciencia.

Of Eccleſiaſtical Affairs, *das cóuſas eccleſiaſticas.*

a Church, a igréja.
a Chapel, a capella.
a Cathedral Church, a igreja catedral.
an Archbiſhop, o arçobiſpo.
a Biſhop, o biſpo.
a Prieſt or Miniſter, o ſacerdote, miniſtro.
a Curate, o cura.
a Deacon, o decano.
a Reader, o leitor.
a Clerk, o clérigo.
an Elder, o anciám.
a Sexton, o ſacriſtám.
a Chaplain, o capelám.
Religion, a religiám.
an Altar, o altar.
a baptiſing Font, a pia de baptiſmo.
an Organ, o órgam.
a Pulpit, o púlpito.
a Pew, o banco.
the Bible, a biblia.
the Teſtament, o teſtamento.
the Goſpel, o evangelho.
the Steeple, o campanario.
a Bell, o ſino.
a Church-yard, o adro.
a Grave, o ſepulcro.
a Funeral, o enteramento.
a Monument, o moymento.

Of Judicial Affairs, *das cóuſas judiciays.*

a Government, o governo.
a Court of Juſtice, a corte de juſtiça.

a Law,

a Law, a léy.
an Example, o exemplo.
a Mayor, o alcáide.
a Judge, o juiz.
an Advocate, o letrodo, avogado.
a Witneſs, a teſtimunha.
a Clerk or Secretary, o eſcrivám.
a Bailiff, o aguazil.
a Common Crier, o pregoéyro.
Right, o diréito.
Juſtice, a juſtiça.
Puniſhment, o caſtigo.
a Sentence, a ſentença.
a Hangman or Executioner, o algoz.
a Crime, o crimem.
Deceit, o engano.
a Fault, a culpa.
Fraud, a fraude.
Theft, o furto.
Treaſon, a traiſám.
Villany, a maldade.
an Adulterer, o adulterio.
a Cut-throat, o aſſacino.
a Thief, o ladrám.
a Whore, a puta.
Baniſhment, o deſterro.
Death, a morte.
Infamy, a infámia.
a Fine, a penalidade, a multa.
a Priſon or Goal, a prizám.
Pardon, o perdám.
Favour, a graça, a favór.
a Gift or Preſent, a dávida, o dom.
Reputation, a reputaçám.
Authority, a autoridade.
Honour, a honra.
Money, o dinheiro.
Price, o preço.
Pay, a paga.
Praiſe, o louvór.
Wages, o ſalario.
a Recompence, a recompenſa.

Of War and Peace, *da guerra e paz.*

a Friend, o amigo.
Friendſhip, amizade.
an Alliance, a confederaçam.
Leiſure, a ocioſidade.
Safety, a ſegurança.
Quiet, o deſcanço.
Diſagreement, a diſcordia.
Danger, o perigo.
an Enemy, o inimigo.
a Tumult, o tumulto.
a Battle, a batalha.
a Combat, a peleja.
Ruin, a ruina.
a Siege, o cerco.
a Victory, a victória.
a Flight, a fugida.

a Con-

a Conqueror, o vencedor.
a General, o general.
an Admiral, a almiránte.
a Colonel, o coronel.
a Major, o ſargento mor.
a Captain, o capitám.
a Lieutenant, o tenente.
an Enſign, o alfarés.
a Serjeant, o ſargento.
a Corporal, o cabo da eſquadra.
a Trumpeter, o trombetéiro.
a Soldier, o ſoldado.
a Horſeman, o cavalhéiro.
a Dragoon, o dragám.
a Centinel, a ſentinela.
a Guard, a guarda.
a Foot-ſoldier, o ſoldado infante.
a Company, a companhia.
a Regiment, o regimento.
an Army, o exercito.
a Camp, o arrayál.
a Tent, a tenda.
a Flag or Colours, a bandéira.
Arms or Weapons, as armas.
a Club, a maça.
a Sword, a eſpada.
a Sling, a funda.
a Bow, o arco.
an Arrow, a ſetta.
Fire-arms, armas de fogo.
a Cannon, a peça de artilheria, canám.
a Gun, a eſpingarda,
a Piſtol, a piſtolete.
Gunpowder, a pólvora.
Shot, pelóuros miudos.
a Bullet, a balla.
a Cannon-ball, a balla de canám.
a Helmet, o capacete.
a Buckler or Shield, o eſcudo.
a Trumpet, a trombeta.
a Drum, o tambor.
a Kettle-drum, o atabále.

Of Ships, their Loadings, and mercantile Affairs, *de navios, ſus cargaçoens*, &c.

a Man of War, o náo de guerra.
a Merchant-man, o navio de carga.
a Sloop, a balandra.
a Fiſher-boat, a barca de peſcador.
a Galley, a galé.
a Ferry-boat, o barco de paſſagem.
a Boat, o batel.
a Cock-boat, a barqueta.
an Oar, o remo.

a Wa-

a Waterman or Rower, o reméyro.
a Fleet, a frota.
the Fore-deck, a próa.
the Stern, a popo.
the Keel, a quilha.
the Deck, as cubertas.
a Captain, o capitam.
a Cabin, a camarote.
the Helm, o leme.
the Stem, o eſpóram.
a Maſt, o maſta.
the Main-yard, a verga.
on board, a bordo.
between Deck, o conves.
a Sail, a vela.
the Main-ſail, a vela grande.
a Pulley, o carrilho.
a Rope, a corda.
a Cable, a amarra.
a Jack, os galhardetes.
the Streamer, a bandéira.
an Anchor, a áncora.
the Lanthorn, a linterna.
a Pole, a vara.
the Pump, a bomba.
the Sounding-line, o prúmo.
the Ballaſt, o laſtro.
the Compaſs, o compaſſo de mareár.
the Pilot, o piloto.
the Maſter, o meſtre.
a Mariner, o marinhéiro.
a Paſſenger, o paſſagéiro.
a Shipwright, o architecto de navios.
a Shipwreck, o naufrágio.
Proviſion, o baſtimento.
Loading, a cargaçam.
Unloading, a deſcarga.
a Contract, o contracto.
Freight, o frete.
a Bill of Lading, o conhecimento.
a Bill of Exchange, a letra de cambio.
a Policy, or Writing of Inſurance, a poliça ou eſcritura de ſeguro.
a Correſpondent, o correſpondente.
a Valuer, o valor.
a Partner, o companhéiro.
a Company, companhia.
Cuſtom or Duty, o deréito.
Entry, a entrada,
the Cuſtom-houſe, a alfándega.
Goods, as fazendas, géneros.
Merchandizes, mercadorias.
Averidge, a avaria.
Money, o dinhéiro.
Ready Money, dinhéiro de cantado.
Current Money, dinhéiro corrente.
a Bank-Note, huma nota de banco.
Money or Coin, a moeda.

Golden

Golden Coin, moeda dóuro.
Silver Coin, moeda de prata.
Copper Coin, moeda de cobre.
Credit, o crédito.
a Debt, a dívida.
a Debtor, o devedor.
a Creditor, o creditor.
a Caſh, a caixa.
a Caſhier, o caixéiro.
a Bankrupt, o quebrado.
a Banker, o cambiador.
the Exchange, o cambio.
the Bank, o banco.
a Counting-houſe, o contor.
a Book-keeper, o caixeiro.
a Man of Buſineſs, o homem de negocio.
a Merchant, o mercador.
a Deſk, o almario.
the Caſh-book, o livro de caixa.
the Clod-Book, o borrador.
the Journal, o jurnal.
the Ledger, o livro grande
an Account-current, a conta corrente.
an Account-ſale, a conta de venda.
the Poſt, o corréo.
Advice, o aviſo.
Order, a ordem.
a Letter, a carta.
an Anſwer, a repoſta.
a Bale, a bala.
a Packet, o paquete.
Effects, efféitos.
an Agent, o agente.
a Warehouſe, o almazém.
a Pattern, a moſtra.
Commiſſion, a commiſſão.
a Broker, o corredor.
Brokerage, o corretágem.
a Factor, o negociador.
Intereſt, o interes.
a Letter of Attorney, hum inſtrumento de procuração.
a Charter-party of a Freightment, carto ou inſtrumento de frettamento.
a Letter of Recommendation, huma letra de recommendação.
a Letter of Credit, a letra de credito.
Letters Patent, alvaras do Rey.
a Letter-carrier, o meſſagéiro.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

Nouns Adjective.

☞The Words mark'd with *c.* are of the common Gender, both Maſculine and Feminine.

ABLE, ſkilful, capáz, *c.*
agreeable, agradável, *c.*
all, todo, da.
alone, ſo, *c.*
alive, vivo, va.
antient, antíquo, qua.
another, óutro, tra.
any, qualquer, *c.*
bad, máo, mãa.
barbarous, bárbaro, ra.
barren, eſteril, *c.*
baſe, low, baixo, xa.
beautiful, bello, la.
big with Child, prenhe, *c.*
bitter, amargo, ga.
blind, cego, ga.
both, ambos, bas.
briſk, active, vivaz, *c.*
broad, largo, ga.
captive, captivo, va.
certain, certo, ta.
chaſte, caſto, ta.
chearful, gay, alegre, *c.*
charitable, caritativo, va.
cheap, baráto, ta.
chief, prinipal, *c.*
clean, limpo, pa.
cold, frio, a.
common, comum, múa.
couragious, animóſo, ſa.
covetous, cobiçoſa, ſa.
crafty, cunning, aſtuto, ta. ſotil, *c.*
contented, contento, ta.
crooked, curvo, va.
convenient, conveniente, *c.*
cruel, cruel, *c.*
courteous, cortes, civil, *c.*
dainty, delicado, da,
deaf, ſurdo, da.
dead, morto, ta.
dear, caro, ra.
deep, profundo, da.
delightful, deleitóſo, guſtoſo, ſa.
dextrous, deſtro, tra.
different, differente, *c.*
difficult, difficultoſo, ſa.
diligent, diligente, *c.*
diverſe, diverſo, ſa.
doubtful, duvidoſo, ſa.
drunk, bébado, da.
dry, ſeco, ca.
dirty, ſujo, ja.
each, cada hum, cada húa.
eaſy, facil, *c.*
elegant, elegante, *c.*
empty,

empty, vazio, zia.
equal, igual, *c.*
every one, qualquer, *c.*
faint, *feeble*, fraco, ca.
fair, branco, ca, rúivo, va
falſe, falſo, ſa.
faithful, fiel, *c.*
famous, famoſo, ſa.
fat, gordo, da.
few, póuco, ca.
firm, firme, *c.*
fit, apto, ta.
fooliſh, parvo, va, tonto, ta.
former, precedente, *c.*
fortunate, fortunado, da.
free, libre, *c.*
frequent, frequente, *c.*
freſh, freſco, ca.
full, chéyo, yâ.
generous, generoſo, ſa.
genteel, gentil, *c.*
glad, alegre, *c.*
godly, *pious*, *devout*, piadoſo, ſa, devoto, ta.
good, bom, bóa.
great, grande, *c.*
greedy, avarente, *c.*
guilty, culpado, da.
half, méyo, ya.
handſome, fermoſo, ſa.
happy, ditoſo, ſa, felíz, *c.*
hard, duró, ra.
hard, *difficult*, difficultoſo, ſa.
high, alto, ta.
hollow, cóncavo, va.
holy, ſanto, ta.
honeſt, honeſto, ta.
honourable, honorado, da.
how many, quantos?
how great, quanto? quam grande?
jealous, cióſo, ſa.
imperfect, imperféito, ta.
induſtrious, induſtrioſo, ſa
intire, intéiro, ra.
joyful, jocundo, da.
juſt, juſto, ta.
kind, favorável, *c.*
knowing, ſabido, da.
lame, coxo, xa.
large, largo, ga.
lazy, preguizoſo, ſa.
lean, magro, gra, fraco, ca.
learned, docto, ta.
left-handed, eſquerdo, da.
liberal, liberal, *c.*
like, ſemelhante, *c.*
little, piqueno, na.
little or few, póuco, ca.
lonely, sô zinho, ha.
long, longo, ga.
low, baixo, xa.
maimed, mocho, cha, aleijado, da.
manifeſt, manifeſto, ta, evidente, *c.*
many, muíto, ta.
mean, baixo, xa.
merciful, miſericordioſo, ſa.
merry, alegre, *c.*
middle, méyo, ya.
miſerable, miſerável, *c.*

modeſt, modeſto, ta.
moderate, moderado, da.
more, máis, *c.*
too much, demaſiado.
naked, nú, núa.
narrow, eſtréito, ta.
neat, pretty, lindo, da.
neceſſary, neceſſário, ria.
neither, nenhum nem óutro.
new, novo, va.
noble, nobre, *c.*
none, nenhum, hua.
old, velho, ha.
odious, tireſome, odioſo, emfadoſo, ſa.
pale, palido, da.
pleaſant, agradavel, *c.*
plentiful, copioſo, ſa.
powerful, poderoſo, ſa.
poor, pobre, *c.*
preſent, preſente, *c.*
pretty, lindo, da.
private, oculto, ta.
prodigal, pródigo, ga.
profane, profano, na.
profitable, proveitave, *c.*
proper (one's own) próprio, pria.
proſperous, próſpero, ra.
proud, ſoberbo, ba.
publick, público, ca.
pure, puro, ra.
quick or ſwift, promto, ta, acelerado, da.
rare, raro, ra.
raſh, temerário, ria.
raw, crú, crúa.
ready, promto, ta.
reſolute, determinado, da.
rich, rico, ca.
right, diréito, ta.
ripe, maduro, ra.
roaſted, aſſado, da.
rough, áſpero, ra.
round, redondo, da.
rude, uncivil, ruſtico, ca, deſcortez, *c.*
ſacred, ſagrado, da.
ſad, triſte, *c.*
ſafe, ſalvo, va.
ſalted, ſalgado, da.
ſame, meſmo, ma.
ſavage, bravo, va.
ſecret, ſecreto, ta.
ſecure, ſeguro, ra.
ſevere, ſevero, ra.
ſhort, brief, curto, ta, breve, *c.*
ſick, enfermo, ma, doente, *c.*
ſlow, vagaroſo, ſa.
ſmooth, lizo, za.
ſober, ſóbrio, bria.
ſoft, brando, da, mole, *c.*
ſound, ſão, ſãa.
ſour, azedo, da, agro, gra.
ſpreading, extended, eſtendido, da.
ſtill, quiet, aſſoſegado, da.
ſtinking, fedorento, ta.
ſtraight, eſtréito, ta.
ſtranger, eſtrangéiro, ra.
ſtrong, forte, *c.*
ſubtle, crafty, ſotil, ſagaz, *c.* aſtuto, ta.

ſuch

ſuch, tal, *c.*
ſure, ſeguro, ra.
ſweet, doce, *c.*
ſwift, ligéiro, ra.
tall, alto, ta.
tender, tenro, ra.
terrible, *cruel*, terríbel, cruél, *c.*
thankful, agradecido, da.
thick, groſſo, ſa.
thin, delgado, da.
tired, canſado, da.
torn, raſgado, da.
troubleſome, emfadoſo, ſa.
true, verdadéiro, ra.
vain, vam, vãa.
valiant, *ſtrong*, magnánimo, ma, forte, *c.*
ugly, féyo, ya.
unable, incapaz, *c.*
unmarried, *ſingle*, ſolteyro, ra.
uncivil, deſcortes, *c.*
unſavoury, *inſipid*, deſſaboróſo, ſa, inſavido, da.
utmoſt, extremo, ma.
wandring, vagabundo, da.
wanton, *laſcivious*, laſcívo, va.
weak, fraco, ca, debíl, *c.*
weary, *tired*, fatigado, canſado, da.
wet, húmido, molhado, da.
what mauner, que manéyra?
what number, que número?
which, qual, *c.*
whole, *all*, inteiro, ra, todo, da.
whoſoever, qualquer, *c.* quemquer, *c.*
wicked, malvado, da.
wild, bravo, va.
wiſe, prudente, *c.* ſábio, bia.
witty, *facetious*, ingenhoſo, ſa.
wonderful, milagroſo, ſa.
worſe, peiór, *c.*
worthy, dino, na.
wounded, chagado, da.
young, moço, ça.
zealous, zeloſo, ſa.

CHAP. III.

Of Numbers, *dós números.*

ONE, hum, húa.
two, dóus, duas.
three, tres, *c.*
four, quatro, *c.*
five, cinco, *c.*
ſix, ſéys, *c.*
ſeven, ſete, *c.*
eight, óuto, *c.*

nine, nove.
ten, dez.
eleven, onze.
twelve, doze.
thirteen, treze.
fourteen, catorze.
fifteen, quinze.
ſixteen, dez e ſéys.
ſeventeen, dez e ſete.
eighteen, dez e óuto.
nineteen, dez e nove.
twenty, vinte.
twenty-one, vinte e hum.
twenty-two, vinte e dous.
twenty-three, vinte e tres.
twenty-four, vinte e quatro.
twenty-five, vinte e cinto.
thirty, trinta.
forty, quarenta.
fifty, cincoenta.
ſixty, ſecenta.
ſeventy, ſetenta.
eighty, outenta.
ninety, noventa.
hundred, cem, cento.
two hundred, duzentos, tas.
three hundred, trecentos, tas.
four hundred, quatrocentos, tas.
five hundred, quinhentos, tas.
a thouſand, mil.
hundred thouſand, cem mil.
a million, milhão.

Of Ordinal Numbers, *dós números de ordem.*

the firſt, priméyro, priméyra.
the ſecond, ſegundo, da.
the third, tercéiro, ra.
the fourth, quarto, ta.
the fifth, quinto, ta.
the ſixth, ſexto, ta.
the ſeventh, ſeptimo, ma.
the eighth, outavo, va,
the ninth, nono, na.
the tenth, décimo, ma.
the eleventh, onzeno, na.
the twelfth, dozeno, na.
the thirteenth, trezeno, na
the fourteenth, catorzeno, na.
the fifteenth, quinzeno, na.
the ſixteenth, décimo ſexto, ta.
the ſeventeenth, décimo ſeptimo, ma.
the twentieth, vinteino, na.
the twenty-firſt, o vinte hum, a vinte húa.
the twenty-ſecond, o vinte dous.
the thirtieth, trintéino, na
the hundredth, centéſimo, ma.
the thouſandth, milléſimo, ma.
the middlemoſt, méyo, ya.
the laſt, último, ma.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

Of Colours, *dás cores.*

Shining, o, a lucente.
clear, claro, ra.
pale, pállido, da.
white, branco, ca.
grey, pardo, da.
pearl grey, cor de perla.
dark grey, pardo eſcuro.
Aſh Colour, cor de cinza.
dark, eſcuro, ra.
black, negro, gra.
brown, moreno, na, fuſgo, ga.
Cheſnut Colour, cor de caſtanha.
yellow, amarello, la.
Citron or Limon Colour, cor de cidram, lemam.
Orange Colour, cor de laranja.
blue, azúl, *c.*
Sky-blue, azúl celeſte.
Violet Colour, morado, da, violeto, ta.
purple, púrpura.
green, verde, *c.*
light green, verde claro.
Olive Colour, cor de azeytona.
dark green, verde eſcuro.
red, corado, vermelho.
Carnation, *Fleſh Colour*, encarnado.
Fire Colour, cor de fogo.
ſcarlet, eſcarlate, grana.
Roſe Colour, cor de roſa.
Cherry Colour, cor de cereija.
crimſon, carmeſi.
Brick Colour, vermelho bucarado.

CHAP. V.

A Collection of the moſt neceſſary and common Verbs, *Huma abreviação dós verbos mais neceſſarios e comums.*

To ſtudy, eſtudar.
to learn, aprender.
to read, lér.
to write, eſcrever.
to correct, corrigir.
to begin, começar.
to continue, continuár.
to end, acabar.
to do, fazer.
to know, conhecer.
to be able, poder.
to deſire or will, querer.

Of Speaking, *dó ſallar.*

to ſpeak, fallar.
to ſay, dizer.
to pronounce, pronunciar.
to converſe, converſar.
to be ſilent, callarſe.
to call, chamar.
to anſwer, reſponder.
to aſk, perguntar.

To eat and drink, *de comér e beber.*

to eat, comer.
to drink, beber.
to chew, maſtigar.
to ſwallow, engulir.
to cut, cortar.
to taſte, goſtar.
to faſt, jejunar.
to breakfaſt, almoçar.
to dine, jantar.
to ſup, cear.
to be hungry, ter fome.
to be thirſty, ter ſede.

To go to Bed, *de hir a cama.*

to lie down, deitarſe.
to go to bed, hir a cama.
to ſleep, dormir.
to watch, velar, vigiar.
to dream, ſonhar.
to wake, eſpertar, acordar do ſono.
to riſe, alevantarſe.

To dreſs one's ſelf, *de veſtirſe.*

to dreſs, veſtirſe.
to undreſs, quitar, deitar os veſtidos.
to put on the Hat, pór o chapéo.
to cover one's ſelf, cubrirſe.
to put on the Shoes, por os çapatos.
to put on the Stockings, por as méyás.
to waſh one's ſelf, lavarſe.

The Actions of Man, *as acçóens dó homem.*

to laugh, rir.
to cry, chorar.
to ſigh, ſuſpirar.
to ſneeze, eſpirar.
to blow, aſſoprar.
to whiſtle, aſſoviar.
to ſing, cantar.
to command, ordenar.
to obey, obedecer.
to hear, ouvir.
to ſmell, cheirar.
to ſpit, cuſpir.
to ſee, ver.
to ſweat, ſuar.
to feel, tocar.
to tremble, tremer.
to cough, tuſſir.
to look, olhar.

to pinch, belliſcar,
to ſcratch, aranhar.
to ſtrike, ferir.
to wound, chagar.
to give, dar.
to take, tomar.
to kill, matar.
to pay, pagar.
to owe, dever.
to ſwear, jurar.

Actions of Love, *acçóens de amor.*

to love, amar.
to careſs, acariciar.
to flatter, liſongear.
to embrace, abraçar.
to kiſs, beijar.
to ſalute, ſaudar.
to teach, enſinar.
to nouriſh, nutrir.
to correct, corregir.
to puniſh, punir.
to chaſtiſe, caſtigar.
to touch, tocar.
to whip, açoutar.
to deny, negar.
to defend, defender.
to beat, bater.
to hate, aborrecer.
to pardon, perdoar.
to diſpute, diſputar.
to quarrel, brigar, litigar.
to protect, emparar.
to abandon, deſamparar.
to bleſs, bendizer.
to curſe, maldizer.
to grant, conceder.

For the Sick, *pólos doentes.*

to dreſs, affeitar.
to cure, ſarar, curar.
to be better, ſe achar melhor.
to bleed, ſangrar.
to take Phyſick, tomar mezinha.
to purge, purgar.
to cut, cortar.
to prick, picar.
to examine, examinar.
to break, quebrar.
to heal, ſarar.

To buy, *por comprar.*

to buy, comprar.
to ſell, vender.
to cheapen, regatear.
to value, avaliar, eſtimar.
to meaſure, medir.
to pay, pagar.
to offer, offerecer.
to lend, empreſtar.
to borrow, pedir prefstado.
to engage, empenhar.
to cheat, enganar.
to gain, ganhar.
to loſe, perder.

For the Church, *póla igreija.*

to pray, rezar.
to preach, pregar.
to baptize, bautizar.
to ring the Bells, repicar os finos.

Actions of Motion, *acçoens de mover.*

to go, hir.
to walk, pacear.
to come, vir.
to return, tornar.
to ſtop, parar.
to march, marchar.
to run, correr.
to follow, ſeguir.
to flee, fugir.
to eſcape, eſcapar.
to depart, partir.
to advance, adiantar.
to retire, retirarſe.
to approach, chegar.
to turn, voltar.
to fall, cahir.
to ſlide, eſcorregar.
to hurt, fazer mal.
to arrive, chegar.
to enter, entrar.
to go out, ſahir.
to mount, ſubir.
to deſcend, decer, hir para baixo.
to ſit down, acentarſe.

Manual Actions, *acçóens de mãos.*

to work, trabalhar.
to touch, tocar.
to handle, apalpar.
to bind, attar.
to looſen, ſoltar.
to take away, tirar.
to take, tomar.
to rob, roubar.
to gather, colher.
to tear or rend, raſgar.
to preſent, apreſentar.
to receive, receber.
to hold, ter.
to break, quebrar, romper.
to hide, eſconder.
to cover, cubrir.
to diſcover, deſcubrir.
to dirty, ſujar.
to clean, limpar.
to rub, esfregar.
to ſhew, moſtrar.
to tickle, cocegar.
to ſcratch, aranhar.

Of Memory and Imagination, *dá memoria e imaginaçám.*

to remember, lémbrarſe.
to forget, eſquecer.
to think, cuidar.
to believe, crer.
to doubt, duvidar.
to ſuſpect, ſoſpeitar.

to obſerve, obſervar.
to take care, tomar cuidado.
to imagine, imaginar.
to wiſh, dezejar.
to hope, eſperar.
to fear, recear.
to aſſure, aſſegurar.
to judge, julgar.
to conclude, concluir.
to reſolve, reſolver.
to feign, diſſimular.
to grow angry, agaſtarſe.
to finiſh, acabar, finir.

Of Arts and Tradeſmen, *dás artes e artifices.*

to paint, pintar.
to engrave, eſculpir.
to draw, tirar.
to draw (as Painters do) traçar, debuxar.
to embroider, broſlar.
to enamel, eſmaltar.
to gild, dóurar.
to print, imprimir.
to work, trabalhar, obrar.

Of Shipping and mercantile Affairs, *dó navegar e negocios de mercadores.*

to embark, embarcar.
to load, carregar.
to inſure, aſſegurar.
to freight, fretar.
to ſail, navegar, dar à vela.
to unload, deſcarregar.
to riſk, aventurar.
to ſink, margulharſe.
to drown, affogar.
to recover, recobrar.
to eſcape, eſcapar.
to agree, eſtar dácordo.
to promiſe, prometer.
to oblige one's ſelf, obrigar ſe.
to declare, declarar.
to confeſs, confeſſar.
to ſign, aſſinar.
to correſpond, correſponder.
to ſtay, ficar.
to contract, contratar.
to charge to Account, carregar a conta.
to credit, abonar.
to pack or ſtow, arrumar.
to anchor, ancorar.
to certify, certificar.
to aſſign, aſſinar.
to ſeal, ſellar.
to confirm, confirmar.
to recover, cobrar.
to accept, acceitar.
to indorſe, endoſſar.
to draw, tirar.
to remit, remeter.
to demand, demandar.
to adviſe, aviſar.
to order, ordenar.
to conſign, conſignar.
to obligate one's ſelf, empenhar ſe.
to pack, embalar.

FAMILIAR
DIALOGUES
IN
Engliſh and *Portugueſe.*

Dialogue I.

Some Compliments.

GOOD Morrow (Day) Sir; how do you do?

Very well, God be thanked, at your Service.

Not very well.

I thank you, Sir, (a thouſand Years to you) I am your Servant.

How doth the Gentleman your Brother do?

He is in Health; he is well; but my Siſter is ill of a Fever and Ague.

I am glad to hear it. I am ſorry for it.

Pratica I.

Alguns comprimentos.

BONS dias, Senhor; como eſtá V. M.? (Voſſa Mercé.)

Múy bem, graças á Deos, para ſervir á V. M.

Não muy bom.

Agradeço, a V. M. mil ánnos, ſóu ſeu criado.

Como eſtá o Senhor ſeu irmão?

Eſtá com ſaude; eſtá bom; porem minha irmãa eſtá doente de huma febre e maléitas.

Folgo de ouvilo. A mim me peſa múito.

Sit

Sit down, Sir: Boy, give a Chair to the Gentleman.

It is not neceſſary; for I muſt go to make a Viſit to Mr. N.

Is he arrived in Safety, (in Health?)

Yes, Sir. It is Time for me to go.

You are in great Haſte, Sir; ſtay a while; for I want to ſee him too, and we will go together.

I will come back; I cannot ſtay now; good bye, I kiſs your Hands.

Acente ſe V. M. Rapáz, da ca huma cadéira ao Senhor.

Não he neceſſario; porque ey de fazer huma viſita ao Senhor N.

Chegóu ja em ſalvamento (com ſaude?)

Si Senhor. He tempo que eu me va.

V. M. eſtá muy apreſſado; eſpere hum pouco; que eu quero tambem vélo, e hiremos juntos.

Eu tornarey outra vez; agora não poſſo aguardar; a Deos, beijo as mãos de V. M.

Dialogue II.

Of riſing from Bed, and Dreſſing.

WHO knocks at the Door? who is there?

A Friend. Open the Door.

I aſk Pardon, Sir; is it you? I did not know who it was.

Walk in, Sir; you come very early; is there any body elſe?

No, Sir; but why are you ſo late in Bed?

Pratica II.

De alevantar e veſtirſe.

QUEM bate á porta? quem eſta ali?

Amigo. Abre a porta.

Perdóa Senhor, V. M. he? não ſabia quem era.

Entre Senhor, V. M. vem bem ſedo; eſtá cá alguem mais?

Não Senhor; mas porque eſta V. M. tam tarde na cama.

Becauſe

Becauſe I am very tired with my Journey; what a-Clock is it?

The Clock has ſtruck Ten.

Is it ſo late? I was miſtaken in my Reckoning.

You are lazy, Sir; make haſte, and riſe quickly.

Let me alone; I muſt ſleep yet longer, I have not ſlept well laſt Night, and my Head aches.

Don't you remember, Sir, that you have Buſineſs to do upon Change?

'Tis true, and for that Reaſon I muſt riſe. Boy, give me my Shoes and Stockings.

Where are they? I cannot find 'em.

Go to look for them; I believe they are under the Bed.

They are not there; I don't ſee them.

Put on your Breeches and Coat, and put on your Shoes.

Take out of the Cheſt a Cravat and Ruffles, and forget not to comb my Peruke.

Porque fico muy canſado de minha jornada; que hóras ſam?

O relogio deu dez horas.

Tam tarde he? fiquéy enganado ná minha conta.

V. M. He muy preguiçoſo; avie, e levanteſe de preſſa.

Déixame; ey de dormir ainda mais, não dormí bem ésta nóite; e me dóe a cabeça.

Não ſe lembra V. M. que tem negocios que fazer ná bolſa?

He verdade; e por ésta rezão he meſter que me alevante. Rapaz, da cá as méias e os çapatos.

Aónde eſtám? não os poſſo achar.

Vay buſcallos; créyo que eſtám em baixo dá cama.

Alí nam eſtam; eu não os véjo.

Veſte os calçóens e a caſaca; e calca os çapatos.

Tira dá caixa a gravata com punhos, e nam eſqueça de pentear a minha cabeléira.

Sir,

Sir, where is the Comb? I ſee none, neither of Horn or Box.

You'll find it on the Table behind the Looking-glaſs. Give me ſome clean Water to waſh my Hands, and a Towel.

Here are your Cloaths, Sir; but won't you put on a clean Shirt To-day?

Yes, I did not think on it, this is very dirty.

I don't wonder at it; for it is now three Days ſince you put it on clean.

Whoſe Fault is it?

Not mine, Sir, becauſe the Laundreſs is not come with your Linen as ſhe ought.

Go to her To-day, and bid her come and ſpeak with me To-morrow Morning early.

Sir, I don't ſee your Handkerchief.

May be they ſtole it out of my Coat Pocket laſt Night in the Street; then take Money to buy me another.

What will it coſt?

Senhor, onde eſtá o pentem; não acho nenhum nem de ponta nem de buxo.

O acharas ná meſa detrás dó eſpelho. Da cá agoa limpa para lavar as mãos, com huma toalha.

Eis aqui tem V. M. ſeus veſtidos; mas nam quer pór hoje huma camiſa limpa?

Si, não penſéy níſto; eſta eſtá muito ſuja.

Nam me eſpanto diſſo; pois ha agora tres dias que V. M. póz a limpa.

Quem tem a culpa?

Não a tenho eu, por que a lavandéyra não tem vindo com a róupa como devía.

Váy ter com ella oje, e diz lhe, que venha fallar comigo ſedo pella menhãa.

Senhor não vejo o ſeu lénço.

Pode ſer que mó roubaram dá algibeira da caſaca ontem a nóite ná Rua; pois toma dinhéiro para comprar óutro.

Quanto hade cuſtar?

Here

Here is a Crown, and return me the reſt.

What Sort muſt it be; of Silk, Cotton, or Linen?

Let it be of a fine Silk, becauſe the coarſe ones are not ſtrong; but before you go give me my Hat, Sword, Cane, and Gloves; for I go out with this Gentleman to breakfaſt at my Uncle's (in my Uncle's Houſe.)

Now I think you are dreſs'd; and, if you pleaſe, we will go to Change, to ſee what News there is, or if any Poſt is arrived.

'Tis well, I'll go with you; but, with your Leave, we muſt breakfaſt firſt.

Then let us go to a Coffee-houſe, to drink a Diſh of Coffee or Chocolate, and at the ſame Time we may read the News-papers.

I muſt call, en paſſant, *at my Uncle's, who, I am perſuaded, will be very glad to ſee you.*

Eis aqui hum cruzado, e torname a dar ademaſía.

Deque ſorte ha de ſer, de ſeda, algodão, o pano de linho?

Que ſeija de ſeda fina (delgada) porque os de ſeda groſſa não são fortes; más antes que vas dacá o chapéo, a eſpada, com a cana e luvas, porque eu vóu com eſte Senhor almorçar em caſa de meu tio.

Agora a mim me parece, eſtá V. M. veſtido de todo, e ſe quer hiremos pella bolſa para ver que novas ha, ou ſe tem chegado algum coréo.

Eſta bem, hirey com voſco, mas priméiro com licença de V. M. temos de almorçar.

Pois vámonos á hum coffé, para beber huma tigela de coffé ou de chocolate, e nó meſmo tempo podremos lér as gazetas.

Ey de entrar, ao paſſar, ná caſa de meu Tio, que eſtóu perſuadido folgara de ver a V. M.

Dialogue

Dialogue III.

Of Breakfaſting.

WHAT will you have for Breakfaſt, Sir?

I'll go into the Kitchen to ſee what the Cook has to give us.

There is nothing but Bread, Butter and Cheeſe, and ſome Fruit, as Pears, Apples, Figs, &c.

Put the Kettle on the Fire to make the Water boil, for I will drink ſome Coffee this Morning.

If you'll eat ſome Meat, Sir, I'll ſend to Market for ſome Veal, Mutton, or Beef.

No, Sir, I don't care to eat Fleſh in the Morning; Bread and Butter with a little Cheeſe is ſufficient for me.

What will you drink? will you pleaſe to taſte the Ale or Beer, or white or red Wine? all theſe Sorts are here at your Service.

Pratica III.

De almorçar.

QUE quer V. M. para almorçar.

Hirey ná cuſinha para ver o que tem o cuſinheiro (a cuſinheira) que darnos.

Não ha ſenám pão, mateiga e quéijo, e alguma fruta, como peras, maçãas, figos, *&c.*

Poem a caldéyra ſobre o fogo, para fazer ferver a agoa, porque quero beber coffé éſta menhãa.

Se V. M. quizer comer carne, eu mandarey à praça, por vitela, carnéiro, ou vaca.

Não Senhor, a mim não ſe meda de comer carne pela menhãa, pão e manteiga com hum pouco de queijo baſta para mim.

Que quer V. M. beber? ſera V. M. ſervido de provar Ella ou cerveja, ou vinho branco ou tinto? todas eſtas ſortes eſtám aqui ao ſeu ſervicio de V. M.

With

With your Leave, I'll drink ſome red Wine with Water.

Com licença de V. M. beberéy vinho tinto com ágoa.

Why don't you cut a Piece of Bread? have you no Knife, Sir?

Por que não corta huma fatía de pam? não tem V. M. faca?

Yes, I have. To your Health, Sir.

Si tenho. A ſua ſaude de V. M.

I thank you (to you many Years.)

Agradeço (a V. M. muitos annos.)

I think it is pleaſanter to drink out of the Glaſs than the Cup.

A mim me parece máis goſtoſo beber dó copo de vidro que dó púcaro.

Drink it all; I take it to be good Wine.

Beba todo, tenho para mim que o vinho he regalado.

I can drink no more, I have drank enough.

Não poſſo mais Senhor, tenho bebido baſtante.

What think you of the Wine.

Que lhe parece á V. M. do vinho.

The Wine is very good.

O vinho he muy bom.

You don't eat.

V. M. não come.

I have eat ſo much that I ſhall not be able to dine.

Tenho comido tanto que não podrey jantar.

Dialogue IV.

To ſpeak Portugueſe.

HOW goes the Portugueſe? Are you well advanced in the Portugueſe Tongue?

Pratica IV.

Para fallar Portuguez.

COMO vái dó Portuguez? Eſtá V. M. bem avançado ná lingoa Portugueza?

Not

Not much; I am as yet not very learned.

Yet they ſay you talk very well.

I wiſh to God it was true; thoſe that ſay it are much miſtaken.

I aſſure you, Sir, I was told it.

I can ſay ſome Words I know by heart.

That is neceſſary to begin.

It is not enough to begin, but it is neceſſary alſo to end.

Speak always, well or ill, that's no Matter; this Language is not difficult.

I know it, and that it is very uſeful in ſeveral Parts of the World.

Particularly to Men of Buſineſs.

How happy ſhould I be if I knew it!

You muſt ſtudy to learn it.

How long is it that you have learnt?

It is not yet quite a Month.

What is your Maſter's Name?

His Name is Mr. N.

Nam muito; ainda não eſtó muí perito.

Porem dizem que V. M. falla mui bem.

Provéra Deos que foſſe verdade; os que o dizem ſe enganam muito

Lhe aſſeguro a V. M. que mo diceram.

Poſſo dezir algumas palavras que tenho de cor.

Iſſo he neceſſario para começar.

Não he baſtante para começar, mas he miſter tambem para acabar.

Fallay ſempre; bem ou mal, iſſo não importa nada; eſta lingoa não he mui difficultoſa.

Eu o ſey, e que he mui util em differentes partes dó mundo.

Particularmente a homens de negocio.

O que ſeria eu ditoſo ſe a ſoubera!

Hade eſtudar para ſabélla.

Quanto tempo ha que V. M. tem aprendido?

Não ha ainda hum mez.

Como ſe chama o ſeu meſtre.

Se chama Senhor N.

I have known him a long Time; he has taught ſeveral of my Friends: Doth he not tell you that you muſt ſpeak Portugueſe?

Yes, Sir, he tells it me often.

For why don't you ſpeak then?

With whom ſhould I ſpeak?

With thoſe who ſpeak to you.

I would fain ſpeak, but I dare not.

You muſt not be timorous; but boldly ſpeak, well or

Eu o conheço muito tempo ha; tem enſinado a muitos dós meus amigos: Nam lhe diz a V. M. que ha miſtér fallar Portuguez?

Si Senhor mó diz muitas vezes.

Por que rezão então não falla V. M.?

Com quem fallaria eu?

Com os que lhe fallarem a V. M.

Eu quiſera fallar porem não me atrevo.

V. M. não deve ſer medroſo; mas ha de fallar intrepidamente bem ou roim (máo.)

Dialogue V.

Of the Weather.

WHAT Weather is it?

It is good Weather. It is bad Weather.

Is it cold? Is it warm?

The Weather is temperate; neither cold nor hot.

Doth it rain?

No, for the Sky is clear (ſerene.)

Pratica V.

Dó Tempo.

QUE tempo faz?

Faz bom tempo. Faz tempo roim.

Faz frio? Faz calor?

O tempo eſtá temperado; nem frio nem quente.

Chove?

Não, porque o céo eſta claro (ſereno)

The

The Weather is changed. Yeſterday the Sky was very cloudy and rainy.

But as the Wind is not changed, I fear we ſhall have Rain.

It will not rain to-day.

I believe it will thunder and lighten.

That may be; but I am ſure it will not ſnow.

For certain; 'tis more probable that it will hail.

You have a great Cold, Sir.

I have had this Cold this Fortnight.

I don't wonder; it is a very common Thing, and the Fruit of the Seaſon.

What ſhall we do to paſs the Time till Dinner?

Let us take a little Walk.

With all my Heart. I conſent; but whither ſhall we go?

Let us go to walk in the Garden.

Let us go; but ſee firſt if the Key is in the Door.

O tempo eſtá mudado; ontem o céo eſtáva muy nevoado, e chuvoſo.

Más como o vento não eſtá mudado recéo teremos chuva.

Não choverá oje.

Créio que avera trovoada e relámpagos.

Iſſo pode ſer (iſſo ſi) porem eſtóu perſuadido que não nevará.

Por certo; he mais provavel que ha de pedriſcar.

V. M. eſtá muito reſfriado.

Tive éſte frio quinze dias ha.

Não me admiro; he couſa mui commúa, e a fruita dá ſezão.

Que faremos para paſſar o tempo até o jantar?

Vámonos paſſear hum pouco.

De todo meu coração. Eu conſento; más onde hemos de hir?

Vámonos paſſear nó jardim.

Vamos; mas véja primeiro ſe á chave eſtá ná porta.

Yes, it is, but I cannot open the Door; the Key is ruſty.

Let me ſee; if you turn it that Way you'll break it.

What think you of the Garden? Is it not fine and pleaſant?

Yes, Sir, theſe Shades and Arbours look very beautiful.

Let us walk in that Walk, where it is not ſo hot.

This Walk is beautify'd with a thouſand various kinds of Flowers.

I think the Roſes, with the Tulips and the Ranuncles, with the Carnations and Lilies, charm the Eye with the Briſkneſs of their Colour.

This Place is a Paradiſe on Earth.

Gather any of theſe Flowers, if you pleaſe, to make a Noſegay.

No, Sir, it is enough for me to ſmell them here, and that I have the Pleaſure of ſeeing them in their Spring.

This is my Paſtime when I am alone.

Si, eſta, porem não poſſo abrir a porta; a chave eſtá ferrugenta.

Deixama ver; ſe V. M. a vira por eſta parte, a quebrará.

Como lhe parece o jardim? não he lindo e prazentéiro?

Si Senhor, eſtes arvoredos e ramados tem belliſſima viſta.

Paſſeémos naquelle paſſeo, a ónde não faz tanta calma.

Eſte paſſeo eſtá rodeodo com mil varios géne de flores.

A mim me paréce que as roſas, com as tulipas e os renúnculos com os cravos e lirios encantão os olhos com a viveza de ſuas cores brilhantes.

Eſte lugar he hum Paraíſo terreal.

Colha V. M. quaeſquér déſtas flores ſe quizer, para faſer hum ramalhéte.

Não Senhor, baſta para mim que as chéiro aqui, e que tenho o goſto de vellas ná ſúa primavera.

Eſte he o méu paſſa tempo quando eſtóu ſozinho.

I muſt take my Leave of you, Sir; I have ſomething to do at home that cannot be excuſed.

That cannot be; out of Civility you ought to dine with me.

With your Leave, Sir, I muſt go, for the Buſineſs is very urging; another Time I will accept your Favour.

Ey de deſpedirme de V. M. tenho que fazer em caſa que não ſe póde excuſar.

Iſſo não ſe ha de ſoffrer; em corteſia ha de jantar comígo.

Com licença de V. M. ey de ir, pois o negocio he muy preciſo; para outra vez aceitarei o ſeu favor.

Dialogue VI.

Of Dinner.

I Believe it is near Dinner-time; let us go home.

I agree, for I am hungry.

Here, Boy, go to ſee if Dinner be ready.

I go, Sir, but I believe it is yet early.

Lay the Cloth, and bring the Salt-ſeller, with clean Plates and Napkins. Bring here Knives and Forks and Spoons, and let the Soop come upon the Table. Sit down, Sir, and let us uſe (let there be) no Ceremonies.

This is my favourite Diſh (greateſt Dainty) I

Pratica VI.

Dô jantar.

CRéyô que ſerám horas de jantar, vámos pera caſa.

Eu conſento, porque ténho fome.

O rapaz, vay ver ſe o jantar eſtá féito.

Eu vóu Senhor, mas créyo que ainda he ſedo.

Poem a meſa, e tráz o ſaléiro com pratos e guardanápos limpos. Dacá fácas, gárfos, e colheres, e venham as ſopas ſobre a meſa. Acente ſe V. M. e não aja ceremonia.

Iſſo he o meu mayór regalo, paraceme são

think it is good, and well ſeaſoned.

Theſe Turnips are delicious, and the Carrots with the Cabbage are not bad.

They cannot be better.

Be pleaſed to help your ſelf to ſome Beef; I believe it is well roaſted.

I would rather have boil'd Mutton with Spinage.

John, take away this Plate, and bring ſomething elſe to Table.

It is coming, Sir, the Cook is taking it up, and will ſend it preſently.

Do you like Wood Pigeons? now is their Seaſon, and they are very fat.

I know it very well, Sir, but I had rather have a Leg of the Turkey, or a Wing of the Gooſe or Capon.

How do you like this Fiſh? Help yourſelf to ſome Sturgeon; there ſtand the Crewets, with Oil and Vinegar, and there is melted Butter in another Plate.

bóas e bem temparadas.

Eſtes nabós ſam regalados, e as cenóuras com a couve não são máas.

Não podem ſer melhores.

Seja V. M. ſervido de partir para ſi dá vaca; créyo que eſtá bem aſſada.

Antes queria do carnéiro cozido com eſpinafres.

O João, tira eſte prato, e venha máis que comer á meſa.

Ja vem Senhor, o cozinhéiro eſtá tirándoo, e logo o mandará.

Goſta V. M. dáquellas rólas? agora he ſeu tempo déllas, e ſam bem gordas.

Bem o ſey Senhor, más antes quero a perna dó perú, ou a aza dó pato ou capão.

Como lhe parece éſte peixe? parta V. M. do péixe ſólha; allí eſtám as galhétas com azéite e vinagre, e nóutro prato tem mantéiga derretida.

'Tis

'Tis a good Fiſh, and it looks white like Veal.

He hum bom peixe, e parece alvo como vitela.

Shall I help you to ſome of the Turbet? it is very freſh and fat, and in the Opinion of moſt is no contemptible Fiſh.

Quer que eu parta para V. M. dó rodovalho? bem freſco he e gordo, e nó parecer comum, não he péixe deſprezivel.

Lord, Sir, it is one of the beſt that ſwims, and ſo well dreſs'd that it tempts (opens) my Appetite.

Oh Senhor, he húm dos melhores que náda, e de tal modo guiſado, que me abre a vóntade de comer.

Fill the Gentleman ſome Wine; they uſed to ſay in former Times, that Fiſh without Wine is Poiſon.

Enche vinho ao Senhor; foy dito nós tempos antepaſſados, que o péixe ſem vinho he peçonha.

Is there any Snow in the Houſe? if not, put ſome Wine in the Well to cool.

Ha algúa neve em caſa? ſe não ouver, mete o vinho nó poço para esfriar.

There is, Sir; I bought two Pounds To-day, and there are two Bottles of Wine cooling

Ha Senhor; oje compréy dous arrateis, e eſtamſe esfriando duas garafas de vinho.

Fill ſome cool Wine and Water.

Enche vinho frio com agoa ſerenada.

If you pleaſe, Sir, I'll ſend your Boy to the Water-ſide to ſee for a Boat.

Se V. M. for ſervido mandarey o rapaz á praya buſcar hum batel (fragata.)

What for? whither will you go? it is late, I believe no Boat will be found.

Paraque? adónde vay V. M.? já he tarde, creyo que não ſe achara batel (fragata.)

Let him go to ſee; I muſt go on the other Side of the Water.

If your Buſineſs is not very preſſing, ſtay till To-morrow, and I will wait on you.

I will ſtay with all my Heart, but we muſt know what a-Clock the Tide ſerves.

The Tide begins to flow To-morrow Morning, and the Watermen ſay it will be low Water at Five a-Clock in the Morning.

Very well; we'll take Boat at Six, and with a favourable Wind we ſhall be at N. by Eight.

Boy, go ſee if there be any Thing in the Houſe to carry with us for our Journey.

Yes, Sir, I have already put into the Boat two cold roaſted Fowls, a Couple of Bottles of Wine, and all other Neceſſaries.

Bring the Fruit to the Table, and if there is any Thing elſe of a Deſert, to make up a ſmall Dinner.

Taſte theſe Grapes; they are the firſt of the Seaſon (Year), and theſe

Que va ver; pois hey de ir a banda dalém dá agoa.

Se o negocio não for muito appreſſado, eſpere até menhãa e acompanharey a V. M.

Eſperarey de bóa mente, mas avemos de ſaber a que horas ſerve a maré.

Comecera a encherſe a maré a menhãa, pella menhãa e dizem os barquéir os queas cinco horas de menhãa eſtara vazía.

Bellamente, embarcaremos as ſéis horas, e com o vento em popa eſtarémos á N. as outo.

O rapaz, vay ver ſe ha algúa couſa ná caſa para a noſſa viagem.

Si Senhor, ja meti ná fragata (batel) duas frangas aſſadas frias, duas canéquas de vinho, com todo o mais neceſſario.

Venha a frúita para a meſa, e ſe ouver alguma cóuſa mais de ſobre meſa, para acabar hum jentar limitado.

Prove V. M. aquellas uvas; são as priméiras dó anno, e as maçãas

Apples

Apples and Nuts have now only their natural Taſte.

If you want any Thing elſe, command as if you were in your own Houſe (at home.)

Nothing more, I humbly thank you, Sir; I have eat enough.

If you pleaſe to ſleep after Dinner, here you have a freſh retiring Room with a Couch.

e nozes agora ſó tem ſeu goſto natural.

Se V. M. quizer alguma cóuſa mais, mande como ſe eſtivéra nã ſua propria caſa.

Nada mais, viva V. M. mill annos; ja comi baſtante.

Querendo V. M. dormir a ſeſta deſpois de jentar, eis aqui huma cámera de freſquidão com huma caminha.

Dialogue VII.

Of a young Woman, and what News paſſes.

SEE there a handſome Damſel, or young Woman.

She is very well made.

She has a beautiful Face.

Do you know her?

No, I don't know her: She has fine Eyes.

She walks very gracefully.

And ſhe is very well dreſs'd too.

Yes, and I believe ſhe muſt be a Perſon of Diſtinction.

Pratica VII.

De huma moça, e dó que ſe páſſa de nóvo.

EIS aqui huma fermoſa donzella, oú moça.

He muy bem féita.

Tem huma bella cara.

V. M. a conhece?

Não a conheço; tem os olhos bellos.

Anda muy gracioſamente.

E tambem eſtá muy bem veſtida.

Si e creyo eu que he huma peſſóa de diſtinção.

That may be; what ſay you, Sir, ſhould you not be happy with ſuch a Wife?

Yes, if I had a good deal of Money with her.

You are too intereſted; the enjoying ſo fine a Woman is worth a Fortune.

I am not of that Opinion; but let us drop that Diſcourſe. What News is there To-day? Do you know no News?

I have heard nothing.

I have read the Dutch Gazette, which ſpeaks of nothing but War; and they write from Paris, they expect hourly News of ſome Rencounters between the French and the Imperialiſts.

What do they ſay of the Princes of the North? how go the Affairs between the King of Poland and the King of Pruſſia?

The Reports are various in all Places; ſome ſay they are in good Friendſhip, others think they are jealous of each other.

Iſſo pode ſer; que diz V. M. não ſeria ditoſo com tal mulher?

Sim ſe tivera múito dinhéiro com ella.

V. M. he demaſiado intereſſado; o gozar huma tal mulher val hum dote.

Não ſou déſta opinião; más deixemos eſte diſcurſo. Que novas ha oje? não ſabe V. M. nada de novo?

Não tenho ouvido nada.

Eu tenho lído a gazeta d'Ollanda, que não fallo ſenão de guerra; e eſcrevem de Paris, que todas as horas eſtám eſperando novas de algum encontro entre os Francezes e as forças dó Imperio.

Que dizem dós principes dó Norte? como vay o negocio entre o rey de Polonha, e o rey de Pruſſia?

Os rumores são varios em todas as partes; huns dizem que eſtám em bóa amizade; outros cuídam que eſtám cioſos hum dó outro.

Be it as it will, the ſupream Government is ſtill the ſame, and there is a great deal of Truth in that old Saying, that very often a good War makes an advantageous and laſting Peace.

Seja o que for, ainda Deos eſta onde eſtáva, e he muita verdade naquélle ditto antíguo, que múitas vezes ſocede que a bóa guerra faz huma bóa e durante paz.

They write from Spain that the Spaniſh Fleet is ready to ſail.

Eſcrevem de Eſpanha, que a frota Eſpanhola eſtá pronta para navegar.

Their Preparations make a great Noiſe in the World; they have Mariners, Ammunition, and Ships enough; but 'tis ſaid they want Money.

As ſuas preparaçóens rugem muito nó mundo; tem marinhéyros, provimento de guerra e naviós baſtantes, porem ſe diz que lhes falta dinhéiro.

Others ſay the Expedition is defer'd till next Spring, for other political Reaſons.

Outros dizem, que a expediçaõ ſe poſpoem pélo veraõ próximo por rezóens politicas.

We muſt leave thoſe Things to Time, which clears up all Doubts.

Temos de deixár iſſo ao tempo que aclara todas as dúvidas.

Dialogue VIII.

To enquire about a Perſon.

WHO is that Gentleman that ſpoke to you juſt now?

He is a German.

Pratica VIII.

Pare enquerir ſobre huma peſſóa.

QUEM he eſſe fidalgo que agora lhe fallava?

He hum Alemaõ.

I thought

I thought he was an Engliſhman.

No, Sir, he is from Vienna.

He ſpeaks very good Portugueſe.

He pronounces it like one born and educated at Liſbon.

Has he been long in Portugal?

No more than two Years.

I am ſurprized he learnt ſo much in ſo little Time.

He has the Advantage of knowing Latin well, and he underſtands the Grammar perfectly.

In ſhort, you ſay he is a Scholar, and I ſee by his Mien that he is an accompliſh'd Gentleman.

Your Opinion is very juſt, and I always found him ſuch.

He is of a genteel Behaviour, and a polite complaiſant handſome young Man.

You ſpeak ſo favourably of him, that were he a Woman I ſhould think you were in love with him.

Eu cuidava que era Ingrez.

Não Senhor, he de Vienna.

Falla muy bem Portuguez.

O pronuncia como hum nacido e criado em Liſbóa.

Eſteve muito tempo em Portugal?

Não mais que dous annos.

Me eſpanto que tem aprendido tanto, em tam póuco tempo.

Tem a ventagem de ſaber bem o Latim, e intende a grammática perfeitamente.

Bréve, V. M. diz que he docto, e eu véijo por ſua aparencia exterior que he hum fidalgo aperfeiçoado.

A ſua opinião de V. M. he juſta, e eu o achéi ſempre tal.

He muy gentíl ná converſação, e hum mui polido, cortez e fermoſo moço.

V. M. falla délle tam favoravelmente, que ſe foſſe mulher, créria eu que eſtiveſſe enamorado délle.

You joke, Sir; but I muſt own I have ſuch an Eſteem for him, that I ſhould be obliged to you if you would do me the Favour to procure me his Acquaintance.

V. M. zomba; porem ey de confeſſar tenho tanta reverencia por elle, que tivera muita obrigaçaõ a V. M. ſe quizera fazerme o favor de procurarme ſua amizade.

If you will, we will To-morrow go to his Lodging together.

Se V. M. quizer, iremos a menhaã juntos a ſua pouſada.

Where doth he lodge?

Onde ſe hoſpeda?

Not far off; in New-Street.

Naõ muy longe dáqui, na Rúa nova.

'Tis very well: Good Night, Sir.

Eſtá bem: Bóas nóites Senhor.

I thank you: Farewel, Sir.

Agradeço a V. M. á Déos Senhor.

I kiſs your Hands: I wiſh you well home.

Bijoe as maõs de V. M. Chegue com bem a ſua caſa.

Dialogue IX.

For to write.

Pratica IX.

Para eſcrever.

GIVE me a Sheet of Paper, a Pen and Ink.

DA cá huma fólha de papél, huma pena e tinta.

Go into my Cloſet, you'll find there on the Table what you want.

Entre em minha recámara e achara V. M. na meſa o que quizer.

I ſee no Pens.

Naõ vejo penas.

There are a great many in the Inkhorn.

Ha muitas nó tintéiro.

They are not good.

Naõ valem nada. Naõ saõ bóas.

Here

Here are ſome others.
They are not cut.
Where is your Penknife?
Do you know how to cut Pens?
This is not bad.
Whilſt I finiſh this Letter, be ſo kind as to fold up that Packet.

What Seal muſt I put?
Seal it with my Coat of Arms, or my Cypher.
What Seal-wax ſhall it be?
'Tis no Matter; take of the red or the black, which you pleaſe.

Have you put the Date?

I think I have; but I am not ſure whether I have ſigned or no.
What Day of the Month is it?
'Tis the twentieth Day of the Month.
Put the Superſcription.

There is no Sand here.
There is ſome in the Sand-box.
Look, here is your Servant; will you have him carry the Letters to the Poſt?

Eis aqui outras.
Não eſtão cortadas.
Onde eſtá o ſeu canivete?
Sabe V. M. cortar penas?
Eſta não he má.
Entre tanto que acabo eu eſta carta façame V. M. a graça de dobrar eſte paquete.
Que ſello tenho de pór?
Selleo com as minhas armas, ou cifra.
Que lacre ha de ſér?

Não importa nada; tome V. M. dó vermelho ou negro; o que quiſer.
Tem V. M. poſto a data?
Créio que ſi, más não eſtóu certó ſe tenho firmado ou não.
A quantos dó mez eſtamos oje?
Eſtamos a vinte dó mez.
Ponha V. M. o ſobreſcrito.
Não ha aréa aqui.
A tem ná poeira.

Eis a qui voſſo criado; quer V. M. que leve as cartas ao coreo?

Don't

Don't forget to pay the Poſtage.

I have no Money.

Here is a Crown; make haſte, and return preſently.

I will not tarry, Sir; I will diſpatch.

Não eſqueça de pagar o porte.

Não tenho dinhéiro.

Aqui tems hum cruzado; vay de preſſa e torna logo para caſa.

Não ey de tardar Senhor; deſpachárey.

Dialogue X.

For to buy.

WHither do you go? If it is no Matter of Secrecy, I'll wait on you.

You do me much Honour: I only go to ſpeak with a Shop-keeper, to buy me a new Suit of Cloaths.

What is the Shop-keeper's Name? probably he may be my Acquaintance.

I think his Name is M. N. or ſomething like it; I do not know it for certain.

I know him very well; he lives in the Middle of the Street, on the Right Hand, over againſt the Inſurance-Office.

Well then, let us go and do our Buſineſs.

Pratica X.

Para comprar.

ONDE vay V. M.? ſe o negócio não fór cóuſa de ſegredo, acompanharey a V. M.

V. M. me faz muita honra; eu vóu ſómente para fallar á hum mercadór de lója, para comprarme hum veſtido novo.

Como ſe chama o mercadór? tal vez ſerá meu conhecido.

Cúydo que ſe chama M. N. ou tal; não o ſéy por certo.

Eu bem o conhéço; mora nó méyo dá rua, a mão deréita, juſto em fronte dá caſa dós ſegúros.

Pois, vâmonos e tratemos o noſſo negócio.

God

God ſave your Perſon, Mr. M. N. I come recommended to you by a Friend of yours, Mr. N. having Occaſion for ſome Things out of your Shop.

Guarde Deos a peſſóa de V. M. Senhor N. venho en commendado a V. M. por hum amigo ſeu o Senhor N. por aver miſter algúas couſas de ſua tenda.

Sir, you are welcome, and the whole Shop is at your Service.

Seja V. M. bem vindo, meu Senhor, e tudo que eſtá ná lója fica as ſuas ordens.

I have Occaſion for ſome fine Cloth to make me a Suit; have you any that is good?

Ey de miſtér algum pano fino, para fazer hum veſtido; tem V. M. algum que préſte?

Yes, Sir, I will ſhew you a Piece that I believe will not diſpleaſe you.

Ténho Senhor, moſtrarey a V. M. huma peça que não lhe deſcontentara.

Look you, here is a Piece, and in my Opinion one of the beſt that is this Day in Portugal, being very fine, well wrought, and of an agreeable Colour.

Eis aqui húa peça, e nó meu parecer húa das melhores que oje ha em Portugal, por ſer muy fina, bem lavrada, e de cor agradavel.

The Cloth is not bad, but the Colour doth not pleaſe me: I am no Friend to this Aſh Colour, becauſe it is ſoon fill'd with Spots.

O pano não he máo, mas a cor não me agrada; não ſou amigo déſta cor de cinza, porque logo ſe enche de nódoas.

Look here, how do you like this Piece? it is of a more lively Colour, and more chearful for the Summer.

Olhecá Senhor, como lhe parece eſtóutra peça? he de cor mais viva e mais alegre para o verão.

Yes,

Yes, this I like; how do you ſell it a Covado, and be at a Word with me?*

Sir, I'll tell you, I cannot ſell it under two Mil and five hundred Reas a Covado.

It is very dear; I know I can buy cheaper in other Places.

If you find any ſo good, and of this Make, for leſs Money, I will give it you for nothing.

Hark ye, Sir, I'll give you two Mil two hundred and forty Reas, and I am perſuaded it can be worth no more.

Well then, to be ſhort, I will not let it go under two Mil four hundred Reas, altho' it were to my Brother.

Do you know how many Covado's will be ſufficient to make a Suit?

Truly I cannot tell; but I'll ſend and call a Taylor that lives cloſe by in the Neighbourhood, and he will ſoon inform us.

Iſſo ſim; a como vende o cóvado, e dígamo em huma palavra?

Eu lhe diréy a V. M. não poſſo vendéllo por menos de dous míl e quinhéntos reis o cóvado

He múito caro, bem ſéy que poſſo comprállo mais acomodado em outras partes.

Se V. M. achar algum tão bom e déſte feitio por ménos dinhéiro eu lhó darey por nada.

Oúçame V. M. eu lhe daréy dous mil dozentos e quarenta reis, e tenho para mim que não podo valer mais.

Em fim, para uſar de brevidade não ey de largallo por menos de dous mil e quatro centos reis, ainda que foſſe ao meu irmão.

Sabe V. M. quantos cóvados baſtaram para fazer hum veſtido?

Não ſey por certo; mas mandaréy chamar hum alfayate que mora aqui perto ná vezinhança, e elle logo o dirá.

* *A* Covado *is a Meaſure almoſt an* Engliſh *Yard.*

How many Cóvado's muſt I have to make a compleat Suit?

You muſt have for Coat, Waiſtcoat, and Breeches, four Cóvadoes and a half.

What may be the Breadth of it? I believe I muſt have more.

No, Sir, it is a Yard and three Quarters broad, and I am ſure four or five Yards will be ſufficient.

Very well, cut me off five Yards, that none may be wanting.

Here is juſt a Remnant of five Yards.

See what it comes to, and I will give you your Money.

Five Yards at two Mil four hundred Reas per Cóvado, amount to twelve Milreas in Portugal Money.

How much is it in Sterling, or current Money of England?

Twelve Milreas, at ſix Shillings and three Pence per Mil, make three Pounds fifteen Shillings Sterling.

Quantos cóvados hey de miſtér para hum veſtido inteiro?

V. M. ha miſter para caſſaca, veſtia, e calçóens quatro cóvados e méyo.

Que largura terá? créyo que ey de miſtér mais.

Não Senhor, tem de largura hum cóvado e tres quartos, e aſſegurolhe que quatro para cinco cóvados baſtaram.

Andar; córteme cinco cóvados, que não aja falta.

Eis aqui hum retalho de cinco cóvados juſtos.

Veja quanto importa, e lhe darey o ſeu dinhéiro.

Cinco cóvados a dóus mil e quatro centos reas o cóvado, montam doze milreis em dinhéiro de Portugal.

Quanto vem á ſer em dinheiro eſtarlino ou moéda corrente de Ingalaterra?

Doze milreas, (12000 rs.) á ſeis chelins e tres peniques por mil, fazem tres livras e quinze chelins eſtarlinos.

Here,

Here, tell your Money, and ſee if it be right.

It is, Sir. I humbly thank you, and hope another Time I ſhall have the ſame Honour.

Eis aqui, conte V. M. o dinhéiro, e veja ſe eſtá cérto.

Eſtá Senhor, agradeço a V. M. mil annos, e eſpero que em outra ocaſiam terey a meſma honra.

Dialogue XI.

Of Playing.

LET us play a Party at Picket.

How much will you play for?

Let us play for one Shilling to paſs the Time.

Give us ſome Cards.

Let us ſee who is to deal.

You are to deal.

Shuffle the Cards; all the Court-Cards are together.

They are mix'd ſufficiently; cut the Cards, if you pleaſe.

Have you all your Cards?

I think I have.

How many do you take?

I take all: I leave none.

I have a bad Game.

Pratica XI.

Dó jugar.

JUguemos huma partida a o piquete.

Por quanto quer V. M. jugar?

Juguemos por hum chelin por paſſar o tempo.

Danos humas cartas.

Vejamos quem ha de dar as cartas.

V. M. as ha de dar.

Baralhe as cartas; todas as cartas de figura eſtão juntas.

Eſtám baſtantemente miſturadas; parta V. M. as cartas, ſe fór ſervido.

Tem V. M. todas ſuas cartas?

Creyo que tenho.

Quantas toma V. M.?

Tomo tudo; déixo nenhuma.

Eu tenho hum máo jogo.

Let us deal the Cards over-again.

No, Sir. My Game puzzles me.

You muſt have a fine Game; for I have nothing.

Count your Points; fifty, ſixty, &c.

They are not good. They are good.

A Quint Major, a Quint from the King, a Quart from the Queen, a Tierce from the Knave.

I have fourteen Kings, three Aces, three Queens, and three Knaves.

Play Hearts, Spades, Clubs, or Diamonds.

I have loſt. You have won.

You owe me a Shilling.

Pardon me, Sir, you ow'd me one.

Then we are quits.

Démos as cartas outra vez.

Não Senhor. O meu jogo me embaraça.

V. M. ha de ter hum bello jogo, por que eu não tenho nada.

Conte V. M. os ſeos pontos; cincoenta, ſeicenta, &c.

Não valem nada. Eſtão boms.

Huma quinta mayor, huma quinta do Réy, huma quarta dá Sôta, huma terça dó cavallo.

Eu tenho cartorze de Reys, tres aſes, tres ſoutas, e tres cavallos.

Jogue copas, eſpadas, páos, ou ouros.

Eù tenho perdido. V. M. tem ganhado.

V. M. me deve hum chelin.

Perdoeme V. M. mó devia.

Pois eſtámos iguáis.

Dialogue XII.

About a Journey, with ſome other Occurrences.

O *Sir, are you here yet? I expected a Letter from you from London*

Pratica XII.

De huma viagem com outras couſas differentes.

SEnhor, eſtá V. M. ainda aqui? eſtive eſperando por huma

London by the laſt Week's Poſt.

It is true, Sir, there was no Remedy: I thought to depart laſt Week, but I had an embroil'd Buſineſs which has detained me.

But what hinders you now? Is the Ship ready? and are the Goods diſpatched at the Cuſtom-houſe?

Not yet, all will be cleared To-morrow.

Is the Ship cleared in the Cuſtom-houſe? and have you your Proviſion on board?

Yes, Sir, I think I ſhall have Occaſion for nothing more.

Don't you think I am ſufficiently provided for? I have put on board for myſelf and my Footman, two Sheep, four Dozen of Fowls, four Turkeys, four Geeſe, and a Barrel of Wine.

Your Proviſions are ſufficient for a Voyage of two Months: Have you agreed with the Captain for your Paſſage? How much are you to give him

carta de V. M. de Londres, pello corréo dá ſemana paſſada.

He verdade Senhor; não óuve remedio, tratey de partir a ſemana paſſada, mas tive hum negocio embaraçado que me póz em detença.

Pois agora que ha de impedimento? o navio eſtá leſtes? e as fazendas eſtão deſpachadas ná alfándega?

Ainda não; todo liquidarſeha a menhãa.

O navio eſtá deſpachado ná alfándega? e tem V. M. ſua matalotagem abórdo?

Si Senhor, creyo que não hey de miſter nada mais.

Não lhe parece que eſtou provido baſtantemente? pois mandey a bordo para mim e meu criado dous carnéiros, quatro duzias de galinhas, quatro perús, quatro patos, com hum barril de vinho.

Os mantimentos báſtam por huma viagem de dóus meſes. Tem V. M. ajuſtado com o capitão por ſua paſſagem? quanto ha de dar-

for yourſelf and your Footman?

I made a Bargain with the Captain for the Cabin for me and my Servant for twenty Milreas, or about ſix Pounds five Shillings Sterling.

I think it is very reaſonable. God ſend you a good Voyage.

But pray tell me, is it any Buſineſs of Conſequence that obliges you to this ſudden Departure?

It is, Sir, I have ſome Accounts to adjuſt with my Correſpondents of great Moment.

Have you any Money owing you there among your Acquaintance?

Yes, Sir, my Buſineſs is ſuch, that I cannot do it by Letters of Attorney; but my Preſence is neceſſary.

You have a Brother there, and if you will not truſt him, whom will you truſt?

Don't you know the Proverb; avoid Accounts with Relations, as Debts with ſuch as are abſent.

lhe por V. M. e mais o ſeu criado?

Eu fiz concerto com o capitão pello camerote, por mim e mais meu criado, em vinte milreis, ou ſeis librase c inco chelins eſtarlinas.

Bem acomodado eſtá nó meo parecer. Deos lhe de boa viagem.

Más dígame ha algum negocio de importança que obriga a V. M. a éſta apreſſada partida?

Ha Senhor, tenho humas contas que ajuſtar com meus correſpondentes de múito pezo e valor.

Tem algum dinhéiro que ſe lhe fica devendo de ſeus conhecidos?

Sim Senhor, meus negocios são táes que não poſſo faſellos por húa carta de procuração, mas a minha preſença he neceſſaria.

V. M. tem lá hum irmão, e ſe não quizer fiarſe delle de quem ſe fiara?

Não ſabe V. M. o provérbio, guardate de contas com parentes, como de dívidas com auſentes.

You

You ſay right, Sir; mean while farewel, Sir: To-morrow Morning I'll come to kiſs your Hands, and to take my Leave of you.

No, Sir, that ſhall not be; you muſt without Fail dine with us, and we will wait for you till one a-Clock.

Sir, your Servant; you have overcome me with Civilities, and ſhall be obey'd.

V. M. diz bem Senhor; ora entretanto a Deos Senhor, a menhaã pélla menhãã virey beijar ſuas mãos e deſpedirme de V. M.

Nãõ Senhor, iſſo nãõ ha de ſer; V. M. ſem falta jentara com noſco e eſperaremos por V. M. até a huma hora.

Criado, meu Senhor; V. M. me tem vencido com cortezias e ſera ſervido.

Dialogue XIII.

To reckon with the Landlord.

GOOD Evening, Sirs, are you contented (pleaſed) with your Supper?

Was the Supper to your Liking?

We are ſatisfied; but now we muſt pay you.

The Expence is not great.

See what we muſt pay for ourſelves, our Servants and Horſes.

Pratica XIII.

Para contar com o eſtalajadéiro.

BOAS tardes Senhores meus, eſtám V. M. S. contentes com a céa?

Eſteve a céa ao goſto de V. M. S.?

Eſtámos ſatisféitos; mas agora he miſter pagar a voſſé.

Os gaſtos nãõ sãõ grandes.

Veja quanto temos de pagar por nos, e mais os noſſos criados e cavallos.

Reckon yourſelves, Gentlemen, and you'll find there are ſeven Crowns.

It ſeems to me you aſk too much.

On the contrary, I am very reaſonable (moderate.)

How much do you make us pay for the Wine?

Fifteen Pence the Bottle.

Bring us another Bottle, and To-morrow Morning we'll pay you. We will abate nothing.

It ſeems to me this Gentleman doth not find himſelf well.

I am well, but I am tired and fatigued.

You muſt have Courage.

It will be better for me to be in Bed than at Table.

Tell my Servant to come and undreſs me.

Good Night, Gentlemen, Good Repoſe to you all; ſleep well.

I humbly thank you (live you a thouſand Years) God preſerve your Perſon.

Have you ordered clean Sheets for our Beds.

Contem V. M. S. meſmos e acharam que sã̃o ſete coróas.

A mim me pareceque Voſſé pede demaſiado.

Péllo cantrario, eſtóu múi razoado (moderado.)

Quanto nôs faz pagar pello vinho?

Quinze peniques o fraſco.

Traga nós hum óutro fraſco e menhãã pella menhãã pagaremos á Voſſé; nã̃o lhe abateremos nada.

Tenho para mim que eſſe Senhor nã̃o ſe acha bem.

Eſtóu bem, más eſtóu canſado e fatigado.

Ha miſtér ter animo.

Sera melhor para mim eſtar ná cama, que ná meſa.

Diga ao meu criado que venha diſpirme.

Bóas noites Senhores. Bom repóuſo a V. M. S. todos; dormam V. M. S. bem.

Viva V. M. mil annos; guarde Deos a peſſóa de V. M.

Tem voſſé ordenado lançóys limpos para noſſas camas?

Take care that they may wake us early To-morrow Morning.

Tome voſſé cuidado que nôs deſpertem ſedo á menhãa pella menhãa.

I will not fail; good by, Gentlemen, good Night.

Não faltarey; a Deos Senhores, boas nóites.

Hark ye, Hoſtler, have you look'd well after the Horſes?

O voſſé, moço de eſtribaría, tem tratado bem os cavallos?

Yes, Sir, for my Part I have been wanting in nothing; they have their Fill of Hay and Barley.

Si Senhor, dá minha parte não faltéy nada; tivéram de feno e cevâda em abundancia.

Do us the Favour to have our Horſes ready To-morrow at Six a-Clock in the Morning.

Faça nôs a Mercé de tér os cavallos prontos á menhãa as ſéys horas pella menhãa.

Here, Maſter Landlord, tell your Money, and the Half-Crown which is over and above, let it be ſhared among the Servants.

Ouça Senhor noſſo amo, conte Voſſé o dinhéiro, e a méya coróa que ſobeja repartaſe entre os criados.

Your humble Servant, Gentlemen; I hope every Thing has been to your Liking.

Vivam V. M. S. mil annos Senhores; eſpero que todo eſteve a ſeu goſto.

When you paſs by this Way, you have all your humble Servants at Command.

Quando paſſarem por eſte caminho, aqui tem todos os ſeus criados prontos ás ſuás ordens.

You are welcome, Gentlemen.

V. M. S. eſtão bem vindos.

A good Journey (Voyage) to you, Gentlemen.

Bóa jornada (viagem) tenhám V. M. S.

Dialogue

Dialogue XIV.

About the Exchange.

WHERE are you going, Sir?

To Change; and pray where do you come from?

I come from thence.

Did you hear any News?

No, Sir, nothing particular.

Nothing that is remarkable.

How is the Exchange for Amſterdam To-day?

Thirty four Shillings and four Groats.

Who told you ſo?

My Broker.

Is there a great deal of Buſineſs doing To-day?

Yes, and if you have any to do, I adviſe you to make haſte.

Then good by to you, Sir.

I am your Servant. Pray my Service at home.

Do you deſign to draw or to remit?

I am not yet determin'd what I ſhall do; tell me: what do you think, is the Exchange for Amſterdam likely to riſe or to fall?

Pratica XIV.

Dá bolſa.

ADonde vai V. M.?

A bolſa, e peçolhe de donde vem V. M.?

Venho de lá.

Ouvío V. M. algumas novas?

Não Senhor, nada em particular.

Nada que ſeja remarcavel.

Como vai o cambio para Amſterdam oje?

Trinta e quatro ſoldos e quatro groſſos.

Quem lhó diſſe?

Meu corredór.

Se faz muito negocio oje?

Si, e ſe tem que fazer eu lhe aconſelho que va de preſſa.

Pois a Deos Senhor.

Sou ſeu ſervidor. Façame Mercé de dar meus beijamãos em caſa.

V. M. intenta ſacar ou remeter?

Não eſtou ainda reſolto ó que farei; digame: o cambio para Amſterdam parecelhe que ſubirá ou que baixará?

They talk variouſly about it; yet according to Appearance it will fall.

Can you get me ſome good Bills of Exchange?

I was juſt now offer'd ſome from a very good Houſe, and People of a good Reputation.

Were the Bills at Sight or Uſance?

I can have either the one or the other.

How much Brokerage muſt I give you?

You know the Cuſtom is one Eighth per Cent.

I want to negociate ſome Bills; what do you adviſe me? ſhould I ſend theſe Bills to Amſterdam or to Hambourg?

I have not made any Calculation yet; I'll tell you by-and-by.

They ſay Mr. N. has refuſed Payment.

Yes, and a great many Bills drawn on him have been ſent back again to Holland, proteſted by Yeſterday's Poſt.

I am ſurprized, that a Man who was in ſo good Buſineſs, and bore

Fallam variavelmente níſto; porem ao parecer baixará.

Pode V. M. procurarme algumas bóas letras de cámbio?

Inda agora me offrecerão algumas de boa caſa, e gente de boa reputação.

Eram as letras a viſta ou uſos?

Poſſo tér de humãs ou de outras.

Quanto de corretagem lhe ey de dar?

V. M. ſabe que o cuſtume he hum outavo pór cento.

Eu quero negociar algumas letras; que me aconſelha? que mande eſtas letras a Amſterdam ó Hamburgo?

Não-he feito calculo nenhum ainda; lhó direy dáqui a pouco.

Dizem qúe o Senhor N. refuſou pagamento.

Sim e muitas letras ſacadasſobre elle ſe mandaram outra vez proteſtadas a Hollanda, pelo correo de ontem.

Me admiro, que hum homem que tinha bom negocio, e de bom ca-

a good

a good Character, ſhould owe ſo much Money.

Some ſay he is broke, and that he cannot pay 50 per Cent.

What do People imagine to be the Reaſon?

Some fancy his Friend and Correſpondent abroad is broke; others ſay he games, or that his Wife is extravagant.

When will his Creditors meet?

They have taken already Poſſeſſion of all his Effects and Goods, and they will examine the Balance of his Books Tomorrow.

I hope our Friend Mr. N. has not loſt by him.

No, for he ſuſpected him a great while, and I remember that he has often refuſed to take his Bills.

Do you know any Man of Credit who inſures upon Ships and Goods?

Yes, Sir, if you'll leave your Buſineſs to me, I'll get it done to your Approbation, and for a moderate Premium.

racter deveſſe tanto dinhéiro.

Alguns dizem que faltóu é que não pode pagar cincoenta por cento.

Que lhes parece ao publico ſeja a razão?

Alguns imaginão que o ſeu amigo e correſpondente fora faltóu; outros dizem que jogou ou que ſua mulher he muy extravagante.

Quando ſe ajuntarão ſeus acredores?

Tem jà tomado poſſeſſão de todos ſeus efeitos e fazendas, e examinarão o balanço dos ſeus livros a menhãa.

Eſpero que noſſo amigo N. não tem perdido com elle.

Não, por que o ſoſpeitava jà ha muito tempo, e me lembra que muitas vezes tem refuſado ſuas letras.

Sabe V. M. algum homem de credito que aſſegura ſobre navios e fazendas?

Sim Senhor; ſe V. M. quer deijar ſeu negocio a mi, lhó far ei fazer á ſeu contento, e por premio moderádo.

When

When is the India Company's Sale?

In a Fortnight.

I am glad of it, for then I ſhall have Time enough to execute my Commiſſion before the Ships ſail (or depart.)

Quando he a venda dá companhia dá India?

Em quinze dias.

Eſtimo, por que então terey tempo baſtante para executar a minha commiſſão, ante que os navios ſe ponham á vela (ou que partam.)

Dialogue XV.

Of the Laws of England.

BY what Laws is England govern'd?

They have ſeveral, according to the Nature of Affairs, and the Diverſity of Places.

How are they diſtinguiſhed?

They are called the Common Law, the Statute Law, the Civil Law, and the Cononical (or Spiritual or Eccleſiaſtical) Law.

What is the Common Law?

It is nothing but the common Cuſtoms of the Kingdom, which by length of Time have obtained the Force of Laws.

The Statute Laws have been made by ſeveral Kings

Pratica XV.

Dás leys de Ingalaterra.

POR que leys ſe governa a Ingalaterra?

Tem divérſas conforme a natureza dós negocios, e a diverſidade de lugares.

Como ſe diſtinguem?

Se chamam a ley comúa, a léy dós ſtatutos, a ley civil, e a ley canonica (ou eſpiritual ou eccleſiaſtica.)

Que he a ley comúa?

Não he outro ſenão os coſtumes comús dó reyno, os quais com o tempo tem alcançado a força de leys.

As leys de ſtatutos ſe fizeram por diverſos

Kings of England, by the Advice and Conſent of both Houſes of Parliament, the Lords and Commons of England.

The Civil Law is the written Law, or a Collection of the Judgments and Opinions of the wiſeſt Men in all Nations for many hundred Years paſt.

What is the Uſe thereof?

To preſerve the Peace and Tranquillity of Mankind in general.

Who was the Author of the Book which contains the Civil Laws, and is intitul'd the Codex?

The Emperor Juſtinian, in the Year 527, had it compiled by the greateſt Lawyers of his Time.

What do you call the Canonical Law?

Certain Canons compiled by the Clergy to ſupport the Dignity of the Church, and to decide in all Matters relating to Eccleſiaſtical Affairs.

The Civil Law is uſed in the Court of Admiralty, becauſe therein are plead-

Reys de Ingalaterra, por conſelho e conſentimento de ambas caſas dó parlamento, os condes e os comuns de Ingalaterra.

A ley civil he a ley eſcrita, óu huma collecçaõ dás ſentenças e opiniões dós mais ſabios homens de todas as naçóens, por muitos ſeculos paſſados.

Que uſo he o ſeu?

Para preſervar a paz e tranquillidade do genro humano em geral.

Quem foi o autor dó livro que contem as leís civiys, e he intitulado o *Codex?*

O Emperador Juſtiniano nó anno 527. o fez collegir pellos mayores letrados de ſeu tempo.

Que chamays a ley canonica?

Certos canones collegidos por clerigos para ſupportar a dignidade da igreja e por decidir em todas materias tocante os negocios eccleſiaſticos.

A ley civil ſe uſa ná corte de almirantaſgo, por que nella ſe litigam

ed

ed and judged Affairs of Foreigners as well as of Engliſhmen.

What is the Privilege of a born Engliſhman?

That he may not be commanded by an arbitrary Power, but according to the known Laws of the Land, viz. the Common and Statute Laws, and eſpecially by that called Magna Charta, *the great Charter, which preſerves him in his Liberty and Property.*

How do they plead and try their Cauſes?

The Accuſer and Accuſed, or Defendant, ſtand forth in the Court of Juſtice; their Advocates plead the Cauſe, the Witneſſes depoſe upon Oath what they know of the Matter. The Judge who ſits on the Bench, recapitulates what has been ſaid on both Sides, and declares the Law in that Caſe. Then the twelve Jurors (who are Houſe-keepers, and choſen by turns, not belonging to the Law, but all Men that have common Senſe may ſerve in this Caſe) go into a Room

e julgam negocios de foraſteiros tam bem como dós Ingreſes.

Que he o privilegio de hum Ingres nacido?

Que não ſéja gouvernado por hum poder arbitrario, masconforme ás leys conhecidas dá terra, a ſaber, a comúa, e as leys de ſtatutos, e eſpecialmente por aquella chamada *Magna Charta*, ou grande privilegio, a qual o conſerva ná ſua liberdade e poſſeſſão.

Como litigam e julgam ſeus pleitos?

O accuſante e o accuſado óu defendente eſtão diante dá corte de juſtiça; ſeus avogados repreſentam o pleito; as teſtemunhas depoem ſobre juramento o que ſabem dá materia. O juez, que eſta ſentado nó banco (cadéira) repite o que ſe tem dito de ambas partes, e declara a ley em eſte caſo. Então os doze jurados (os quais são gente que tem caſa, e eſcolhidos por vezes, não são letrados, mas todo homem que tem uſo de rezam

by

by themſelves, and when they are all agreed return into Court and declare what they think, guilty or not guilty, and the Judge pronounces Sentence accordingly.

pode ſervir neſte caſo) vam em hum apoſento ſós, e quando accordão todos bolvem pera a corte e declarão quem imaginão ſer reo ou não; e o juez pronuncia a ſentença em comformidade.

Are criminal Matters managed in the ſame Manner?

Os caſos criminais ſe dirigem dó meſmo modo?

Yes, and thus an Engliſhman has the Happineſs of being tried and judged only by God and the Laws of his Country, acknowledging no arbitrary Power at all.

Sim e aſſim hum Ingrez tem a ſatisfacção de ſer julgado ſómente por Deos e as leys de ſua patria, não reconhecendo nenhum poder arbitrario.

Happy is that Nation which enjoys their Life, Liberty, and Property, and can loſe neither of them but by thoſe ſame Laws upon which the Safety of all their Fellow-Countrymen depends.

Ditoſa he eſſa nação que goza de ſua vida. liberdade, e poſſeſſoens, e não póde perder nenhumá déllas, ſe não por aquellas meſmas leys ſobre as quais depende a ſegurança de todos ſeus compatriotas.

9 JA 68

GRAMMA-

GRAMMATICA

LUSITANO ANGLICA,

OU

GRAMMATICA

PORTUGUEZA e INGLEZA.

SEGUNDA PARTE,

A qual ſerve para Inſtruir a os *Portuguezes* na Lingua *Ingleza.*

LONDON:

Printed for W. MEADOWS, at the *Angel*; and E. COMYNS, at the *South-Gate* of the *Royal-Exchange*, in *Cornhill*, 1731

BRITISH MUSEUM

A O LEITOR.

SENDO varias as Razoens, que rendem éſta Obra util e neceſſaria; naõ farey mais que obſervar, ſer para o Homem de Negocio, de abſoluta importancia, e para o Curiozo Eſtudante de entertenimento e recreyo; o que ſupoſto, darey principio a o dictame que ſe obſervou neſta Empreza.

Primeiramente ſe tratou das Letras e ſua Pronunciaçaõ moſtrando como ſe leyem por Exemplos no Eſtillo Portuguez *de Soletrear, como tambem das Vogais, Syllabas, Diphtongos, Triphtongos,* &c. *Seguindolhe deſpois as Declinaçoens, Conjugaçoens, Regras da Sintáce, Etymologia, Proſidia e Accentos. Com um Vocabulario, e Dialagos das Couzas mais commuãs que a contecem na vida juntamente varias Cartas ſobre o negocio ou Comercio; e finalmente, A Carta, ou Iuſtrumento de Procuraçam, A Carta, ou Inſtrumento de Fretamento. A Police de Seguro. O Conhecimento. O Inſtrumento, ou Eſcritura de Compromiſſo. A Letra de Cambio, e ſeu Proteſto,* &c. *o que ſem duvida nenhuma ſerá o melhor e mais ſeguro Methodo de Obter e Conſervar o Conhecimento de Ambas as Linguas, e que tenha o Efeito dezejado he o que o Author muy ſinceramente Implora.*

CASTRO.

ADVERTENCIA.

O Author deſta Grammatica o qual últimamente publicou hum Tratado Intitulado, hum Prezente para os Mancebos em entrando a o Contor, Emſina tanto em ſua Caza em *Houndſditch*, entre as Inſignias, do Sol e Coroa perto de *Biſhopſgate*, como por fora a Ler, Eſcrever, Contar, e Livro de Caixa, pello Modo *Italiano*, e em pouco Tempo; ſem as coſtumadas Regras, Taboadas, e impertinentes ou inutils Queſtoens, por hum Methodo, claro, patente, e bem a provado no eſtilo Mercantil.

GRAMMATICA
LUSITANO-ANGLICA;
O U,
Grammatica, *Ingleza*, e *Portugueza*.

SEGUNDA PARTE.

CAP. I.
Das Letras, e ſua Pronunciaçaõ.

OS *Inglezes* naõ ſô mente Eſcrevem de hum modo e Leyem de outro; mas tambem naõ falaõ como Leyem ou Eſcrevem: Se naõ por hum modo muy rapido, que para com elles tem total dominio; o que ſem duvida cauza grande harmonia a os Foraſteiros; para facilitar o qual, tenho aplicado todas as diligencias poſſiveis para expreſſar, tanto o Alphabeto *Inglez*, por eſtilo *Portuguez*, como tambem as Vogais, Syllabas, Diphtongos, Triphtongos, *&c.* com ſuas diſtincçoens; alegando as mais adequadas Regras, para que poſſa o curiozo *Portuguez*, adquirir o conhecimento de ditta Lingua.

O Alphabeto *Inglez* contem 26 Letras aſaber.

A,	*b*,	*c*,	*d*,	*e*,	*f*,	*g*,	*h*,	*i*,
E,	bi,	ci,	di,	i,	ef,	gi,	etche,	ai,
j,	*k*,	*l*,	*m*,	*n*,	*o*,	*p*,	*q*,	*r*,
je,	que,	el,	em,	en,	o,	pi,	quíiu,	ar,
s,	*t*,	*u*,	*v*,	*w*,	*x*,	*y*,	*z*,	
es,	ti,	iu,	vi,	dábiliu,	eks,	uay,	zed,	

Ingles.					*Portugues.*				
ba,	*be*,	*bi*,	*bo*,	*bu*,	be,	bi,	bai,	bo,	bu,
ca,	*ce*,	*ci*,	*co*,	*cu*,	que,	ci,	sai,	co,	cu,
da,	*de*,	*di*,	*do*,	*du*,	de,	di,	dai,	do,	du,
fa,	*fe*,	*fi*,	*fo*,	*fu*,	fe,	fi,	fai,	fo,	fu,
ga,	*ge*,	*gi*,	*go*,	*gu*,	gue,	gi,	jai,	go,	gu,
ha,	*he*,	*hi*,	*ho*,	*hu*,	he,	hi,	hai,	ho,	hu,
ja,	*je*,	*ji*,	*jo*,	*ju*,	je,	ji,	jai,	jo,	ju,
ka,	*ke*,	*ki*,	*ko*,	*ku*,	que,	qui,	cai,	co,	cu,
la,	*le*,	*li*,	*lo*,	*lu*,	le,	li,	lai,	lo,	lu,
ma,	*me*,	*mi*,	*mo*,	*mu*,	me,	mi,	mai,	mo,	mu,
na,	*ne*,	*ni*,	*no*,	*nu*,	ne,	ni,	nai,	no,	nu,
pa,	*pe*,	*pi*,	*po*,	*pu*,	pe,	pi,	pai,	po,	pu,
qua,	*que*,	*qui*,	*quo*,		qúue,	qúui,	qúuai,	qúuo,	
ra,	*re*,	*ri*,	*ro*,	*ru*,	re,	ri,	rai,	ro,	ru,
sa,	*se*,	*si*,	*so*,	*su*,	se,	si,	sai,	so,	su,
ta,	*te*,	*ti*,	*to*,	*tu*,	te,	ti,	tai,	to,	tu,
va,	*ve*,	*vi*,	*vo*,	*vu*,	ve,	vi,	vai,	vo,	vu,
wa,	*we*,	*wi*,	*wo*,	*wu*,	úe,	úi,	úai,	ùo,	úú,
ya,	*ye*,	*yi*,	*yo*,	*yu*,	yé,	yí,	yai,	yó,	yú,
za,	*ze*,	*zi*,	*zo*,	*zu*.	ze,	zi,	zai,	zo,	zu.

O ſeguinte he o *(ba)* areves o qual muda, o Son das Vogais como conſta pellos Accentos; dos quais o primeiro ſe pronuncia largo e com aboca bem aberta, o ſegundo mais curto e com menos força.

Ingles.					*Portugues.*				
ab,	*eb,*	*ib,*	*ob,*	*ub,*	éb,	ĕb,	ib,	ŭb,	âb,
ac,	*ec,*	*ic,*	*oc,*	*uc,*	ec,	ec,	ic,	ac,	ac,
ad,	*ed,*	*id,*	*od,*	*ud,*	ed,	ed,	id,	ad,	ad,
af,	*ef,*	*if,*	*of,*	*uf,*	ef,	ef,	if,	af,	af,
ag,	*eg,*	*ig,*	*og,*	*ug,*	eg,	eg,	ig,	ag,	ag,
ah,	*he,*	*oh,*			êh,	ĕh,	ĭh,		
ak,	*ek,*	*ik,*	*ok,*	*uk,*	êk,	ĕk,	ik,	ŭk,	âk,
al,	*el,*	*il,*	*ol,*	*ul,*	el,	el,	il,	al,	al,
am,	*em,*	*im,*	*om,*	*um,*	em,	em,	im,	am,	am,
an,	*en,*	*in,*	*on,*	*un,*	en,	en,	in,	an,	an,
ap,	*ep,*	*ip,*	*op,*	*up,*	ep,	ep,	ip,	ap,	ap,
ar,	*er,*	*ir,*	*or,*	*ur,*	ar,	ar,	ir,	ar,	ar,
as,	*es,*	*is,*	*os,*	*us,*	es,	es,	is,	as,	as,
at,	*et,*	*it,*	*ot,*	*ut,*	et,	et,	it,	at,	at,
ax,	*ex,*	*ix,*	*ox,*	*ux,*	eks,	eks,	iks,	aks,	aks,
az,	*ez,*	*iz,*	*oz,*	*uz,*	ez,	ez,	iz,	az,	az,
amp,	*emp,*	*imp,*	*omp,*	*ump,*	emp,	emp,	imp,	amp,	amp,
ant,	*ent,*	*int,*	*ont,*	*unt,*	ent,	ent,	int,	ant,	ant,
aſt,	*eſt,*	*iſt,*	*oſt,*	*uſt,*	eſt,	eſt,	iſt,	aſt,	aſt,
ath,	*eth,*	*ith,*	*oth,*	*uth,*	eth,	eth,	ith,	ath,	ath,
bla,	*ble,*	*bli,*	*blo,*	*blu,*	ble,	bli,	blai,	blo,	blu,
bra,	*bre,*	*bri,*	*bro,*	*bru,*	bre,	bri,	brai,	bro,	bru,
cha,	*che,*	*chi,*	*cho,*	*chu,*	che,	chi,	chai,	cho,	chu,
cla,	*cle,*	*cli,*	*clo,*	*clu,*	cle,	cli,	clai,	clo,	clu,
cra,	*cre,*	*cri,*	*cro,*	*cru,*	cre,	cri,	crai,	cro,	cru,
dra,	*dre,*	*dri,*	*dro,*	*dru,*	dre,	dri,	drai,	dro,	dru,
dwa,	*dwe,*	*dwi,*			dué,	duí,	duaí,		
fla,	*fle,*	*fli,*	*flo,*	*flu,*	fle,	fli,	flai,	flo,	flu,
fra,	*fre,*	*fri,*	*fro,*	*fru,*	fre,	fri,	frai,	fro,	fru,

Inglez.	*Portuguez.*
gla, gle, gli, glo, glu,	gle, gli, glai, glo, glu,
gna, gne, gni, gno, gnu,	ne, ni, nai, no, nu,
gra, gre, gri, gro, gru,	gre, gri, grai, gro, gru,
kna, kne, kni, kno, knu,	ne, ni, nai, no, nu,
pha, phe, phi, pho, phu,	fe, fi, fai, fo, fu,
pla, ple, pli, plo, plu,	ple, pli, plai, plo, plu,
pra, pre, pri, pro, pru,	pre, pri, prai, pro, pru,
rha, rhe, rhi, rho, rhu,	re, ri, rai, ro, ru,
sca, sce, sci, sco, scu,	ésqué, ſi, ſai, escó, escú,
ſha, ſhe, ſhi, ſho, ſhu,	xe, xi, xai, xo, xu,
ska, ske, ski, sko, sku,	esqué, esquí, esquaí, escó, escú,
ſla, ſle, ſli, ſlo, ſlu,	celé, cilí, celaí, celo, celú,
sma, sme, smi, smo, smu,	cemé, cimí, cimaí, cemó, cemú,
sna, sne, sni, sno, snu,	cené, ciní, cinaí, cenó, cenú,
spa, spe, spi, spo, spu,	espé, espí, espai, espó, espú,
squa, sque, squi, squo,	esqúué, esqúuí, esqúuai, esqúuó,
ſta, ſte, ſti, ſto, ſtu,	eſté, eſti, eſtai, eſtó, eſtú,
swa, swe, swi, swo, swu,	sué, suí, suaí, suó, suú,
tha, the, thi, tho, thu,	the, thi, thai, tho, thu,
tra, tre, tri, tro, tru,	tre, tri, trai, tro, trú,
twa, twe, twi, two,	tué, tuí, tuaí, tú,
wha, whe, whi, who,	ué, uí, uaí, ú,
wra, wre, wri, wro, wru,	re, ri, rai, ro, ru,
scra, scre, scri, scro, scru,	escré, escrí, escraí, escró, escrú,
ſhra, ſhre, ſhri, ſhro, ſhru,	xeré, xerí, xeraí, xeró, xerú,
spla, sple, spli, splo, splu,	esplé, espli, esplai, esplo, esplu,
spra, spre, spri, spro, spru,	espré, esprí, espraí, espró, esprú,

ſtra,

ſtra, ſtre, ſtri, ſtro, ſtru,	eſtré, eſtrí, eſtraí, eſtró, eſtrú,
thra, thre, thri, thro, thru,	thré, thrí, thraí, thró, thrú,
thwa, thwe, thwi,	thué, thuí, thuaí,

Letra he hum Charactar, q^{a}. ſignifica hum Simple Articulado Son ſem Compoziçaõ. As Letras na Linguá *Ingleza* ſaõ 26 como ſeve do Alphabeto atras.

Dividenſe em Conſoantes, e Vogais. As Vogais tem hum cheo, e perfeito Son de ſi meſmo, ſem ajuda de outra qual quer Letra ; e ſaõ Sinco, aſaber. *a, e, i, o, u,*—e, *y*, Grego que ſepoem no fim das Palavras: Todas em Geral ſoaõ na forma Seguinte aſaber. a, antes de, *ll* he, *a Portuguez*, Ex, *tall, Wall, all*, &c. *leaſe, tal, uál, al*, &c. Tambem antes de, *ld*, he, *a, Portuguez*, Ex *bald, ſcald*, &c. *leaſe, bald, eſcáld*, &c. e antes de *l k*, Ex *talk, walk, leaſe, tak, uák*, e antes de, *l t*, Ex. *Malt, Salt* ; e entre, *w r*, Ex. *war, ward, warm, &c.* e tambem em *Watch, Water, was, waſh*, e nas Palavras dirivadas de qual quer deſtes ; aſſim tambem os Diphtongos.

Au, aw, Saõ, *a, Portuguez*, Ex. *Authority, Audience, ſaw, law, raw*, &c. *leaſe*, Athárity, ádience, ſa, la, ra, *&c.*

A, he, *e, Portuguez* em todos os Nomes de huma Syllaba que acabaõ com huma Conſoante, Ex. *bat, can, far, mad, &c. leaſe, bet, quen, fer, med, &c.* tambem quando duas Conſoantes da meſma eſpecie ſe encontraó no meyo de huma Palavra. Ex. *Battle, cannot, Farrier, &c. leaſe*, bétil, quénnat, fériar, *&c.* e tambem quando huã ſingela Conſoante em o meyo Soa como dobrada, Ex. *baniſh, Dragon, Habit, &c. leaſe*, bénix, Drégan, Hébit, *&c.*

E. em Palavras que acabaõ com huma ou mais Conſoantes he, *e*, *Portuguez*. Ex. *Bed*, *bleſt*, *length*, *Strength*; *&c. leaſe*, *bed*, *bleſt*, *length*, *eſtrength*, &c.

E. Singello no fim de algums Nomes proprios ſoa como, *i*, *Portuguez*. Ex. *Phebe*, *Penelope*, *&c. leaſe*, Phíbi, Penélipi, *&c.* e aſſim deve ſer no fim de todos os Nomes Gregos, e Latinos, Ex. *Epitome*, como tambem em, *he*, *ſhe*, *me*, *we*, *be*, *ye*, *the*, tambem, *y*, no fim de varias Palavras ſoa como, *i*, *Portugues*. Ex. *holy*, *happy*, *daily*, *&c.*

E. tacito e que naõ Soa ſerve para fazer longa a Vogal q^{a}. lhe fica atras, e tambem para abrandar, o, c, g, Ex. *mad*, *made*, *bit*, *bite*, *not*, *note*, *tun*, *tune*, *lac*, *lace*, *rag*, *rage*, *ſtag*, *ſtage*, *hug*, *huge*, *&c. leaſe*, med, mede, bit, bait, not, nat, *&c.* Noteſe, q^{a}. quando, *e*, naõ Soa no fim das Palavras, ſe chama, *e*, final: O qual algumas vezes ſerve para alongar o Son da Vogal que fica atras; como Ex. *ſave*, e algumas vezes he redundante como Ex. *give*. E. naõ Soa no fim das Palavras depois de *r* mas ſe converte em *a Portuguez*. Ex. *fire*, *deſire*, *acre*, *meagre*, *&c. leaſe*, faíar, dízaiar, écar, mígar, *&c.*

I. tem o Son de, *ai*, *Portuguez*, Ex. *pint*, *mind*, *wild*, *&c. leaſe*, páint, máind, úaild, e de *i* em *tin*, *win*, *ſing*, *&c. leaſe*, tin, úin, ſing *&c.* Tambem antes de *g h*, he *a i*, *Portuguez*. Ex. *high*, *nigh*, *ſigh*, *&c. leaſe*, hái, nái, ſaith, *&c.* excepto nos Diphtongos Improprios de *u i*, que he, *i*, *Portuguez*, Ex. *build*, *built*, *guilty*, *&c. leaſe*, bild, bilt, gúilty, *&c.*

O. Tem 4 Sons aſaber.

1°. Como *o Portuguez*, Ex. *go*, *lo*, *ſo*, *&c.*

2. Como *a*, Ex. *hot*, *not*, *plot*, *&c. leaſe*, hat, nat, plat, &c.

3. Como *u*, *Rome*, *move*, *prove*, *&c. leaſe*, Rum, muvé, pruvé, *&c.*

4. Como *a*, Ex. *ſome*, *mouth*, *monk*, *&c. leaſe*, ſám, máuth, mánk.

U. Soa como, *e*, *Portuguez* neſta Palavra, *bury*, *leaſe*, béri, porem em *buſy*, *buſineſs*, ſoa como *i*, *Portuguez*, e ſe leyem bizi, bízines. U. em Palavras de huã Syllaba ou ſeguindolhe qual quer Conſoante he *a Portuguez*, Ex. *rub*, *gun*, *burſt*, *cuſtom*, *clutter*, *mutter*, *&c. leaſe*, ráb, gán, bárſt, cáſtam, clátar, mátar, *&c.* Em todos os Monoſyllabas que terminaõ com *e* ſoa como *u* apertado, Ex. *cube*, *pure*, *flute*, *conſute*, *leaſe*, quíub, píuar, flíut, conſiut, *&c.* Y. Em os Nomes de huã Syllaba, ſe pronuncia como *i Portuguez*, Ex. *by*, *my*, *why*, *thy*, *&c. leaſe*, bai, mai, u i, thai, *&c.*

No fim dos nomes Adjectivos, e Subſtantivos, ſe pronuncia como *i Portuguez*, Ex. *beauty*, *bounty*, *angry*, *ready*, *city*, *heavy*, *&c. leaſe*, bíuti, báunti, éngri. rédi, cíti, évi, nos Verbos de duas Syllabas ſe pronuncia, como *ai Portuguez*, Ex. *deny*, *apply*, *&c leaſe*, dinái, épplai, *&c.*

Tiraõſe os Verbos que acabaõ em, *ry*, que neſtes ſe pronuncia como *i Portuguez*, Ex. *carry*, *tarry*, *merry*, *leaſe*, quéri, téri, méri.

No principio das Palavras ſe pronuncia como *i Portuguez*, ainda que ſe lhe figa Vogal, Ex. *Yard*, *yes*, *year*, *you*, *your*, *yours*, *youth*, *yet*, *young*, *&c. leaſe*, íard, íes, íer, iú, iúar, íuars, íuth, fit, íang, *&c.*

Su. Soa como *x Portugues*, Ex. *Sugar*, *aſſure*, *inſure*, *leaſe*, Xugar, éxuar, ínxúar, *&c.* Tambem, *ti*, quando lhe ſegue qual quer das 5 Letras Vogais Soa como *x*, Ex. *Nation*, *vexation*, *condition*, *determination*, *patience*, *&c. leaſe*, néxian, vékséxían, cándíxían, díterminexian, péxience. *&c.*

Todas as Palavras que acabaõ em, *ure*, Soaõ coma *ar Portugues*, Ex. *Nature*, *adventure*, *proceedure*, *&c. leaſe*, néitar, édventar, procidar, *&c.*

As Conſoantes, *g h*, em o meyo de qual quer Palavra naõ Soaõ porem no fim Soaõ algumas vezes como *f*, Ex. *rough*, *cough*, *laugh*, *enough*, *leaſe*, raf, caf, laf, énaf, *&c.*

As Conſoantes, *ſh*, tem o Son de *x Portuguez*, Ex. *ſhine*, *Shirt*, *Shift*, *Ship*, *ſhort*, *&c. leaſe*, xáin, xáart, xiſt, xip, xart, *&c.*

K. ſeguin dolhe *n* naõ Soa, Ex. *know*, *knot*, *knee*, *knuckle*, *leaſe*, no, nat, ni, náquil, *&c.* Tambem *w*, em lhe ſeguindo, *r* naõ tem Son, Ex. *write*, *wriſt*, *wrong*, *&c. leaſe*, raít, ríſt, ráng, *&c.* Taõ pouco, *g*, ſeguindolhe *n* tem Son, Ex. *gnaw*, *gnat*, *&c. leaſe*, na, net, *&c.*

Eſtes Nomes Singulares, *knife*, *life*, *wife*, *leaſe*, náif, uaif, laif, e ſeus Compoſtos, no numero Plural mudaõ o *f* em *v*, Ex. *knives*, *Wives*, *lives*, *leaſe*, naívs, uaívs, laivs, *&c.*

Dos Diphtongos.

Diphtongos ſaõ duas Vogais juntas, fazendo hum Son, ou huma Syllaba, dos quais ha duas Sortes; proprios, e improprios.

Os proprios, Saõ duas Vogais em huma Syllaba fazendo hum Son Aſaber.

O Diphtongo *ai* he *e Portuguez*. Ex. *fair*, *pair*, *pain*, *ſtain*, *&c. leaſe*, fer, per, péin, eſtéin, *&c.*

O Diphtongo *ee* he *i Portugues*, Ex. *Queen*, *ſeen*, *meet*, *&c. leaſe*, Quin, ſin, mit, *&c.*

O Diphtongo *oo* he *u*, *Portuguez*, Ex. *good*, *noon*, *cook*, *leaſe*, gud, nun, cuk, excepto neſtas palavras que Soa como *a*, Ex. *blood*, *flood*, *ſoot*, *leaſe*, blad, flad, ſat, *&c.*

O Diphtongo *oi*, he *ai Portuguez*, Ex. *void*, *toil*, *ſoil*, *ſpoil*, *&c. leaſe*, váid, táil, ſáil, eſpáil, *&c.*

Os

Os Diphtongos, *ou*, *ow*, Soaõ, como *au Portuguez*, Ex. *Houſe*, *mouſe*, *rouſe*, *cow*, *now*, *bow*, *leaſe*, áus, máus, ráus, caú, naú, aú, *&c.*

Dos Diphtongos Improprios.

Eſte Diphtongo he o encontro de 2 Vogais em huã Syllaba, ſoando ſô huã dellas e ficando a outra muda. Ha 10. aſaber.

aa, ea, *eo*, eu, *ei*, ie, *oa*, oe, *ue*, ui.

aa, he e *Portuguez*, Ex. *Aaron*, *Iſaac*, *Canaan*, *leaſe*, éran, áizac, Kénan.

ea Tem 4 Sons aſaber.

1°. Como *e Portuguez*, Ex. *Bear*, *ſwear*, *tear*, *wear*, *&c. leaſe*, bér, ſúer, tér, úer, *&c.*

2°. Como *a Portuguez*, Ex. *Heart*, *heard*, *hearken*, *&c. leaſe*, hart, hard, harkin, *&c.*

3°. Como *e Portuguez*, Ex. *Already*, *Bread*, *Breaſt*, *Head*, *&c. leaſe*, álredi, bréd, bréſt, héd, *&c.*

4°. Como *i Portuguez*, Ex. *appear*, *fear*, *near*, *Veal*, *deal*, *conceal*, *Flea*, *Plea*, *Pea*, *Sea*, *Tea*, *yea*, *&c. leaſe*, éppiar, fíar, níar, vil, dil, cáncil, fli, pli. pi, Si, Ti, ii, *&c.*

eo, Tem 3 Sons aſaber.

1°. Como *e Portuguez*, Ex. *Jeopardy*, *Leopardy*, *Feoffee*, *&c. leaſe*, Jepardy, Lepardy, Feffi, *&c.*

2°. Como *i Portuguez*, Ex. *People*, *Feodary*, *&c. leaſe*, pípil, fídery :

3°. Como *a Portuguez*, Ex. *Geometry*, *Geography*, *&c. leaſe*, Geámetri, Geâgrefi, *&c.*

eu, ew, Soaõ como *u Portugues*, Ex. *Deuce*, *Pleuriſy*, *Dew*, *few*, *Pew*, *Pewter*, *&c. leaſe*, díus, plúrifi, diu, fíu, píu, píutar, *&c.*

ei. Tem 2 Sons aſaber,

1°. Como *e Portuguez*, Ex. *feign*, *reign*, *leaſe*, féin, rein, *&c.*

2°.

2°. Como *i*, Ex. *perceive*, *Deceit*, *Conceit*, *inveigle*, *Receipt*, *receive*, &c. *leaſe*, párſiv, díſit, cánſit, ínviguil, rícit, ríciv, &c.

ie, he *i Portuguez*, Ex. *Belief*, *believe*, *brief*, *Caſhier*, *Field*, *pierce*, *Prieſt*, &c. *leaſe*, bílif, bíliv, brif, Kexiar, Fild, píars, priſt, &c. e Tambem em buſie, craſie, Gypſie, &c. que em lugar de *ie* no fim ſe eſcrevem hoje com *y*, Ex. *buſy*, *craſy*, *Gypſy*, *dignify*, &c. *leaſe*, bízi, crézi, jipſi, &c.

OA, he *o Portugues*, Ex. *Coat*, *Cloak*, *Coaſt*, *Float*, *Boat*, &c. *leaſe*, Cot, Clok, Coſt, Flot, Bot, &c. excepto em *broad*, *Groat*, que he *a Portuguez*, *leaſe*, brad, grat, e em *Goal*, que he *e Portugues*, *leaſe*, *Gel*.

oe, Soa algumas vezes como *e Portuguez*, Ex. *Œconomy*, *Œdipus*, *Œconomical*, &c. *leaſe*, écanimi, edípas, écanamical, &c. Tambem he *o Portuguez*, Ex. *Foe*, *Toe*, &c. *leaſe*, fo, to, &c. excepto em *Shoe*, que he *u Portuguez*, *leaſe*, xu.

ue, he *u Portuguez*, Ex. *accrue*, *ſue*, *avenue*, *purſue*, *Reſidue*, &c. *leaſe*, écru, ſu, evinu, parſu, reſidu, &c. depois de *g* ſerve para fazelo forte, e a largar a Vogal que vay a diante e emtaõ he *a Portuguez*, Ex. *Catalogue*, *Dialogue*, *Epilogue*, *Fatigue*, *League*, *Synagogue*, *prorogue*, *Rogue*, *Tongue*, &c. *leaſe*, Ketelág, Daíelag, &c.

ui, Tem 3 Sons aſaber.

1°. Como *ai Portuguez*, Ex. *beguile*, *guide*, *diſguiſe*, *quite*, *leaſe*, bígáil, gâid, diſgáis, qúait, &c.

2°. Como *i*, Ex. *Guildford*, *build*, *rebuild*, &c. *leaſe*, Guíldford, bild, rébild, &c.

3°. Como *u*, Ex. *bruiſe*, *recruit*, *Fruit*, *Bruit*, &c. *leaſe*, brús, rícrut, Frut, &c. Tambem quando 3 Vogais vem juntas em huã palavra ſe chama hum Triphtongo, Ex. *Beauty*, *lieu*, *adieu*, *leaſe*, bíuti, líiu, edíiu.

Das Conſoantes em Geral.

Conſoante he huã Letra, a qual naõ pode ter Son, ſem que antes, ou depois ſe lhe junte huã Vogal, Ex. *m* em, *d* de. A Lingua *Ingleza* them 21, *viz.*

b, c, d, f, g, h, j, k, l, m, n, p, q, r, s, t, v, w, x, y, z.

B. naõ ſe pronuncia antes de *m*, Ex. *Comb*, *Lamb*, *dumb*, *&c. leaſe*, cõm, lem, dam, *&c.* Tambem antes det, Ex. *Doubt*, *Debt*, *Debtor*, *&c. leaſe*, dáut, det, détar, *&c.*

C. Tem dois Sons, hum forte e duro, como em *Cat*, *caſt*, *&c. leaſe*, Ket, Keſt, *&c.* e outro brando como em *City*, *Cell*, *&c. leaſe*, Cíti, Cél, *&c.* Soa ſempre duro antes de, *a*, *o*, *l*, *r*, Ex. *can*, *Cord*, *Crab*, *clean*, *&c. leaſe*, Ken, Card, Creb, clin, *&c.* Soa brando antes de *e*, *i*, *y*, Ex. *ceaſe*, *cement*, *City*, *Cypher*, *&c. leaſe*, cís, címent, Citi, Saífar, *&c.* E antes de hum Apoſtrophe (') denota a auzencia de *e* Ex. *plac'd*, em lugar, de *placed*, *leaſe*, pléſed. Quando Soa duro antes de, *e*, *i*, *n*, ſempre ſe eſcreve com *k*, Ex. *keep*, *kill*, *knack*, *know*, *&c. leaſe*, kip, kil, néck, no, *&c.*

Ch, em palavras meramente *Inglezas* tem o Son forte como em *Portuguez*, Ex. *Church*, *rich*, *ſuch*, *cheap*, *&c. leaſe*, Charché, riché, ſaché, chip, *&c.* porem na quellas que ſe dirivaõ do Frances ſe pronunciaõ brandamente como ſe focem eſcritas com *x Portugues*, Ex. *Chevalier*, *Chaiſe*, *Champain*, *Capuchin*, *Machine*, *&c. leaſe*, Xévelíar, Xés, Xem, péin, Quepuxin, Mexin, *&c.* no Nomes dirivados dos Hebreos, ou dos Gregos Soa como *K*, Ex. *Acham*, *Barodach*, *Antioch*, *Chriſtian*, *Monarch*, *Chronicle*, *leaſe*, équam, Berodek, Entiak, Chríſtían, Mánark, Crániquil, *&c.*

D.

D. Se pronuncia como em *Portuguez* nas Palavras em que compoem Syllaba, porem naõ ſe pronuncia nas Palavras ſeguintes, ſervindo ſo para cargar na Syllaba, Ex. *Badge, Hedge, Bridge, Lodge, Judge, &c. leaſe*, bége, hége, brígi, láje, jáge, *&c.*

F. Se pronuncia como em *Portuguez.*

G. Tem dois Sons, hum duro gutural, Ex. *Game, Gold, Gum, &c. leaſe*, guem, guld, gam, *&c.* e outro brando, Ex. *gentle, danger, Ginger, leaſe*, jéntil, dénjar, jíngar, *&c.*

Soa ſempre duro antes de *a, o, u, l, r*, e no fim das Palavras, excepto ſe for molificado por *d, ou, e*, Ex. *Bag, Badge, Cag, Cage, Log, lodge, Dog, dodge, hug, huge, &c. leaſe*, beg, bége, queg, quéje, lag, láge, dag, dáge, hag, iúje, *&c.*

Soa commummente brando antes de *e, i, y*, Ex. *Gender, gentle, Ginger, Gypſy, &c. leaſe*, jéndar, jéntil, jínjar, jípſi, *&c.* excepto que ſeja endure cido por *h* ou *u*, Ex. *guide, guile, gueſt, gheſs, Ghoſt, &c. leaſe*, gaíd gáil, guéſt, gués, góſt, *&c.*

Nas Palavras ſeguintes retem, o ſeu natural duro Son antes de *e*, Ex. *altogether, Anger, beget, Finger, forget, Geeſe, get, Hunger, linger, &c. leaſe*, álto-guethar, éngar, bíguit, fíngar, fárgit, guis, guit, hángar, língar, *&c.* e em todas as Palavras derivadas de *long, big, ſtrong, beg, ſing, bring, &c.*

Da meſma ſorte Soa duro antes de *i* nas Palavras ſeguintes, Ex. *begin, forgive, giddy, Gift, Girt, Girl, Gizzard, &c. leaſe*, bíguin, fárgui·, guídi, guift, gárt, guél, guizard, *&c.* Tambem quando dois *gg*, vem juntos, ambos tem o Son duro, ainda que, *e, i, y*, ſe ſigaõ depois delles, Ex. *Gagg, Dagger, &c. leaſe*, Guégue, Dégar, *&c.*

As Letras que a companhaõ *g*, na meſma Syllaba ſaõ *b, l, n, r*, e fazem o Son de *g* duro, Ex. *Gheſs, Ghoſt, glad, great, Ground, leaſe*, gués, goſt, gled, grét, gráund, *&c.*

G.

G. Antes de *n* no fim das Palavras he mudo, e ſo ſerve para fazer longa a Vogal que fica atras, Ex. *Sign*, *Deſign*, *Enſign*, *conſign*, &c. *leaſe*, ſáin, diſáin, inſáin, conſáin, &c.

H. Se pronuncia como em *Portuguez* apertando mais a riſpiraçaõ.

J. Naõ tem variedade eu ſeu Son ſoando ſempre como *g* brando, Ex. *juſt*, *Joint*, *Jointure*, &c. *leaſe*, jaſt, jáint, jáintar, &c.

K. Se pronuncia como *Q Portuguez*.

L. Naõ ſe pronuncia antes de *f*, *k*, Ex. *Chalk*, *Calf*, *half*, *Walk*, *leaſe*, chák, kef, éf, uak, &c. taõ pouco ſe pronuncia em, *could*, *ſhould*, *would*, *leaſe*, cud, xúd, úd, &c.

M. Se pronuncia como em *Portuguez*.

N. Nunca ſe pronuncia depois de *m*, Ex. *Autumn*, *damn*, *leaſe*, átam, dém, &c.

P. Naõ ſe pronuncia em *Pſalm*, *tempt*, *Receipt*, *leaſe*, Sâm, témt, rícit, &c.

Ph. ou principie ou termine a Syllaba, ſempre Soa como *f*, Ex. *Phyſick*, *Phyſician*, *Philoſopher*, *leaſe*, Fízik, Fízixien, Fílazifar; excepto em *Phthiſick*, *Phthiſical*, aonde, *Ph*, ſaõ mudos e naõ ſóaõ, *leaſe*, thízik, thízical, &c.

Q. Se pronuncia como em *Portuguez*, Ex. *Quail*, *quick*, *Quality*, *leaſe*, quéil, qúic, quáliti, &c.

R. Se pronuncia como em *Portuguez*, Ex. *run*, *reſt*, *Rain*, *leaſe*, rán, reſt, réin, &c.

S. Entre duas Vogais ſe pronuncia como *z*, Ex. *Deſire*, *deſpiſe*, *praiſe*, *diſpraiſe*, &c. *leaſe*, dízaíar, díſpaíz, préiz, diſpréiz, &c. mas no principio das Palavras ſe pronuncia como nó *Latin es*, e nó fim meſmo como *s Portuguez*.

T. Se pronuncia como em *Portuguez*.

Th. Tem dificultoza pronuncia amelhor inſtruiçaõ he aquella da Vôz humana; ſem embargo a

ſua

ſua pronuncia he ſicioza metendo a Lingua entre os dentes, Ex. *that*, *thou*, *thence*, *this*, *they*, *thine*, *&c. leaſe*, thét, thaú, théns, this, thé, tháin, *&c.*

V. Sempre ſepoem antes, das Vogais, e nunca depois dellas, ſem ſe lhe ſeguir *e* mudo, Ex. *vain*, *Voice*, *vulgar*, *have*, *Leaſe*, *Love*, *ſav'd*, *lov'd*, em lugar de *ſaved*, *loved*, *leaſe*, véin, váiz, válgar, év, lív, lav, ſéved, láved, *&c.*

Segueſe depois das Conſoantes *lr*, Ex. *Calves*, *Carve*, *&e. leaſe*, quélvs, quérv, *&c.*

W. Tem dous Sons aſaber, de Conſoante e de Vogal ; antes de Vogal he conſoante, Ex. *Want*, *went*, *Winter*, *leaſe*, úant, úent, úintar, porem depois de *a*, *e*, *o*, he Vogal, Ex. *Awl*, *crawl*, *Dew*, *few*, *how*, *now*, *leaſe*, ál, crál, diíu, fiíu, áu, náu, *&c.* mas todas as vezes que he pronunciada no principio das Palavras ou Syllabas, ſempre tem o Son de *u*, Vogal em *Portuguez*, Ex. *want*, *went*, *was*, *&c. leaſe*, úant, úent, úas, *&c.*

X. Sempre Soa como *es*, *ou*, *ks*, nunca começa palavras commuas e ſô da principio a algums nomes proprios, ſempre acaba, mas nunca começa Syllaba ; algumas vezes tem *c* deſpois, mas nunca *s*, Ex. *Ax*, *vex*, *ſix*, *Ox*, *Box*, *Flux*, *Example*, *exempt*, *expreſs*, *&c. leaſe*, éks, veks, ſiks, ács, bács, flâcs, ékſempil, ékſempt, ékſpres, *&c.*

Z. Naõ tem alteraçaõ no ſeu, Son, pode eſtar antes ou depois de qual quer Vogal, mas nunca pode eſtar immidiatamente antes, ou depois de Conſoante na meſma Syllaba.

As

Para amelhor execuçaõ das referidas Regras, daremos aqui ao Leitor huma pequena Carta em Inglez, *eſcrita pello eſtilo* Portuguez *de Soletrear.*

Inglez.

Since mine of the 16th Inſtant I have yours of the 14th ditto, and refer myſelf to what I have already written in anſwer to your ſaid Letter. This ſerves at preſent to deſire you to furniſh and pay to Mr. J. M. *to the Value of two hundred Pounds, at one or more Times, according as he ſhall deſire it from you, taking his Bill or Bills of Exchange for what you ſhall ſo furniſh him with, and put it to my Account, and this my Letter of Credit ſhall be your ſufficient Warrant for ſo doing.*

O meſmo Inglez *por eſtilo* Portuguez.

Sénſe máin av thi 16 ínſtant Ai ev iúars av thi 14 ditto, end rifár máiſelf tu uát Ai ev alrédy rítin in énſar tu iúar séid Létar. This sárvés et prézent tu dizáir iú tu fárnix end péy tu Míſtar *J. M.* tu thi vélhu av tu hándad páunds et uán ar môr Táims eccarding es hi xal dizáiar it fram iú, teking his Bill ar Bills av Exchénge far uát iú xal fo fárnix him úith end pát it to mái eccáunt, end this mái Létar av Credit xal be iúar ſáffixient Uárant far ſo duing.

Regras, para ſe ſaber quando ſe hade Eſcrever com Letra grande, ou pequena.

As Letras grandes ſe naõ devem de uzar no meyo ou fim de qual quer Palavra, ſem que toda ella ſeje compoſta dellas, mas ſempre no principio; e ainda a hi ſômente neſtes 6 Cazos, aſaber. 1. Em o Principio de qual quer Eſcritura. 2. Depois de Cada Periodo, ou Ponto final, quando começa huã

huã nova Sentença. 3. Em o Principio de cada regra na Poezia, e qual quer Verſo na Bibilia. 4. Em Nomes Proprios de todos os Generos, tanto de Peſſoas, Lugares, ou Couzas, *&c.* 5. Em Termos de Artes, e Nomes de dignidades, Oficiaes, ou outra qual quer Palavra de eſpecial Veneraçaõ em huã Sentença; ou a quem ſe da em particular todo o devido Reſpeito. Tambem todos os Nomes Subſtantivos podem começar com Letra grande; e ſe podem conhecer pellos ſignaes, a, an, ou, *the*, antes delles; Ex. *a Man*, hum Homem; *a Mouſe*, hum Rato; *an Ox*, hum Boy; *an Aſs*, huma Burra; *the City*, a Cidade; *the River*, a Ribeira, *&ce* E ultimamente o Pronome Peſoal I, *eu*, ſe hade ſempre Eſcrever com Capital ou Letra grande. As pequenas ſe uzaõ em qual quer lugar que ſeja.

Das Paradas, ou Pontos, e Virgolas.

As Paradas ſervem para moſtrar que diſtancia de Tempo ſe deve obſervar entre Palavra e Palavra quando ſe lé. E ſaõ taõ abſolutamente neceſſarias para a melhor Intiligencia do que Eſcrevemos, e lemos, que ſem ellas, todas as Eſcrituras ſeriaõ muy confuzas, e ſujeitas a contrarias interpetaçoens. Saõ 4 aſaber.

Comma, Semicólon, Cólon, e Periódo, ou Ponto final.

Cada huma deſtas tem alguma a finidade com o Compaſſo da Muzica: Porque, o Comma, para a Voz do Leitor entre mentes q'elle poſſa com deliberaçaõ contar hum. O Semicólon, dous. O Colon, tres; e o Periodo, ou Ponto final, Quatro,

Comma (,) he huã Virgola ao pe de huma Palavra.

Semicólon (;) Ponto, e Virgola.

Colon (:) dous Pontos.

Periodo

Periodo (.) hum Ponto sô ao Pe de huã Palavra.

Porem em ſe preguntando huã Queſtaõ, ſe pôem hum riſco em riba do Periodo, e ſe chama Interogaçaõ; aſſim (?)

Se de repente ſe expreſſa alguã couza de Admiraçaõ, emtaõ ſe poem hum riſco dereito em riba do Periodo, e ſe chama nota de Admiraçaõ; aſſim (!)

Se huma Sentença eſtiver incluza com outra, da qual naõ he nem tem Parte, em taõ ſe poem dous meyos Circulos, e ſe chamaõ Entre Parentheſis, aſſim ( ) e, quando ſe le, eſtes fazem q' o Ton da Voz ſeje mais baixo, como huma couza que vem por acazo interompendo a Coherencia e concordia do Periodo, e tirandolhe a força da inteligencia que de outro modo podera ter. Cada huã Parte delle tem o meſmo Tempo de diliberaçaõ como huã Virgola.

Eſtas que ſeguem ſaõ as Marcas, ou Characters que mais ſe uzaõ quando ſe eſcreve.

O, Accento (´) em eſtando em ſima de huã Vogal, moſtra, que o Ton, ou força da Voz na pronunciaçaõ eſtá ſobre a quella Syllaba.

Apoſtroſa (') he huã Virgola que ſe poem em ſima das Letras, e denota alguma Letra, ou Letras que ſe deixaraõ de Eſcrever em alguã Palavra para apreſſar a Pronunciaçaõ, Ex. *I'll*, *I will*; eu quero. *Woud'ſt*, *wouldeſt*; queres tu. *Shan't*, *ſhall not*; naõ eyde. *Ne'er*, *never*; nunca.

Aſteriſm (*) he huma Eſtrela que ſerve de guia para alguã Remarca na Margem, ou ao Pe da Folha, ou Pagima.

Muytas dellas juntas ſignificaõ que falta alguã couza na quella Paſſagem, ou relaçaõ do Author a qual tem defeito ou immodeſtia.

Breve, (˘) he hum riſco torto ſobre huã Vogal.

Caret, (˄) ſe poem debaixo da Regra, e denota, que algua Letra, Palavra, ou Sentença, ficou de fora por erro, e se deve incluir exactamente adonde aponta.

Circumflex (ˆ) he do meſmo talho como o Caret, mas ſempre ſe poem emcima de alguma Vogal em huã Palavra, e demoſtra ſer hua Syllaba longa, Ex. *Euphrâtes.*

Diæreſis (¨) dous Pontos em ſima de 2 Vogais em huã Palavra, que de outro modo fariaõ hum Dipthongo, e as reparte em duas diverſas Syllabas.

Hyphen, (-) he hum riſco dereito, o qual em eſtando no fim de huã Regra, denota, que as Syllabas de huã Palavra eſtaõ apartadas, e q˙. o reſto della eſtá no Principio da outra Regra.

Tambem ſe uza para ajuntar, ou Compor, de duas Palavras hua; Ex. *Ale-houſe*, Caza, ou Taverna de Cerveja; *Inn-keeper*, Eſtalajadeiro, ou Eſtalajadeira.

Eſtando por ſima de huã Vogal, emtaõ naõ ſe chama propriamente Hyphen, mas ſim huã Pilica, e de nota haverſe omitido hum *m*, ou *n*, quando ſe Eſereveo. Ex. *nothing is more cõmendable thã fair Writing*; *nothing is more commendable than fair Writing.*

Naõ ha couza q˜. mereça mais louvor q˜. huã boa Letra.

Index, (☞) he o Dedo dienteiro a pontando, e ſignifica ſer aquella Paſſagem ou relaçaõ notavel para aqual eſtá pontando.

Obelisk, + ſe uza tambem como o Aſteriſm *, e he para que o Leitor ſe refira a Margem. Em Diccionarios commumente, denota ſer a Palavra Antigua, e de pouco uzo.

Paragraph, (¶) Paragrafo, ou Divizaõ contem varias Sentenças debaixo de hum Articulo, ou Diſcurço.

Paren-

Parentheſis, [ ] ou Brackets, incluem Palavras, ou Sentenças do meſmo valor ou Significaçaõ com aquellas a quem ſe ajuntaõ, as quaes ſe podem uzar em ſeu lugar.

Quotation, (") ou duas Virgolas a o reves, em o Principio de huã Regra, moſtraõ a Paſſagem, ou Relaçaõ do Author que eſtá Quotada, ou alegada em ſuas proprias Palavras.

Section, (§) ou Divizaõ, ſe uza em o repartimento de hum Capitulo, ou Livro, em menos Partes, ou Porçoens.

Proſodia, ou Accento das Palavras.

As Monoſyllabas que terminaõ com huã Conſoante ſaõ breves, Ex. *Bar, bit, Car, fat, Fin, Hat, mad, Shin, win, &c. leaſe*, bér, bit, quer, fét, Fín, hét, méd, Xín, úin, *&c.*

Aquelles que terminaõ com a Vogal *e*, Saõ longas, Ex. *bare, bite, care, fare, fine, hate, made, ſhine, Wine, leaſe*, bér, baít, quér, fér, fáin, ét, medé, Xáin, úain, *&c.*

As de duas Syllabas, tem o Accento ou na primeira, Ex. *ángel, Bánquet, cértain, Dánger, éarly, férvent, Gárment, húman, Jéwel, Kíngdom, Lícence, Mémber, Náture, óintment, párdon, quárrel, Ráiment, Sérmon, Témple, wánton, &c.* ou na ultima, Ex. *Abhór, begán, commánd, deſcénd, encámp, foménr, genteél, implóre, lamént, matúre, negléct, obſcúre, permít, reſórm, ſincére, transfórm, vouchſáfe.*

As de 3 Syllabas tem o Accento na primeira, Ex. *árgument, Báttlement, cáptivate, Décency, Excellence, Férvency, Gárriſon, Hármony, íntimate, Kínſwoman, Lénity, mágnify, négligent.*

Na Syllaba do meyo, Ex. *Advénture, cohérent, detérmine, encóunter, forbídden, immórtal, incéntive, inhérit, matérnal, nocturnal, obſérvance, preſúmptive,*

tive, ou na ultima, Ex. *Apprehénd*, *circumvént*, *diſappoint*, *entertain*, *importúne*, *intercépt*, *overchargé*, *perſevére*, *reconcile*, *thereupon*.

As de 4 Syllabas tem o Accento vario, por que huãs vezes o tem na primeira, Ex. *ámiable*, *cómfortable*, *díligently*, *éfficacy*, *fórmidable*, *glóriouſly*, *innocency*, *mércenary*, *náturally*, *óratory*, *pátrimony*, *ſánctuary*; outras vezes na ſegunda, Ex. *abúndantly*, *behávior*, *commúnicate*, *detérminate*, outras vezes na terceira, Ex. *Apprehénſion*, *Arbitrátor*, *comprehénſive*, *diſinhérit*, *howſoéver*, *ornaméntal*; outras vezes na quarta, Ex. *Legerdemáin*, *neverthelés*, *&c.*

As de 5 Syllabas ſempre tem o Accento ou na ſegunda, Ex. *abóminable*, *commúnicable*, *extrávagantly*, *immédiately*, *notóriouſly*, *oríginally*, *perpétually*, *unnéceſſary*; ou nas do meyo, Ex. *Abdicátion*, *Admonition*, *Benedíction*, *Ceremoníal*, *&c.*

As de 6 Syllabas tem quazi ſempre o Accento na quarta, Ex. *Abominátion*, *Commemóration*, *Diſadvantágious*, *Eccleſiáſtical*, *Familiárity*, *Irregulárity*, *Mathematícian*, *Qualification*, *&c.*

Das partes da Oraçam.

As partes da Oraçaõ ſaõ oyto, aſaber Nome, Pronome, Verbo, Participio, Adverbio, Prepoziçaõ, Conjuncçaõ, Interjeiçaõ.

Nome.

Os Nomes ſaõ as Vozes, ou palavras, q' Significaõ alguã Couza, q' ſeve, ouve, ou palpa; e ſedividem, em duas Claces; a Saber em ſubſtantivos, e em adjectivos.

Os Subſtantivos ſignificaõ a meſma e Sencia, e entidade da Couza; Como, *Earth*, terra; *Stone*, pedra;

pedra ; e podem eſtar na oracaõ por Sy ſo ſem ajuda de adjectivo.

Os adjectivos ſaõ Aquelles, q' ſignificaõ aqualidade, ou Accidente da couza, Como, *good*, bom ; *white*, branco ; enaó podem eſtar na oraçaô ſem ajuda de Subſtantivo, claro, ou es condido ;

Os Nomes Subſtantivos ſe dividem em proprios, e appellativos.

O nome proprio he aquelle, q' Significa as Couzas proprias, e Certas, Como, *Romulus*, Romulo ; *Rome*, Roma.

O nome appellativo he aquelle, q' Significa as Couzas Commuas, e incertas, Como, *King*, Rey ; *Town*, Lugar.

Genero.

Todo o nome Subſtantivo, ou he de Genero Maſculino, ou Feminino, ou Commum, ou Neutro.

Os nomes de Anjos, Homens, e animais Machos ſaõ do Genero Maſculino.

Os nomes defemeas tanto depeſſoas, Como de Animais ſaó do Genero feminino.

Os nomes, q' Significaõ hum, e outro Sexo Saó do Genero Commum, Como, *Couſin*, q' Significa, primo, ou prima ; *Neighbour*, q' ſignifica, vizinho, ou vizinha ; *Servant*, Criado, ou Criada ; *Thief*, Ladraõ, ou Ladra ;

Os nomes, em os quais ſe naõ pode diſcernir, nem conhecer o ſexo, Como ſaõ, *the creeping things*, As Couzas Reptis, q' Andáõ de Raſto, *the Fiſhes*, os peixos, ſaõ do Genero neutro.

Da Derivaçam dos Nomes.

O Nome, ou he permetívo, ou derivativo ; o permitivo he aquelle, q' naõ ſe deriva de outro,

Como, *Love*, Amor ; e derivativo he aquelle, q' ſe deriva de permitivo, Como, *Lover*, Amante, q' ſe deriva de *Love*.

A Lingua Ingleza Contem emſi grande variedade de outras Linguas ; por Cuja Razaó muyta parte de ſeus nomes tem ſua derivaçaõ Nellas ; o Curiozo, q' a quizer Saber, o podera cenſeguir recorrendo a *Bailey*, e a outros Diccionarios, q' apequenés deſte Volume, naõ permite mayor extençaõ.

Há Certos Subſtantivos materiais, a os quais ajuntandolhe huã deſtas Syllabas, er, yer, ou ſter, formaõ outros ſubſtantivos, q' ſignifiçaõ, o agente empregada nas Cõuzas. Ex.

An Hat, hum Chapeo.	*An Hatter*, Chapeleiro.
Pot, Panella.	*Potter*, o Leyro.
Fiſh, Peyxe.	*Fiſher*, Peſcador.
Glove, Luva.	*Glover*, Luveyro.
Garden, Jardin.	*Gardiner*, Jardineyro.
Gun, Canhaõ.	*Gunner*, Canhoneyro.
Law, Ley.	*Lawyer*, Juriſta.
Game, Jogo.	*Gameſter*, Jugador.
Seam, Cuſtura.	*Seamſter*, Cuſtureyra.

Tambem ha certos Subſtantivos peſſoais, dos quais ſe formaõ outros Subſtantivos de dignidade, ajuntandolhe eſta Syllaba, *Ship*, Ex.

Apoſtle, Apoſtolo.	*Apoſtleſhip*, Apoſtolado.
Admiral, Almirante.	*Admiralſhip*, Almirantaſgo.
Maſter, Meſtre.	*Maſterſhip*, Magiſterio.
Lord, Senhor.	*Lordſhip*, Senhoria.

Da meſma ſorte a Syllaba, *Hood*, junta aos Subſtantivos tem a meſma força, Ex.

Father, Pay.	*Fatherhood*, Parternidade
Child, Criança.	*Childhood*, Mininice.
Brother, Irmaõ.	*Brotherhood*, Irmandade.

Man

Man, Homem.	*Manhood*, Virilidade.
Falſe, Falſo.	*Falſhood*, Falſidade.
Prieſt, Sacerdote.	*Prieſthood*, Sacerdocio.

Tambem da mayor Parte dos Adjectivos terminados em, *full*, *leſs*, *ous*, *y*, *iſh*, ſe formaõ Subſtantivos, ajuntandolhe a Syllaba, *neſs*, Ex.

Powerful, poderoſo.	*Powerfulneſs*, Poder.
Wilful, opinativo.	*Wilfulneſs*, Opiniaõ.
Careleſs, ſem cuydado.	*Careleſsneſs*, Deſcuydo.
Godly, piadozo.	*Godlineſs*, Piedade.
Crafty, engenhozo.	*Craftineſs*, Engenho.
Fooliſh, loco.	*Fooliſhneſs*, Locura.
Righteous, juſto.	*Righteouſneſs*, Juſtidade.
Worthy, digno.	*Worthineſs*, Eſtimaçaõ.
Deviliſh, diabolico.	*Deviliſhneſs*, Diabrura.
Brutiſh, brutal.	*Brutiſhneſs*, Brutualidade.

Tambem há muytos Subſtantivos derivados do Latim, terminados variamente, porque hums terminaõ em, *ion*; derivados dos Latinos Acabados em, *io*, como, *Opinion*, Opiniaõ, de Opinio; *Religion*, Religiaõ, de, Religio; *Queſtion*, Pregunta, de, Queſtio. Outros terminaõ em, *our*, derivados dos Latinos em, *or*, como, *Labour*, trabalho, de, Labor; *Honour*, Honra, de, Honor; *Favour*, Favor, de, Favor; outros terminaõ em, *ty*, e ſe derivaõ dos Latinos em, *tas*, como, *Piety*, Piedade, de, Pietas; *Charity*, Caridade, de, Charitas; *Liberality*, Liberalidade, de, Liberalitas; *Purity*, Puridade, de, Puritas; e outros muytos.

Dos Numeros dos Nomes.

Os Nomes tem Numero ſingular, e Numero plurar; o ſingular he quando ſe fala de hum; como, *a King*, hum Rey; o plurar, quando ſe fala de muytos, como, *Men*, Homens, *Kings*, Reys.

O numero plurar ſe forma ordinariamente por ajuntamento de hum, *s*, ao ſingular, Ex.

The King, o Rey.	*The Queen*, a Rainha.
The Kings, os Reys.	*The Queens*, as Rainhas.
The Lord, o Senhor.	*Book*, Livro.
The Lords, os Senhores.	*Books*, Livros.
My Brother.	Meu Irmaõ.
My Brothers.	Meus Irmaõs.
My Horſe.	Meu Cavallo.
My Horſes.	Meus Cavallos.
My Houſe.	Minha Caza.
My Houſes.	Minhas Cazas.
Tree.	Arvore.
Trees.	Arvores.

Tres Excepçois tem eſta regra.

A primeyra he nos nomes, q' terminaõ o ſingular em, *ch*, *dg*, *ſe*, *ſh*, *ſſ*, *x*. q' neſtes ſe forma o plurar ajuntandolhe, *es*, *ex.*

Church,	*Churches*,	Igrejas.
Match,	*Matches*,	Mechas.
Hedg,	*Hedges*,	Cercos.
Horſe,	*Horſes*,	Cavallos.
Fiſh,	*Fiſhes*,	Peyxes.
Croſs,	*Croſſes*,	Cruzes.
Witneſs,	*Witneſſes*,	Teſtemunhas.
Box,	*Boxes*,	Caixas.

A ſegunda he nos nomes acabados em, *f*, ou *fe*, q'eſtes formaõ o plurar, mudando, *o*, *f*, ou *fe*, em, *ves*, Ex.

Self,	*ſelves*,	meſmos.
Knife,	*Knives*,	Facas.
Life,	*Lives*,	Vidas.
Calf,	*Calves*,	Vitellas.
Staff,	*Staves*,	Bordõis, Baculos.
Thief,	*Thieves*,	Ladrõis.
Wife,	*Wives*,	Mulheres cazadas
Loaf,	*Loaves*,	Pains.

Ate-

A terceyra he nos irrigulares ſeguintes.

Man,	*Men*,	Homens,
Woman,	*Women*,	Mulheres.
Child,	*Children*,	Rapazes, crianças.
Ox,	*Oxen*,	Boys.
Mouſe,	*Mice*,	Ratos.
Louſe,	*Lice*,	Piolhos.
Die,	*Dice*,	Dados.
Foot,	*Feet*,	Pes.
Gooſe,	*Geeſe*,	Ganſos,
Penny,	*Pence*,	Peniques.
Sow,	*Swine*,	Porcos.
Tooth,	*Teeth*,	Dentes.

Noteſe, q' ha Subſtantivos, q' naõ tem plurar como, *Gold*, Ouro; *Silver*, Prata; *Copper*, Cobre; *Lead*, Chumbo, *&c.*

Das Declinaçois dos Nomes.

Os Nomes em Inglez, ſe declinaõ por meyo de Artigos, e naõ por Mudança de terminaçois, como os Latinos e tem ſeis Cazos: a ſaber, Nominativo, Genitivo, Dativo, Acuzativo, Vocativo, Abelativo.

Os artigos ſaõ *the*, *of*, *to*, *the*, *o*, *from*; o Artigo, *the*, correſponde ao artigo, o, a, os, as do Portuguez, e ſe aplica ao Nominativo, e Acuzativo; o Artigo *of*, correſponde ao Artigo, de, da, des, das, e ſerve para o Genitivo; o Artigo, *to*, correſponde ao Artigo, a, ao, para o, e ſerve, para o Dativo; o Artigo, *o*, he o meſmo q'em Portuguez, e ſe aplica ao Vocativo; o Artigo, *from*, correſponde ao artigo, de, do Portuguez, e ſerve para o Abelativo.

Noteſe q' ſuppoſto, *of*, e *from*. ſignifiquem, de, em *Portuguez*; com tudo, no *Inglez* ſe uza de, *of*, quando dois nomes ſubſtantivos, pertençentes a Couzas diverſas, ſe encontraõ na oraçao; Como, *the Riches of* England *are great*, As Riquezas de *Inglaterra* ſaõ Grandes;

Ede,

Ede, *from* ſe uza quando aqueſtaõ he feita, pella pregunta, unde, (de donde) dos Latinos; como, *from whence come you?* de donde vens? *I come from* London; eu venho de *Londres*; tudo o ſobredito ſiçará manifeſto, áviſta da declinaçaõ, que he na forma ſeguinte.

Singular.

N. *the King*, o Rey.
G. *of the King*, do Rey.
D. *to the King*, ao Rey.
Ac. *the King*, o Rey.
V. *o King*, o' Rey.
A. *from the King*, do Rey.

Tambem ſe pode declinar por meyo deſta particulà, *a*, *q̃*, em *Portuguez*, ſignifica hum;

Singular.

N. *a King*, hum Rey.
G. *of a King*, de hum Rey.
D. *to a King*, á hum Rey.
Ac. *a King*, hum Rey.
V. *Caret.*
A. *from a King*, de hum Rey.

Advertindo q' ſe o nome Começa por hua vogal, he neceſſario uzár de *an*, em Lugar de, *a*, Ex.

N. *an Angel*, hum Anjo.
G. *of an Angel*, de hum Anjo.
D. *to an Angel*, a hum Anjo.
Ac. *an Angel*, hum Anjo.
A. *from an Angel*, de hum Anjo.

Para declinar o plurar, naõ he neceſſario mais, q' juntar hum, *s*, ao ſingular, obſervando a meſma ordem.

Noteſe

Noteſe q' os Artigos tanto ſervem para o maſculino como para o feminino, e tanto, para o ſingular, como para o plurar. Ex.

A Man, and a Woman,	Hum Homem, e huá mulher.
A Brother, and a Siſter,	Hum Irmaõ, e huá Irmã.
The Father, and the Mother,	O Pay, e a May.
The Son, and the Daughter,	O Filho, e a Filha.
The Children,	As Crianças.
The Sun,	O Sol.
The Moon,	A Lua.
The Stars.	As Eſtrellas.

Dos Adjectivos.

Os Nomes Adjectivos tem ſó huã Forma, como, *bitter*, amargo; *ſour*, azedo; *ſharp*, agudo; *even*, igual; *crafty*, aſtuto; *greedy*, ſofrego; *warlike*, guerreyro, bellicozo; *large*, cumprido; *fit*, capas, proporcionado; *narrow*, eſtreyto.

No *Inglez* ſervem para todo o genero, e para todo o numero; ideſt, que o meſmo Adjectivo ſerve com o Subſtantivo; ſeja eſte de qualquer genero, que for; eſteja no, ſingular, ou no plurar, Ex.

Good Boy,	Bom Rapaz.
Good Boys,	Bons Rapazes.
Good Girl,	Boa Rapariga.
Good Girls,	Boas Raparigas.
Wiſe Man,	Sabio Homem.
Wiſe Men,	Sabios Homems.
Wiſe Woman,	Sabia Mulher.
Wiſe Women.	Sabias Mulheres.

Do Modo, como muytos Adjectivos ſe formam.

Muytos Adjectivos ſe formaõ de Subſtantivos, ajuntandolhe a Syllaba, *full*, que importa huma Quantidade, da Qualidade, que o Subſtantivo ſignifica, Ex.

Joy, Alegria,	*joyful*, alegre.
Fruit, Fruta,	*fruitful*, frutifero.
Youth, Mocidade,	*youthful*, juvenil.
Care, Cuydado,	*careful*, cuydadozo.
Uſe, Uzo,	*uſeful*, uzual.
Deceit, Dolo,	*deceitful*, dolozo.
Diſdain, Deſdem,	*diſdainful*, deſdenhozo.
Grace, Graça,	*graceful*, graciozo.
Faith, Fé,	*faithful*, fiel.
Forget, Eſquecimento,	*forgetful*, eſquecido.
Beauty, Fermozura,	*beautiful*, formoza.
Bounty, Benignidade,	*bountiful*, benigno.
Chear, Alegria,	*chearful*, alegre.
Skill, Pericia,	*skilful*, perito.
Power, Poder,	*powerful*, poderozo.
Delight, Delicia,	*delightful*, deliciozo.
Diſtruſt Deſconfiança,	*diſtruſtful*, deſconfiado.
Dread, Medo,	*dreadful*, medrozo.
Will, Vontade,	*wilful*, voluntario.
Hurt, Damno,	*hurtful*, damnoſo.
Pain, Dor,	*painful*, doloroſo.
Watch, Vigia,	*watchful*, vigilante.
Plenty, Abundancia,	*plentiful*, abundante.

Outros ſe formaõ de Subſtantivos, ajuntandolhe a Syllaba, *leſs*, que importa huma privaçaõ da quillo, que o Subſtantivo ſignifica, Ex.

Beard, Barba.	*beardleſs*, deſbarbado.
Blame, Culpa,	*blameleſs*, ſem culpa.

Fa-

Father, Pay, *fatherleſs*, orphaõ.
Friend, Amigo, *friendleſs*, ſemamigo.
God, Deus, *godleſs*, ſem deus.
End, Fim, *endleſs*, ſem fim.
Name, Nome, *nameleſs*, ſem nome.
Queſtion, Queſtaõ, *queſtionleſs*, ſem queſtaõ.
Senſe, Sentido, *ſenſeleſs*, ſem ſentido.

Outros ſe formaõ, ajuntandolhe hum, *ous*, Ex.

Danger, Perigo, *dangerous*, perigozo.
Courage, Animo, *courageous*, animozo.
Malice, Malicia, *malicious*, maliciozõ.
Harmony, Armonia, *harmonious*, armoniozo.
Valour, Valor, *valourous*, valerozo.
Zeal, Zello, *zealous*, zellozo.
Monſter, Monſtro, *monſtrous*, monſtruozo.
Outrage, Contumelia, *outrageous*, contumeliozo
Marvel, Maravilha, *marvellous*, maravilhozo.
Rigour, Rigor, *rigorous*, rigorozo.
Virtue, Virtude, *virtuous*, virtuozo.

Outros ſe formaõ ajuntandolhe a Syllaba, *ly*, Ex.

God, Deus, *godly*, piadozo.
Brother, Irmaõ, *brotherly*, irmandade.
Earth, Terra, *earthly*, terreſtre.
Heaven, Ceo, *heavenly*, celeſte.
Love, Amor, *lovely*, amavel.
Order, Ordem, *orderly*, ordenado.

Outros ſe formaõ ajuntandolhe hum, *y*, Ex.

Blood, Sangue, *bloody*, ſanguinho.
Dirt, Lama, *dirty*, lamacento.
Guilt, Culpa, *guilty*, culpado.
Hair, Cabello, *hairy*, cabelludo.
Hunger, Fome, *hungry*, faminto.
Mud, Limo, *muddy*, limozo.
Need, Neceſſidade, *needy*, neceſſitado.
Sand, Area, *ſandy*, areozo.
Stone, Pedra, *ſtony*, pedragozo.
Wind, Vento, *windy*, ventozo.

Outros

Outros ſe formam ajuntandolhe a Syllaba, iſh, *Ex.*

Brute, Bruto,	*brutiſh*, brutal.
Devil, Diabo,	*deviliſh*, diabolico.
Fool, Eſtulto,	*fooliſh*, fatuo.
Sot, Tonto, Bebado,	*ſotiſh*, atontado, embebedado.
Water, Agua,	*wateriſh*, aguado.
Whore, Puta,	*whoriſh*, putanheiro.
Child, Criança,	*childiſh*, pueril.

Porem ſe eſta Syllaba, iſh, *ſejunta a Adjectivos, diminue ſua ſignificam.* Ex.

White, branco,	*whitiſh*, branquinho.
Red, vermelho,	*rediſh*, vermelhinho.
Black, negro,	*blackiſh*, negrinho.
Cold, frio,	*coldiſh*, friozinho.
Sweet, doce,	*ſweetiſh*, docezinho.

Outros ſe formam ajuntandolhe a particula, able, *Ex.*

Seaſon, Oportunidade,	*ſeaſonable*, oportuno.
Blame, Culpa,	*blameable*, culpavel.
Anſwer, Repoſta,	*anſwerable*, reſponſavel.
Change, Troco,	*changeable*, comutavel.
Cure, Cura,	*curable*, curavel.
Favour, Favor,	*favourable*, favoravel.
Marriage, Cazamento,	*marriageable*, cazadeira.
Note, Nota,	*notable*, notavel.
Pardon, perdaõ,	*pardonable*, perdoavel.
Profit, proveito,	*profitable*, proveytozo.

Outros ſe formam ajuntandolhes as Syllabas, cal, al, ical, *Ex.*

Rhetorick, Rhetorica,	*Rhetorical*, Rhetorico.
Angel, Anjo,	*Angelical*, Angelico.

Can-

Canon, o Canon,	*canonical*, canonico.
Logic, Logica,	*logical*, logico.
Muſick, Muzica,	*muſical*, muzico.
Allegorick, Allegoria,	*allegorical*, allegorico.
Accident, Accidente,	*accidental*, accidental.
Hiſtory, Hiſtoria,	*hiſtorical*, hiſtorico.
Method, Methodo,	*methodical*, methodico.
Perſon, Peſſoa,	*perſonal*, peſſoal.

Dos Graos de Comparaçam.

Em os Nomes Adjectivos, tem ſo Lugar a comparaçaõ ; em aqual ſe admitem tres graos ; a ſaber pozitivo, que ſignifica a ſimples qualidade, ou quantidade da Couza ; como, *big*, grande ; *white*, branco ; comparativo, que e leva a couza a mais alto Lugar ; como, *bigger*, mais grande ; *whiter*, mais branco ; e ſuperlativo, que a exalta ao mais alto Lugar ; como, *biggeſt*, o mais grande ; *whiteſt*, o mais branco.

O Comparitivo formaſe dopozitivo, ajuntando lhe a Syllaba, *er*, regularmente ; e o ſuperlativo, ajuntandolhe a Syllaba, *eſt*, Ex.

Low, bayxo ; *lower*, mais bayxo ; *loweſt*, o mais bayxo.

Great, grande ; *greater*, mayor ; *greateſt*, o mayor.

High, alto, *higher*, mais alto, *higheſt*, o mais alto.

Tambem ſe pode formar com as dicçois, *more*, e *moſt*, a primeira para expreſſar o comparativo, e ſegunda, o ſuperlativo, o que commumente tem Lugar nos Adjectivos, que terminaõ, em, *ous*, Ex.

Charles *is ingenious*,	*Carlos* he engenhozo.
William *is more ingenious*,	*Guilherme*, he mais engenhozo.

George

George *is the moſt ingenious in the World,*	*George* he o mais engenhozo em o mundo.
Glorious, gloriozo.	
More glorious,	mais gloriozo.
The moſt glorious,	o mais gloriozo.
Jealous, zelozo.	
More jealous,	mais zelozo.
The moſt jealous,	o mais zelozo.

Das comparaçoens irrigulares.

Good, *better*, *the beſt*, bom, melhor, o melhor.
Ill, *bad*, *naught*, maõ, *worſe*, peyor, *the worſt*, o mais peyor.
Much, muyto, *more*, mais, *moſt*, o mais.
Little, pouco, leſs, menos, *the leaſt*, o minimo.

Dos Pronomes.

O Pronome he aquelle, que ſe poem em Lugar do nome; declinaſſe tambem por Cazos, tendo Numero ſingular, e plural.

Ha quatro eſpecies de Pronomes; peſſoais, poſſeſſivos, demonſtrativos, e relativos.

Os peſſoays faõ, *I*, eu, *thou*, tu, he, elle no Numero ſingular; e we nos, *ye* ou *you*, *they*, elles, no plurar. Se declinaõ na Forma ſeguinte.

Singular.

N. *I* ou *me*,	eu.
G. *of me*,	de mi.
D. *to me*,	a mi.
A. *me*,	a mi.
Ab. *from me*.	de mi.

Plural.

N. *We*,	nos.
G. *of us*,	de nos.
D. *to us*,	à nos.
A. *us*,	a nos.
Ab. *from us*.	de nos.

Sin-

Singular.

N. *thou*,	tu.
G. *of thee*,	de ti.
D. *to thee*,	a ti.
Ac. *thee*,	ati.
V. *o thou*,	ó tu,
A. *from thee*,	de ti.

Plural.

N. *ye*,	vôz.
G. *of you*,	de vôz.
D. *to you*,	a vôz.
Ac. *you*,	á vôz.
V. *o ye*,	ó vôz.
A. *from you*,	de vôz.

Sing.	*Plural.*
N. *he*, elle.	N. *they*, elles.
G. *of him*, delle.	G. *of them*, delles.
D. *to him*, a elle.	D. *to them*, a elles.
Ac. *him*, a elle.	Ac. *them*, a elles.
A. *from him*, delle.	A. *from them*, delles.

Sing.	*Plural.*
N. *ſhe*, ella,	o plurar de, *ſhe*, *he* o
G. *of her*, della.	meſmo q' o de, *he*, a
D. to *her*, a ella.	ſima.
Ac. *her*, a ella.	
A. *from her*, della.	

Os Pronomes poſſeſſiſivos ſaõ aquelles, q' moſtraõ a poſſe das Couzas; eſtes ſaõ de duas maneyras, ou Conjunctivos, ou abſolutos.

Os Conjunctivos ſaõ aquelles, q' ſejuntaõ aos Subſtantivos, q' ſignifiçaõ as entidades poſſuidas, Ex.

My Father,	meu Pay.
My Mother,	minha May.

My Siſter,	minha Irmã.
My Brother,	meu Irmaõ.
My Friends,	meus Amigos.
Thy Horſe,	teu Cavallo.
Thy Mare,	tua Egua.
Thy Dogs,	teus Cãis.
Thy Bitches,	tuas Cadellas.
His Ox,	ſeu Boy.
His Cow,	ſua Vaca.
His Cocks,	ſeus Gallos.
His Hens,	ſuas Gallinhas.
Our Houſes,	Noſſas Cazas.
Your Book,	Voſſo Livro.
Your Books,	Voſſos Livros.
Their Country,	ſeu Pays.
Their Cities.	ſuas Cidades.

Noteſe que quando a Couza poſſuida pertence amacho, ſe uza do poſſeſſivo, *his*, e pertencendo a femea, ſe uza do poſſeſſivo, *her*, declinaõſe os ſebreditos poſſeſſivos na forma ſeguinte.

Sing.	*Plural.*
N. *my*, meu, minha,	meus, minhas.
G. *of my*, de meu, de minha,	de meus, de minhas.
D. *to my*, a meu, a minha,	a meus, a minhas.
A. *my*, meu, minha,	meus, minhas.
V. *o' my*, ó meu, minha,	meus, minhas.
A. *from my*, de meu, de minha,	de meus, de minhas.

Sing.	*Plural.*
N. *thy*, teu, tua,	teus, tuas.
G. *of thy*, de teu, de tua,	de teus, de tuas.
D. *to thy*, a teu, a tua,	a teus, a tuas.
A. *thy*, teu, tua,	teus, tuas.
V. *o thy*, ou teu, tua,	teus, tuas.
A. *from thy*, de teu, de tua,	de teus, de tuas.

Sing.

Sing.	*Plural.*
N. *his*, ſeu, ſua,	ſeus, ſuas.
G. *of his*, de ſeu, de ſua,	de ſeus, de ſuas.
D. *to his*, á ſeu, á ſua,	á ſeus, á ſuas.
A. *his*, ſeu, ſua,	ſeus, ſuas.
Ab. *from his*, de ſeu, de ſua,	de ſeus, de ſuas.

Sing.	*Plural.*
N. *her*, ſeu, ſua,	ſeus, ſuas.
G. *of her*, de ſeu, de ſua,	de ſeus, de ſuas.
D. *to her*, á ſeu, á ſua,	á ſeus, á ſuas.
A. *her*, ſeu, ſua,	ſeus, ſuas.
Ab. *from her*, de ſeu, de ſua,	de ſeus, de ſuas.

Sing.

N. *our*, noſſo, noſſa.
G. *of our*, de noſſo, de noſſa.
D. *to our*, a noſſo, á noſſa.
A. *our*, noſſo, á noſſa.
V. *o our*, 'o noſſo, o' noſſa.
Ab. *from our*, de noſſo, de noſſa.

Plur.

N. *ours*, noſſos, noſſos.
G. *of ours*, de noſſos, de noſſas.
D. *to ours*, á noſſos, á noſſas.
A. *ours*, noſſos, noſſas.
V. *o ours*, o' noſſos, o noſſas.
Ab. *from ours*, de noſſos, de noſſas.

Sing.

N. *your*, voſſo, voſſa.
G. *of your*, de voſſo, de voſſa.
D. *to your*, á voſſo, á voſſa.
A. *your*, voſſo, voſſa.
V. *o your*, o' voſſo, o' voſſa.
Ab. *from your*, de voſſo, de voſſa.

Plural.

N. *yours*, voſſos, voſſas.
G. *of yours*, de voſſos, de voſſas.
D. *to yours*, a' voſſos, a voſſas.
A. *yours*, voſſos, voſſas.
V. *o yours*, o' voſſos, o' voſſas.
Ab. *from yours*, de voſſos, de voſſas.

Sing.

N. *their*, ſeu, ſua.
G. *of their*, de ſeu, de ſua.
D. *to their*, a ſeu, a ſua.
A. *their*, ſeu, ſua.
V. *o their*, o' ſeu, o' ſua.
Ab. *from their*, de ſeu, de ſua.

Plural.

N. *theirs*, ſeus, ſuas.
G. *of theirs*, de ſeus, de ſuas.
D. *to theirs*, á ſeus, á ſuas.
A. *theirs*, ſeus, ſuas.
V. *o their*, o' ſeus, 'o ſuas.
Ab. *from their*, de ſeus, de ſuas.

Noteſe, q', *their*, ſe pode aplicar no plurar; como tambem, *yours*, ſe pode uzar no ſingular, e, *your*, no plurar.

Os Abſolutos ſaõ aquelles, q' ſenaõ juntaõ immidiatamente aos Subſtantivos; ſe naõ por via de conjunçâo; os quais ſaõ os ſeguintes.

mine, meu, minha,	meus, minhas.
thine, teu, tua,	teus, tuas,
his, ſeu, ſua,	ſeus, ſuas.
her, ſeu, ſua,	ſeus, ſuas.
ours,	noſſos, noſſas.

their,

their, ſua,	ſeus, ſuas.
your, voſſo, voſſa,	voſſos, voſſas.
yours, voſſo, voſſa,	voſſos, voſſas.

Ex.

Your Father and mine,	voſſo Pay, e meu.
Your Houſe and mine,	voſſa Caza, e minha.
Your Friends and mine,	voſſos Amigos, e meus.
Your Daughter and mine,	voſſa Filha, e minha.
My Country and yours,	meu Pays e voſſo.
My Friend and yours,	meus Amigos, e voſſos.
Our Servants, and theirs,	noſſos Moços, e ſeus.
Their Opinion and ours,	ſua Opiniaõ e noſſa.
My Horſe runs better than yours,	meu Cavallo corre melhor, q' o voſſo.
I am at your Service,	eu eſtou á voſſo Serviço.
I am at yours,	eu eſtou ao voſſo.

Noteſe, q'os mais dos Sobreditos poſſeſſivos, ſendo de ſua natureza Conjunctivos, como fica atras ditto, ſe fazem accidentalmente abſolutos, por ſe juntar por Cazualidade por via de Conjunçaõ aõs Subſtantivos; e q' entre elles ſo, *mine*, e *thine*, ſaõ propria, e realmente abſolutos, porque eſtes nunca ſejuntaõ aos Subſtantivos immidiatamente ſe naõ por via de Conjuncçaõ, e commumente ſe aplicáõ em Repoſtas. Como, *whoſe is this Book?* de quem he eſte Livro? *is mine*, he meu; *is thine*, he teu: ſua declinaçaõ he na forma ſeguinte.

N. *mine*, meu, minha, meus minhas.
G. *of mine*, de meu, de minha, de meus de minhas.
D. *to mine*, a meu, a minha, a meus a minhas.
A. *mine*, meu, minha, meus, minhas.
V. *o mine*, ó meu, ó minha, ó meus, ó minhas.
A. *from mine*, de meu de minha, de meus, de minhas.

N. *thine*, teu, tua, teus, tuas.
G. *of thine*, de teu, de tua, de teus, de tuas.
D. *to thine*, a teu, a tua, á teus, á tuas.
A. *thine*, teu, tua, teus, tuas.
V. *ó thine*, ó teu, ó tua, ó teus, ó tuas.
A. *from thine*, de teu, de tuá, de teus, de tuas.

Os *Pronomes demonſtrativos, ſaó aquelles q' fazem de moſtraçam das peſſoas ou Couzas*, Ex.

this Man,	eſte Homem.
theſe Men,	eſtes Homens.
that Man,	aquelle Homem.
thoſe Men,	aquelles Homens.
this Woman,	eſta Mulher.
theſe Women,	eſtas Mulheres.
that Woman,	aquella Mulher.
thoſe Women,	aquellas Mulheres.
that ſame,	aquello meſmo.
that vexes me,	aquillo me emraivece.

Sua declinaçam he na Forma ſeguinte.

Sing.	*Plural.*
N. *this*, eſte, eſta.	N. *theſe*, eſtes, eſtas.
G. *of this*, deſte, deſta.	G. *of theſe*, deſtes, deſtas.
D. *to this*, a eſte, á eſta.	D. *to theſe*, a eſtes, a eſtas
Ac. *this*, eſte, eſta.	Ac. *theſe*, eſtes, eſtas.
Ab. *from this*, deſte, deſta.	Ab. *from theſe*, deſtes, deſtas.

Sing.
N. *that*, aquelle, aquella.
G. *of that*, da quelle, da quella.
D. *to that*, aa quelle, aa quella.
Ac. *that*, aquelle, aquella.
Ab. *from that*, da quelle, da quella.

Plu-

Plural.

N. *thoſe*, aquelles, aquellas.
G. *of thoſe*, da quelles, da quellas.
D. *to thoſe*, á aquelles, á aquellas.
Ac. *thoſe*, aquelles, aquelhas.
Ab. *from thoſe*, da quelles, da quellas.

Quando, *that*, he Relativo ſe uza dos Pronomes peſſoais, e naõ dos demonſtrativos, Ex.

He that is content, is rich enough,	aquelle q' eſtá contente he baſtante rico.
She that you know,	aquella, q' tu conheſſes.
They, that you ſpoke to me of,	aquelles de quem vos me falaſteis.

Tambem ſe uza deſtes Pronomes, *this*, e *that*, por evitar a repitiçaõ de hum nome, *Ex.*

This Knife doth not cut ſo well, as that which I loſt.	eſte faca naõ corta taõ-bem como aquella, q' eu perdi.
That Cloth is not ſo fine, as that you bought yeſterday.	eſte pano naõ he táo fino, como a quelle q' tu compraſte honte.
My Book is better than that.	meu Livro he melhor q' aquelle.
Your Horſe runs better than this.	voſſo Cavallo corre melhor, q'eſte.
Our Houſe is bigger than this.	noſſa Caza he mayor q' eſta.
Our Bells ring better than thoſe.	noſſos Sinos tangem melhor q' aquelles.

Dos Pronomes Relativos.

Os Pronomes Relativos ſaõ aquelles, q' ſe referem aos Subſtantivos, q' lhe ficaõ atrás; e ſaõ tres, a

ſaber, *who*, *which*, e, *that*, e ſedeclinaõ na forma ſeguinte, ſendo de todo o genero e de todo o numero.

Sing.

N. *Who*, quem ou que.
G. *of whom*, de quem.
D. *to whom*, á quem.
Ac. *whom*, quem.
Ab. *from whom*, de quem.

Plural.

N. *Who*, que, ou quem.
G. *of whom*, dos que, ou de quem.
D. *to whom*, aos que, ou a quem.
Ac. *whom*, que.
Ab. *from whom*, dos que, ou de quem.

Sing.	*Plural.*
N. *which*, o que, o qual, a q',	aqual, os q' os quais.
G. *of which*, de q', do qual, da q',	de qual, dos q' das quais.
D. *to which*, ao q', ao qual, á q',	á qual, aos q', aos quais.
Ac. *which*, oq', o qual, a q',	a qual, os q', as quais.
Ab. *from which*, do q', do qual, da q',	da qual, dos q', das quais.

That ſe declina na meſma Forma; mas neſta natureza de Relativo, he de todo, o genero, e de todo, o numero, e em tam ſignifica, que, ou oqual;

Noteſe, q' o Pronome, *who*, ſe refere ſó á peſſoas, *Ex.*

Alexander, *Who found the Earth too little of whom you ſpeak?*
Alexandre, que achou o Mundo pequeno muito de quem falais, vôz.

He is a Man of whom I have received many Favours.
Eſte he hum homem de quem eu tenho recebido muitos favores.

To

To whom I am much obliged.	A quem eu eſtou muito obrigado.
There are the Gentlemen of whom we have ſpoken ſo much.	La eſtaõ os Gentis Homens, de quem nos havemos falado tanto.
Theſe are the Gentlewomen, of whom we have bought.	Eſtas ſaõ asGentis mulheres de quem nos havemos comprado.

Which, e *that*, ſe referem á peſſoas, e a Couzas indiferentemente.

The Man, that lives well.	O Homem q' vive bem.
The Woman, which works.	A Mulher, q' trabalha.
The Birds, that fly.	As Aves q' voaõ.
There are Predictions, which advertiſe us of our Misfortunes.	Ellas ſaõ predicçõis, q' nos Avizaõ de noſſas Deſgraças.
Gold is a Metal, which doth help us in all our Wants.	Ouro he hum Metal, q' nos ajuda em todas noſſas Faltas.
Which makes the Execution of our Deſigns eaſy; and which makes us to triumph over all Difficulties.	Q' fas a Execuçaõ de noſſos Dizignos facil; eq' nôs fas triumfar ſobre todas as Difficuldades.

Eſtes Prenomes Relativos ſam tambem Interrogativos, Ex.

Who is there?	Quem eſtá lá?
Who comes here?	Quem vem aqui?
Who is that Man?	Quem he aquelle Homem?
Who is that Woman?	Quem he aquella Mulher?
Who are thoſe Men?	Quem ſaõ aquelles Homens?

Which

Which will you have?	Qual quereis vôs?
Which of theſe two Horſes do you like beſt?	Qual deſtes dois Cavallos, te agrada melhor?
From whom have you this News?	De quem tendes vos eſtas novas?
Which is it?	Qual he elle?
Which is the Way?	Qual he o Caminho?
Which of the two?	Qual dos dois?

Uzaſſe deſte Pronome, *what*, quando no Portuguez ſe uza, o que, no Principio de hum Periodo, como tambem diante das peſſoas, couzas, e Verbos, quando ſe fas alguá interrogaçaõ, Ex.

What you ſay is true.	O q' tu dizes he verde.
What he doth is worth nothing.	O q' fas elle, he digno de nada.
What the Heart thinketh, the Tongue ſpeaketh.	O q' o Coraçaõ cuyda, dis a Lingua.
What one wins, the other ſpends.	O q' Ganha hum, o outro diſpende.
Give what you can.	Da o que tu Podes?
Say what you know.	Dize o q' tu ſabes?
What Man is that?	Q' Homem he aquelle?
What Book is that?	Q' Livro he aquelle?
What Trade are you of?	De q' Officio ſois?
What ſay you?	Q' dizes tu?
What do you ask?	Q' procuras tu?
What will you drink?	Q' queres tu beber?
What do you want?	Q' neceſſitas tu?

Eſta palavra, *where*, acompanhada das Prepoziçõis, *about*, *at*, *in*, *of*, *unto*, *with*, he uzada em Lugar de, *which*, Ex.

Where about,	Aorredor, do qual, ou da qual.
Where at,	Ao qual, ou a qual.

Where

Wherein,	Em o qual, ou em a qual.
Wherewith,	Com o qual, ou com a qual.
Whereunto,	Ao qual, ou ã qual.

Noteſe, q' o *Inglez* expreſſa o Relativo, *o*, do *Portuguez*, pella Syllaba *it*, q' quando ſe refere a Couzas antecedentes, tem força de Relativo, *Ex.*

I have not ſeen it,	Eu naõ o, vi.
Do you ſee the King's Coach? I ſee it,	Ves tu o Coche do Rey? en o vejo.
It ſhall be of fine Flour,	Sera de fina Farinha.
It is a thing the moſt holy,	He a Couza a mais ſagrada.

Declinaſſe na maneyra ſeguinte.

N. *it*, elle, ou ella.
G. *of it*, de elle ou de ella.
D. *to it*, a elle, ou a ella.
Ac. *it*, elle ou ella.
Ab. *from it*, de elle, ou de ella.

Noteſe que a Syllaba, *its*, tem força de poſſeſſivo, ſignificando, ſeu, ſua, ſeus, ſuas, e ſe declina na Forma ſeguinte.

N. *its*, ſeu, ſua, ſeus, ſuas.
G. *of its*, de ſeu, de ſua, de ſeus, de ſuas.
D. *to its*, a ſeu, a ſua, a ſeus, a ſuas.
Ac. *its*, ſeu, ſua, ſeus, ſuas.
Ab. *from its*, de ſeu, de ſua, de ſeus, de ſuas.

Dos Verbos.

O Verbo he hua Parte da Oraçaõ, que tem modos, e tempos, e naõ ſe declina por Cazos.

O Verbo he peſſoal, ou impeſſoal; o impeſſoal ſe conjuga ſó pellas terceyras peſſoas do ſingular; como, *it raineth*, chove; *it bloweth*, aventa.

O Verbo peſſoal ſe conjuga por todas aſeys peſſoas; a ſaber; tres no ſingular; *I love*, eu amo, *thou loveſt*, tu amas; *he loveth*; elle ama e tres no plurar aſaber, *we love*, nôz amamos; *ye*, ou *you love*, vôz a mais; *they love*, elles amaõ.

O Verbo peſſoal ſe divide em activo, paſſivo, e neutro.

O Verbo Activo he aquelle q' exercita a acçaõ com relaçaõ a alguá Couza, como, *I read*, eu Leo; *I love*, eu amo; *I write*, eu eſcrevo; os quais verbõs dizem relaçaõ ao que ſe lé ao que ſe ama, e ao que ſe eſcreve.

O Paſſivo he aquelle em que ſe padeſſe alguá acçâõ; como, *I am loved*, eu ſeu amado.

O Neutro he aquelle q' produz e exercita a acçaõ em ſy meſmo; como, *I am*, eu ſou; *I exiſt*; eu exiſto.

O Verbo tem ſeis Modos, a ſaber, modo Indicativo, que demoſtra; como, *I ſpeak*, eu falo.

Modo Imperativo, que manda; como, *do thou, that*, faze aquillo; *let him do that*, faça elle a quillo.

Modo Optativo, q' dezeja conhecido pellos ſignais, *God grant, pleaſe God, wiſh God, would to God*; como, *O that, God grant I may do that*, oxala, faça eu aquillo.

Modo Potencial, conhecido pellos ſignais, *may, can, might, ſhould, could, would, ought*, vg. *I may*, ou *can love, I might*, ou *I ſhould*, &c. *love*, amaria ou poderia eu amar, *&c.*

Modo Conjunctivo que ajunta a acçâõ á algum Tempo, ou peſſoa, conhecido pellos ſignais, *how, as, when, if, although*, v. g. *as I love*, como eu amo, *&c.*

E Modo Infinito, que poem o Verbo ſem definir Tempo, peſſoa, e Numero, v. g. *to ſpeak*, fallar.

O

O Modo Indicativo tem ſinco Tempos, aſaber, Tempo prezente, que ſignifica o que actualmente, ſe eſtá fazendo, vg. *I love*, eu amo.

Preterito Imperfeito, que ſignifica a acçaõ paſſada, mas ainda naõ totalmente acabada; v. g. *I loved*, eu amava.

Preterito perfeito, que ſignifica a acçaõ ja paſſada, e finida, v. g. *I loved*, ou *have loved*, eu amey, ou tenho amado.

Preterito pluſquam perfeito, que vem aſer mais, que perfeito, e ſignifica a acçâõ de tal ſorte paſſada, que ja naõ pode ſer interrompida, v. g. *I had loved*, eu tinha amado.

Futuro, que ſignifica a acçâo, que hade ſer, ou vir vg. *I ſhall*, ou *will love*, eu amarey.

Os tempos dos mais Modos ſe veraõ pella conjugaçaõ dos Verbos.

Alem do referido ſe hade notar que ha dois Verbos auxiliares, a ſaber, o Verbo, *to have*, e o Verbo *to be*.

O Verbo, *to have*, ſerve para ajudar a Formar os perfeitos compoſtos, e os pluſquam perfeitos dos Verbos Actívos; v. g. *I have loved*, *I had loved*.

O Verbo, *to be*, ſerve para formar os Verbos Paſſivos, ajuntandolhe os Participios do Preterito dos Verbos que ſe Neceſſitaõ àos Tempos dodito Verbo, *to be*, v. g. *I am loved*, eu ſou amado, ſeguindo da meſma Sorte pellos mais Tempos, e Modos.

E porque para aformaçaõ dos Tempos aſſima referidos ſaõ neceſſarios eſtes dois Verbos auxiliares por elles ſe da Principio as Conjugaçois, *to have*, ter, ou haver.

Modo Indicativo, Tempo prezente.

Sing.

I have,	eu tenho, ou hey.
Thou haſt,	tu tens, ou has.
He hath, ou *has,*	elle tem ou ha.

Plural.

We have, &c, *ye,* ou *you have,* &c. *they have,* &c.

Preter Imperf.

Sing.

I had, eu tinha, ou havia.
Thou hadſt, he had, &c.

Plural.

We had, &c. *ye,* ou *you had,* &c. *they had,* &c.

Preter Perf.

Sing.

I have had, eu tive, ou houve tido.
Thou hadſt had, &c. *he have had,* &c.

Plural.

We have had, &c. *ye,* ou *you have had,* &c.
They have had, &c.

Preter Pluſquam Perfeito.

Sing.

I had had, eu tinha, ou havia tido.
Thou hadſt had, &c. *he had had,* &c.

Plural.

Plural.

We had had, &c. *ye* ou *you had had*, &c.
They had had, &c.

Futuro.

Sing.

I ſhall, ou *will have*, eu terey, ou haverey.
Thou ſhalt, ou *wilt have*, *he ſhall*, ou *will have*.

Plural.

We ſhall, ou *will have*, *ye*, ou *you ſhall*, ou *will have*, *they ſhall*, ou *will have*.

Imperativo.

Sing.

Have thou, tem, tu, ou há tu.
Let him have, tenha, ou haja elle.

Plural.

Let us have, *have ye*, ou *have you*, *let them have*.

Modo Potencial.

Sing.

I may ou *can have*, tenha ou haja, ou poſſa ter eu.

Thou mayſt, ou *canſt have*, ou *you may*, ou *can have*, *he may*, ou *can have*.

Plural.

We may, ou *can have*, *ye*, ou *you may*, ou *can have*, *they may*, ou *can have*.

Preter Imperf.

Sing.

I might have, teria, ou haveria ou poderia eu ter.

Thou

Sing.

Thou mighteſt have, ou *you might have*, *he might have.*

Plural.

We might have, *ye*, ou *you might have*, *they might have.*

Preter Perfect.

Sing.

I might have had, pude eu ter, ou haver, *thou mighteſt have had*, *he might have had.*

Plural.

We might have had, *ye*, ou *you might have had*, *they might have had.*

Preter Pluſquam.

Sing.

*I might have had * had*, pudera eu ter, ou haver, *thou mighteſt*, ou *you might have had * had*, *he might have had * had.*

Plural.

*We might have had * had*, *ye*, ou *you might have had * had*, *they might have had * had.*

Noteſe que neſte Tempo, e no Preterito imperfeitõ, do perfeito a ſima ſe podem fazer as meſmas formaçois com o ſignais, *could*, *would*, *ought*, *ſhould*; formandoos, como com o ſignal, *might*.

Noteſe, tambem que o * *had* que vai com eſtrela commummente ſe ſuprime, e náo ſe expreſſa; diſtinguindoſe entáo o perfeito do pluſquam perfeito, pello ſentido da õraçao: e eſtas anotaçõis ſerviraõ para todas as conjugaçois, e formaçois dos mais Verbos.

Futuro.

Futuro.

Sing.

I may ou *can have hereafter*, poderey eu ter ou haver, *thou mayſt*, ou *canſt*, ou *you may*, ou *can have hereafter*, *he may*, ou *can have hereafter.*

Plural.

We may, ou *can have hereafter*, *ye*, ou *you may*, ou *can have hereafter*, *they may*, ou *can have hereafter.*

Modo Optativo.

Os Tempos deſte modo ſe formaõ ajuntando ao Verbo hum dos Adverbos, ou ſignais de dezejo como, *pleaſe God*, *God grant*, *o' that*, &c. v. g. *ó that I may have*, oxala tenha, ou haja eu, *ó that thou mayſt*, ou *you may have*, oxala tenhas ou hajas tu, *&c.* e a ſim nos mais Tempos. Notando que os ſignais dos Tempos ſaõ ſó os que ſe mudão, conſervando ſempre o Verbo da meſma ſorte ; o que ſe obſervarã para todas as Conjugaçois.

Modo Conjunctivo.

Os Tempos deſte modo ſe formaõ como os do Optativo, ajuntandolhe da meſma ſorte ao Modo Potencial, huã das Conjucçois, *as*, *if*, *when*, *how*, *although*, v. g. *as I may have*, como eu tenho, ou hey ; ſeguindo da meſma Sorte nos mais Tempos ; e guardando, e obſervando o que ſe advertio no Potencial do * *had* com eſtrela.

Infinit.

Preſent.

To have, ter ou haver.

Preter Perf.

To have had, ter ou haver tido.

Gerundio.

Of having, de ter ou de haver, *in having*, *for having*.

Supino.

To have, para ter, ou haver.
To be had, para ſer tido ou havido.

Participio prezent.

Having, tendo, ou havendo.

Particip. preter.

Had, tido, ou havido.

Participo futuro.

To be about to have, o que hade ter ou haver.

Do Verbo.

To be, ſer, ou eſtar.

Indicat. prezent.

Sing.

I am, eu ſou, ou eſtou, *thou art*, *he is*.

Plural.

We are, *ye* ou *you are*, *they are*.

Imperf.

Sing.

I was, eu era, ou eſtava, *thou waſt*, ou *you was*, *he was*.

Plural.

We were, *ye* ou *you were*, *they were*.

Perf.

Sing.

I have been, eu fuy ou eſtive.
Thou haſt been, he hath ou *has been.*

Plural.

We have been, ye ou *you have been, they have been.*

Pluſquamperfect.

Sing.

I had been, eu fora ou eſtivera, ou eu tinha ſido, ou eſtado, *thou hadſt been, he had been.*

Plural.

We had been, ye ou *you had been, they had been.*

Futuro.

Sing.

I ſhall ou *will be*, eu ſerey ou eſtarey, *thou ſhalt*, ou *wilt be*, ou *you ſhall be, he ſhall*, ou *will be.*

Plural.

We ſhall ou *will be, ye* ou *you ſhall*, ou *will be; they ſhall*, ou *will be.*

Modo Imperativo.

Sing.

Be thou, ſe tu, ou eſtã, *let him be.*

Plural.

Let us be, be ye ou *you, let them be.*

Modo Potencial.

Sing.

I may ou *can be*, ſeja, ou eſteja eu ou poſſa ſer ou eſtar eu, *thou mayſt*, ou *canſt be*, ou *you may*, ou *can be, he may* ou *can be.*

Plural.

We may ou *can be, ye* ou *you may*, ou *can be, they may*, ou *can be.*

Imperf.

Sing.

I might be, ſeria ou eſtaria ou poderia ſer ou eſtar eu, *thou mighteſt be*, ou *you might be, he might be.*

Plural.

We might be, ye ou *you might be, they might be.*

Perfeit.

Sing.

I might have been, pude eu ſer ou eſtar, *thou mighteſt have been*, ou *you might have been, he might have been.*

Plural.

We might have been, ye ou *you might have been, they might have been.*

Pluſquamperf.

Sing.

I might have had been, pudera ſer ou eſtar eu, *thou mighteſt have had been*, ou *you might have had been, he might have had been.*

Plural.

We might have had been, ye ou *you might have had been, they might have had been.*

Futuro.

Sing.

I may ou *can be hereafter*, poderey ſer ou eſtar ou, ou ſerey eu ou eſtarey, *thou mayſt* ou *canſt be here-*

hereafter, ou *you may* ou *can be hereafter*, *he may* ou *can be hereafter*.

Plural.

We may ou *can be hereafter*, *ye* ou *you may* ou *can be hereafter*, *they may* ou *can be hereafter*.

Modo Optativo.

Eſte Modo ſe forma, como diſſemos aſima no Verbo, *have*, v. g. *God grant I might be*, oxala fora, ou eſtivera eu, e aſſim nos mais Tempos.

Modo Conjunctivo.

O meſmo ſe obſerva neſte modo, com as conjuncçois apropriadas ā elle v. g. *as I may* ou *can be*, como eu ſou ou eſtou, vejaſe o que ſe diſſe no Verbo, *have*, neſte modo, e no Optativo.

Infinitivo.

To be, ſer ou eſtar.

Preter.

To have been, ter ſido, ou eſtado.

Gerund.

Of being, de ſer ou eſtar, *in being*, *for being*.

Supin.

To be, para ſer ou eſtar.
To be been, para ſer ſido, ou eſtado.

Particip. prezent.

Being, ſendo, ou eſtando.

Particip. preter.

Been, ſido, ou eſtado.

Particip. futuro.

To be about to be, ou *to be hereafter*, o que hade ſer ou eſtar.

Dos Verbos Activos.

Os Verbos activos ou ſaõ regulares, ou irrigulares, os regulares ſaõ aquelles, cujos Participios do preterito, acabaõ *em*, *ed*, como *love*, *loved*, advertindo que alguãs vezes ſe ſuprime *o*, *e*, por Sincope, interpondoſelhe hum apoſtrofe, que he hum accento entremeyo, como, *loved*, *lov'd*.

Na Lingua Ingleza os Verbos naõ tem mais que huã conjugaçaõ aqual he geral para todos os Verbos, aſim regulares como irregulares, naõ havendo mais differença entre huns, e outros, que os regulares terminar ſeus Participios do preterito *em*, *ed*, como ſe fas menſaõ a ſima, e os irregulares terminalos, com variedade de terminaçois, guardando em tudo o mais a meſma conjugaçaõ, e os meſmos ſignais nos mais Tempos, e Modos.

Da Formaçao dos Tempos, e Modos.

O Infinito ſe forma antepondolhe to, a qualquer Verbo, v. g. *to love*, *to kill*.

O Prezente formaſſe do Infinito, tirandolhe *o*, *to*, e ajuntandolhe a peſſoa, v. g. *to love*, *I love*.

O Preterito Imperfeito ſe forma, ou valendoſſe do Participio do Preterito, e ajuntandolhe a peſſoa, ſem mudança de ditto Participio, ou por meyo do do ſignal, *did*, v. g. *I loved*, *thou loved*, &c. *I did love*, *thou didſt love*, &c.

Advertindo que o ſignal, *do*, e ſignal *did*, o primeyro he prezente, e o ſegundo preterito imperfeito do Verbo, *do*, o qual ſignificando fazer, quando ſe junta aos Verbos por ſignais, nada ſignifica, nem tem

tem outro e feito, mais que moſtrar os Tempos em que eſta o Verbo, a que ſejunta; notando tambem, que quando a oraçaõ he interrogetiva, *o*, *do*, ſe antepoem ao Nominativo, v. g. *do you ſpeak* French? porem ſendo affirmativa ſe poem de pois do Nominativo, v. g. *he doth ſpeak* French.

O Preterito Perfeito, a que chamaõ diffinido, hiſtorico, ou ſimples, ſe forma uzando da meſma Sorte do Participio do preterito, v. g. *I loved*, *thou loved*, &c.

O Preterito Perfeito compoſto ſe forma, juntando ao Verbo auxiliar, *to have*, o participio do Preterito do Verbo que ſe neceſſita uzar, v. g. *I have loved*, &c.

O Pluſquam Perfeito ſe forma tambem por meyo do Preterito Imperfeito deditto Verbo, *to have*, juntandolhe da meſma Sorte o Participio do Preterito, v. g. *I had loved*, &c.

O Futuro ſe forma por meyo dos ſignais, *ſhall* ou *will*, v. g. *I ſhall* ou *will love*, &c.

O Imperativo forma ſuas ſegundas peſſoas do ſingular, e do plurar, tomando o prezente do Indicativo, e pondolhe a peſſoa depois, v. g. *love thou*, *love ye* ou *you*, e a primeyra peſſoa do plurar e as terceiras de ambos Numeros, ſe formaõ por meyo do ſignal, *let*, v. g. *let him love*, *let us love*, *let them love*.

A formaçaõ dos Modos Optativo, e Conjunctivo, e de ſeus Tempos ſe conhecerá pella Conjugaçaõ ad extenſum advertindo como aſima ſe diſſe ja, que na conjugaçaõ de hum Verbo toda avariedade eſtã, quaſi em os ſignais, que o Verbo ſempre he o meſmo ſem nelle haver outra mudança mais que ajuntarlhe na ſegunda peſſoa do Indicativo hum *ſt*, e naterceira hum, *th*, o qual muytas vezes ſe rezolve em hum, *s*, v. g. *thou loveſt*, tu amas; *he loveth*, ou *loves*, elle ama.

Da Conjugaçaõ do Verbo activo.

O Verbo.

To love, amar.

Modo Indicativo.

Prezente.

Sing.

I love, ou *I do love*, eu amo *thou loveſt*, ou *doſt love*, ou, *you love*, *he loveth*, ou *loves*, ou *doth* ou *does love*, &c.

Plur.

We love ou *do love*, *ye* ou *you love*, ou *do love*, *they love*, ou *do love*.

Preter Imperf.

Sing.

I loved ou *did love*, eu amava, *thou lovedſt*, ou *didſt love*, ou *you loved*, *he loved* ou *did love*, &c.

Plur.

We love, ou *did love*, *ye* ou *you loved*, ou *did love*, *they loved* ou *did love*, &c.

Preter Perfeito.

Sing.

I have loved, eu amey ou tenho amado.
Thou haſt, ou *have loved*, *he has*, ou *hath loved*.

Plur.

We have loved, *ye*, ou *you have loved*, *they have loved*, &c.

Pluſ-

Pluſquam Perfect.

Sing.

I had loved, eu tinha amado, ou eu amara
Thou hadſt, ou *you had loved*, *he had loved*, &c.

Plur.

We had loved, *ye* ou *you had loved*, *they had loved*, &c.

Futur.

Sing.

I ſhall ou *will love*, eu amarey, *thou ſhalt* ou *wilt*, ou *you ſhall* ou *will love*, *they ſhall* ou *will love*, &c.

Plur.

We ſhall ou *will love*, *ye* ou *you ſhall*, ou *will love*, *they ſhall* ou *will love*, &c.

Imperativo.

Sing.

Love thou, ama tu.
Let him love.

Plur.

Let us love, *love ye*, *let them love*, &c.

Modo Potencial.

Prez.

Sing.

I may ou *can love*, ame ou poſſa eu amar.
Thou may'ſt, ou *canſt*, ou *you may* ou *can love*, *he may* ou *can love.*

Plur.

Plur.

We may ou *can love, ye* ou *you may* ou *can love, they may* ou *can love.*

Preter Imperf.

Sing.

I might love, amaria, ou poderia eu amar: *thou mighteſt love,* ou *you might love, he might love.*

Plur.

We might love, ye ou *you might love, they might love.*

Preter Perf.

Sing.

I might have loved, pude eu amar: *thou mighteſt have loved,* ou *you might have loved: he might have loved,* &c.

Plur.

We might have loved: ye, ou *you might have loved: they might have loved.*

Pluſquam Perf.

Sing.

*I might have * had loved,* pudera eu ter ou haver amado: *thou mighteſt,* ou *you might have * had loved, he might have * had loved.*

Plur.

*We might have * had loved, ye,* ou *you might have * had loved, they might have * had loved.*

Noteſe que tirado fora o had com a eſtrela, como Commum mente ſe Coſtuma, ainda que o perfeito ſe

ſe e quivoque com o pluſquam perfeito; pello ſentido da ſentença ſe farão diſtinctos.

Futuro.

I may ou *can have hereafter*, poderey eu amar, ou amarey eu: *thou may'ſt*, ou *canſt*, ou *you may* ou *can love hereafter*, *he may*, ou *can love hereafter*.

We may ou *can love hereafter*, *ye* ou *you may* ou *can love hereafter*, *they may* ou *can love hereafter*.

Modo Optativo.

Os tempos deſte Modo ſe formaõ a juntando lhe hum dos adverbios de dezejo, Como

O that I may love, Oxala ame eu.

O that I might love, Oxala amara eu ou amaſſe.

Modo Conjunctivo.

Os tempos deſte Modo ſe formaõ Como os do Optativo, ajuntandolhe da meſma Sorte ao modo potencial huá das Conjuncçõis, *as*, *if*, *when*, *how*, *although*, &c. a ſim Como, *as I may love*, Como eu amo: *as I might love*, Como eu amara, ſeguindo da meſma Sorte nos mais tempos; guardando o que ſe advertio no verbo, *have*.

Infinitivo.

to love, amar.

Preterio Perf.

to have loved, ter amado.

Gerundio.

of loving, de amar.
in loving, em amar.
for loving, para amar.

Su-

Supino.

to loving, para amar.
to be loved, para ſer amado.

Partic. Prezente.

loving, amando, ou oque ama, e amava.

Partic. Preter.

loved, amado.

Partic. Futur.

to be about to love, oque hade amar.

Do Verbo Paſſivo.

O verbo paſſivo naõ he outra Couza mais, que o verbo auxiliar, *to be* com o participio do preterito dos verbos, que ſe neceſſitaõ uzar. ex.

Prezente.

I am loved, eu ſou amado.

Preterit Imperf.

I was loved, eu era amado.

Preter Perf.

I have been loved, eu fui amado.

Preter Pluſquam.

I had been loved, eu tinha ſido amado.

Futur.

I ſhall, ou *will be loved*, eu ſerey amado.

Im-

Imperat.

Be thou loved, ſe tu amado.
Let him be loved, ſeja elle amado.
Let us be loved, ſejamos nos amados.
Be ye ou *you loved*, ſede vôs amados.
Let them be loved, ſejaõ elles amados.

E por eſta Sorte ſe hiraõ formando as mais peſſoas. Modos, e ſeus Tempos.

Dos Verbos Reciprocos.

Os Verbos reciprocos ſe formaõ pella particula, *ſelf*, exponſe a formaçaõ do Prezente do Indicativo, e por ella ſera facil ſaberſe dos mais Modos.

Prezente.

I love myſelf, eu meamo, *thou loveſt thyſelf*, &c.
He loveth, ou *loves himſelf.*

Plural.

We love ourſelves, *you* ou *ye love yourſelves*, *they love themſelves.*

Dos Verbos Irrigulares.

Em que conſiſta a irrigularidade deſtes Verbos, e qual ſeja a Differença entre elles, e os regulares; ſe pode ver no Paragrafo ſegundo, no Titulo dos Verbos actívos. E porque em tudo o mais ſe formaõ como os regulares, obſervando as formaçois deſtes, fica conhecida, e ſabida ada quelles.

Mas porque a formaçaõ dos ſeus preteritos ſimples naõ he ſempre a meſma; porque hums os formaõ valendoſe dos ſeus Participios do preterito, e outros naõ; ſe poem as liſtas ſeguintes de huns, e outros para menos confuzaõ dos que dezejarem ſaber eſta Lingua.

Dos

Dos que nao ſe valem dos Participios do preterito.

to ſee, ver, *I ſaw*, eu vi, *I have ſeen*, eu tenho viſto.

to take, tomar, *I took*, eu tomey, *I have taken*, eu tenho tomado.

to undertake, emprender, *I undertook*, eu emprendy, *I have undertaken*, eu tenho emprendido.

to give, dar, *I gave*, eu dey, *I have given*, eu tenho dado.

to write, eſcrever, *I wrote*, eu eſcrevi, *I have written*, eu tenho eſcrito.

to do, fazer, *I did*, eu fis, *I have done*, eu tenho feito.

to forgive, perdoar, *I forgave*, eu perdoey, *I have forgiven*, eu tenho perdoado.

to go, hir, *I went*, eu fui, *I am gone*, eu ſou hido.

to forſake, abandonar, *I forſook*, eu abandoney, *I have forſaken*, eu tenho abandonado.

to come, vir, *I came*, *I am come.*

to break, quebrar, *I broke*, *I have broken.*

to become, vir aſer, *I became*, *I have become.*

to riſe, ſevantarſe, *I roſe*, *I am riſen.*

to grow, creſcer, *I grew*, *I am grown.*

to know, ſaber, *I knew*, *I have known.*

to throw, tirar, *I threw*, *I have thrown.*

to fall, cahir, *I fell*, *I am fallen.*

to ſhew, moſtrar, *I ſhew*, *I have ſhewn.*

to beat, bater, *I did beat*, *I have beaten.*

to eat, comer, *I did eat*, *I have eaten.*

to owe, dever, *I did owe*, *I have own.*

to draw, tirar, *I drew*, *I have drawn.*

to ſow, cozer, *I did ſow*, *I have ſown.*

to abide, ficar, *I abode*, *I have abode.*

to bear, levar, *I bore*, *I have born.*

to bite, morder, *I bit*, *I have bitten.*

to blow, ſoprar, *I blew*, *I have blown.*
to bid, mandar, *I bad*, *I have bidden.*
to beget, gerar, *I begot*, *I have begotten.*
to chuſe, eſcolher, *I choſe*, *I have choſen.*
to chide, reprehender, *I chid*, *I have chidden.*
to cleave, fender, *I clove*, *cleft*, *I have cloven*, *cleft.*
to catch, apanhar, *I catcht*, *I have caught.*
to crow, cantar ogallo, *I crew*, *I have crown.*
to drive, guiar, *I drove*, *I have driven.*
to dare, ouzar, atreverſe, *I durſt*, *I have dared.*
to fly, fugir, *I fled*, *I have flown.*
to forget, eſque ſerſe, *I forgot*, *I have forgotten.*
to flee, voar, *I flew*, *I have flown.*
to get, gainhar, *I got*, *I have gotten*, ou *got.*
to gird, cingir, *I girded*, *I have girt.*
to hide, eſconder, *I hid*, *I have hidden.*
to hold, ter, *I held*, *I have hold*, ou *held.*
to lie, jazer, *I lay*, *I have lain.*
to lean, pouzar, *I did lean*, *I have leaned.*
to run, correr, *I ran*, *I have run.*
to ride, cavalgar, montar a cavalo, *I rod*, *rode*, *I have ridden*, ou *rid*
to read, Ler, *I read*, *I have read.*
to ſtink, feder, *I ſtank*, ou *ſtunk.*
to ſpread, eſpalhar, *I ſpread*, *I have ſpread.*
to ſtrike, ferir, *I ſtruck*, *I have ſtruck*, ou *ſtrucken.*
to ſpell, ſoletrear, *I ſpelt*, *I have ſpelled.*
to ſwear, jurar, *I ſwore*, *I have ſworn.*
to ſmite, dar, *I ſmote*, *I have ſmitten.*
to ſhoe, ferrar, *I ſhod*, *I have ſhodden.*
to ſhed, derramar, *I ſhed*, *I have ſhedden.*
to ſhake, vibrar, brandir, mexer, *I ſhook*, *I have ſhaken.*
to ſpit, cuſpir, *I ſpat*, *I have ſpitten.*
to ſteal, ſurtar, *I ſtole*, *I have ſtolen.*
to ſwim, nadar, *I ſwam*, *I have ſwam.*
to ſhine, reſplandecer, *I ſhone*, *I have ſhone*, ou *ſhined.*

to ſlay, matar, *I ſlew, I have ſlain.*
to ſeeth, cozer, *I ſod, I have ſodden.*
to ſplit, raxar, *I ſplitted, I have ſplit* ou *ſplitten.*
to ſtick, pegar, *I ſtuck, I have ſtuck*, ou *ſtucken.*
to ſtrip, deſpir, *I ſtript, I have ſtript*, ou *ſtrippen.*
to ſtrive, contender, *I ſtrove, I have ſtriven.*
to tear, deſpedaçar, *I tore, I have torne.*
to thrive, medrar, *I throve, I have thriven.*
to tread, pizar, *I have trodden.*
to be willing, querer, *I was willing, I have been willing.*
to wring, torcer, *I wrung, I have wrung.*
to wear, trazer, *I wore, I have worn.*
to work, trabalhar, *I workt, I have workt.*
to weave, tecer, *I wove, I have woven.*
to will, querer, *I would, I have willed.*
to awake, deſpertar, *I awake, I have awoke, awaked.*
to cut, cortar, *I did cut, I have cut.*

Dos que ſe ſerven do Participio preterito.

to aſk, preguntar, *I askt, I have askt.*
to buy, comprar, *I bought, I have bought.*
to begin, começar, *I begun, I have begun.*
to bring, trazer, *I brought, I have brought.*
to bleed, ſangrar, *I bled, I have bled.*
to breed, gerar, *I bred, I have bred.*
to bend, dobrar, *I bent, I have bent.*
to beſeech, ſuplicar, *I beſought, I have beſought.*
to bind, encadernar, *I bound, I have bound.*
to bereave, privar, deſpojar, *I bereaved*, ou *bereft, I have bereft*, ou *bereaved.*
to burn, queimar, *I burnt, I have burnt.*
to creep, engatinhar, ou andar de raſto, *I crept, I have crept.*
to curſe, amaldiçoar, *I curſt, I have curſt.*
to crack, eſtallar, *I crackt, I have crackt.*
to drink, beber, *I drank, I have drank.*

to deal, tratar, *I dealt*, *I have dealt*.
to dwell, morar, *I dwelt*, *I have dwelt*.
to dip, molhar, *I dipt*, *I have dipt*.
to feed, paſtar, *I fed*, *I have fed*.
to fling, tirar, com funda, *I flung*, *I have flung*.
to fetch, hir buſcar, *I fetcht*, *I have fetcht*.
to feel, apalpar, *I felt*, *I have felt*.
to fight, pelejar, *I fought*, *I have fought*.
to find, achar, *I found*, *I have found*.
to fix, fixar, *I fixt*, *I have fixt*.
to geld, caſtrar, *I gelt*, *I have gelt*.
to hang, pendurar, *I hung*, *I have hung*.
to help, ajudar, *I helpt*, *I have helpt*.
to hit, dar golpes, *I hit*, *I have hit*.
to keep, guardar, *I kept*, *I have kept*.
to kiſs, beijar, *I kiſt*, *I have kiſt*.
to leave, deichar, *I left*, *I have left*.
to laugh, rir, *I laught*, *I have laught*.
to let, deichar, *I let* ou *did let*, *I have let*.
to loſe, perder, *I loſt*, *I have loſt*.
to learn, aprender, *I learnt*, *I have learnt*.
to lead, guiar, *I led*, *I have led*.
to make, fazer, *I made*, *I have made*.
to meet, encontrar, *I met*, *I have met*.
to mix, miſturar, *I mixt*, *I have mixt*.
to put, por, *I put*, ou *did put*, *I have put*.
to pitch, brear, pegar, untar, com pez, *I pitcht*, *I have pitcht*.
to quake, tremer, *I quaked*, *I have quaked*.
to ring, ſoar, *I rung*, *I have rung*.
to rend, deſpedaçar, *I rent*, *I have rent*.
to ſell, vender, *I ſold*, *I have ſold*.
to ſleep, dormir, *I ſlept*, *I have ſlept*.
to ſing, cantar, *I ſung*, *I have ſung*.
to ſend, enviar, *I ſent*, *I have ſent*.
to ſtand upright, eſtar direito, *I ſtood upright*, *I have ſtood upright*.
to ſnatch, arrebatar, *I ſnatcht*, *I have ſnatcht*.

to ſmell, cheirar, *I ſmelt*, *I have ſmelt.*
to ſhoot, tirar, *I ſhot*, *I have ſhot.*
to ſpend, diſpender, *I ſpent*, *I have ſpent.*
to ſpring, brotar, *I ſprung*, *I have ſprung.*
to ſtand, eſtar, *I ſtood*, *I have ſtood.*
to ſting, picar, *I ſtung*, *I have ſtung.*
to ſtring, encordoar, *I ſtrung*, *I have ſtrung.*
to ſpill, derramar, *I ſpilt*, *I have ſpilt.*
to ſweat, ſuar, *I ſweat*, *I have ſweat.*
to ſeek, buſcar, *I ſought*, *I have ſought.*
to ſet, aſentar, *I ſat*, *I have ſat.*
to ſlide, eſcorregar, *I ſlid*, *I have ſlid.*
to ſpin, fiar, *I ſpun*, *I have ſpun.*
to ſay, dizer, *I ſaid*, *I have ſaid.*
to ſpeed, expedir, *I ſped*, *I have ſped.*
to ſweep, varrer, *I ſwept*, *I have ſwept.*
to ſtride, abrir aſpernas, *I ſtride*, *I have ſtride.*
to ſlip, reſvalar, *I ſlept*, *I have ſlept.*
to ſink, fundirſe, *I ſunk*, *I have ſunk.*
to think, imaginar, *I thought*, *I have thought.*
to underſtand, entender, *I underſtood*, *I have underſtood.*
to tell, dizer, *I told*, *I have told.*
to teach, enſinar, *I taught*, *I have taught.*
to weep, chorar, *I wept*, *I have wept.*
to whip, açoitar, *I whipt*, *I have whipt.*
to win, gainhar, *I won*, *I have won.*
to behold, reparar, olhar com atençaõ, *I beheld*, *I have beheld.*
to ſhut, fechar, *I ſhut*, *I have ſhut.*
to ſling, tirar com funda, *I ſlung*, *I have ſlung.*

Tambem o Preterito, e o Participio do Preterito de alguns Verbos irrigulares, ſe podem formar, con facilidade obſervando as regras ſeguintes.

Os Verbos terminados *em*, *eed*, tem os ſeus preteritos e Participios *em*, *ed*, Ex.
to bleed, ſangrar, *I bled*, *I have bled.*

to breed, gerar, *I bred*, *I have bred.*
to feed, paſtar, ou apaſcentar, *I fed*, *I have fed.*
to ſpeed, accelerar, *I ſped*, *I have ſped.*

Os Verbos, que terminaõ *em*, *eep*, fazem *em*, *ept*, Ex.

to keep, guardar, *I kept*, *I have kept.*
to creep, engatinhar, *I crept*, *I have crept.*
to weep, chorar, *I wept*, *I have wept.*
to ſleep, dormir, *I ſlept*, *I have ſlept.*
to ſweep, varrer, *I ſwept*, *I have ſwept.*

Os que terminaõ *em*, *end*, os fazem *em*, *ent*, Ex.

to bend, dobrar, *I bent*, *I have bent.*
to lend, empreſtar, *I lent*, *I have lent.*
to ſend, enviar, *I ſent*, *I have ſent.*
to ſpend, diſpender, *I ſpent*, *I have ſpent.*

Os que terminaõ, *em*, *ind*, os fazem *em*, *ound*, Ex.

to bind, liar, encadernar, *I bound*, *I have bound.*
to find, achar, *I ſound*, *I have found.*
to grind, moer, *I ground*, *I have ground.*
te wind, dobar, *I wound*, *I have wound.*

Os que terminaõ em, *ing*, fazem em, *ung*, Ex.

to ſting, picar, *ſtung*, *have ſtung.*
to ſtring, encordoar, *ſtrung*, *have ſtrung.*
to wring, torcer, *wrung*, *have wrung.*
to ring, ſoar, *rung*, *have rung.*
to ſing, cantar, *ſung*, *have ſung.*
to ſling, tirar ã funda, *ſlung*, *have ſlung.*
to fling, tirar, *flung*, *have flung.*
to ſpring, brotar; *ſprung*, *have ſprung.*

Os que terminaõ em, *ear*, fazem o preterito em, *are*, ou em, *ore*, e o participio em, *orn*, Ex.

to wear, trazer, *wore*, *have worn.*
to ſwear, jurar, *ſwore*, *have ſworn.*
to bear, levar, *bare*, *bore*, *have born.*
to tear, deſpedaçar, *tare*, *tore*, *have torn.*

Os que terminaõ em *ow*, ou *aw*, fazem o preterito em, *ew*, e o participio em, *awn*, ou *own*, Ex.

to draw, tirar, *drew*, *have drawn.*
to blow, ſoprar, *blew*, *have blown.*
to grow, crecer, *grew*, *have grown.*
to know, ſaber, *knew*, *have known.*
to throw, tirar, *threw*, *have thrown.*

Dos Adverbos.

O Adverbo he huá Parte da Oraçaõ, que junta as mais Partes a caba dedeclarar o ſeu ſignificado.

Ha Adverbos de Tempo, v. g.

to day, hoje.
now, agora.
preſently, ja, logo.
immediately, immediatamente.
already, ja.
betimes, ſedo.
early, demadrugada.
lately, ultimamente.
yeſterday, hontem.
formerly, antigamente.
before, antes.
after, deſpois.
hereafter, da qui adiante.
ſhortly, em breve.
to-morrow, amenhaa.
every day, cada dia.
continually, continuamente.
eternally, eternamente.
never, ja mais, nunca.
Day and Night, de Dia o de Noyte.
by Day, de Dia.
by Night, de Noyte.
then, emtaõ.
whilſt, enrre tanto.
late, tarde.

Há

Há Adverbos de lugar, v. g.

here, aqui.
there, lá.
this way, por aqui.
hitherto, athequi.
thitherto, athelá.
below, abaixo.
above, aſima.
high, alto.
low, baixo.
near, junto.
far, longe.
aſide, de lado.
before, diante.
behind, atrâs.
within, dentro.
in, dentro.
out, fora.
without, de fora.
upon, ſobre.
under, de baixo.
about, aorredor.
amongſt, entre.
between, entre.
beyond, alem.
ſomewhere, em alguá parte
no where, em nenhuã patre
every where, em toda parte

Há Adverbos de Interrogaçaõ.

where, onde?
from whence, dedonde?
which, por onde?
how far, que longe?
how much, quanto?
how many, quantos?
how long, deque longura?
when, quando?
why, porque?
what, que?
how, como.

Há de quantidade.

as much, tanto.
but little, pouco.
few, pouco.
almoſt, quaſi.
little, pouco.
much, muyto.
enough, baſtante.
abundantly, abundantemente.
more, mais.
wholly, inteiramente.
infinitely, infinitamente.
ſuperfluouſly, ſuperfluamente.
all, todo.
nothing, nada.
at moſt, ao mais.
at leaſt, ao menos.
intirely, inteyramente.
ſufficiently, ſufficientemente.
none, nada.
too much, muyto.

Há de Numero.

once, huã vêz.
thrice, tres vezes.

often, frequentemente.
twice, duas vezes.
ſometimes, alguãs vezes.

Há de Qualidade.

wiſely, ſabiamente.
virtuouſly, virtuozamente
prudently, prudentemente.
haply, feliſmente.
boldly, atrevidamente.
wickedly, malvadamente.
paſſionately, apayxoadamente.
hotly, quentemente.
rudely, rudamente.
neatly, pura, propria, limpa mente.
inſolently, inſolentemente
readily, promptamente.
in faſhion, á moda.
openly, abertamente.
ſtanding, de pê.
backwards, para trâz.
heartily, deloraçaõ.
in earneſt, ſeriamente.
raſhly, iradamente.
at random, inconſideramente.
careleſly, deſcuydadamente
pleaſantly, agradavelmente.
reaſonably, razoadamente, erazoavelmente.
coldy, friamente.
ſoftly, ſuave, brandamente.
handſomely, fermozamente.
imprudently, imprudentemente.
quickly, a preſſadamente.
at eaſe, facilmente.
kneeling, dejuelhos.
faſting, em jejum.
barefoot, apédeſcalço.
ſecretly, em ſegredo.
on purpoſe, de propoſito.
heedleſsly, negligentemente.
by overſight, por negligencia.
on a ſudden, repentinamente
deſperately, dezeſperadamente.
in jeſt, dezombaria.
in pudding-time, oportunamente.
on horſeback, acavalo.
in a boat, em barco.
by ſea, por mar.
confuſedly, conſuzamente.
aſunder, ſeparadamente.
by ſtealth, afurtadelas.
in haſte, apreſſadamente.
ſecurely, ſeguramente.
conveniently, conveniente-mente.
a-foot, a pê.
in a Coach, em Coche.
by Water, por Agua.

by

by Land, por Terra.
jointly, juntamente.
by turns, por tornos.

Há de Afirmaçaõ.

yes, ſim.
it is true, heverdade.
infallibly, infalivelmente.
truly, verdadeyramente.
aſſuredly, ſeguramente.
undoubtedly, induvitavelmente ou ſem duvida.
in truth, em verdade.

Há de Contradiçaõ.

no, naõ.
not at all, totalmente nada.
nor, nem.
none, nada.
by no means, de nenhuã maneyra.
neither, nem.

Há de Ordem.

firſt, primeyramente.
thirdly, terceyramente.
at firſt, primeiramente.
after, deſpois.
in a Croud, em Caterva.
ſecondly, ſegundariamente.
next, deſpois.
afore, antecedentemente.
together, juntamente.

Há de Concluzaõ.

in fine, finalmente.
ſo that, com tanto que.
at laſt, ultimamente.

Das Conjunçois.

A conjunçaõ he huã Parte da oraçaõ, que ſerve para ajuntar as mais Partes.

Há Adverſativas.

but, mas.
though, aindaque.
notwithſtanding, naõ obſtante.
neverthleſs, naõ obſtante.
however, naõ obſtante.
yet, com tudo, ainda.

Há concludentes.

in fine, em fim.
ſo that, de ſorte, ſe bem que.
to make an end, por acabar.

Há Copulativas.

and, e.
both, aſſim.
alſo, tambem.
both good, and bad, aſſim bom, como maõ.

Outras Diſjuntivas.

or, ou.
or elſe, aliâs.
neither, nem.
either, ou.
nor, nem.

Outras Condicionais.

if, ſe.
if peradventure, ſe por a cazo.
on condicion that, com condiçaõ que.
ſo that, ſe com tudo.
if ſo be that, ſe for aſſim.
unleſs that, menos que.

Outras Cauzais.

for, por.
ſince that, depoiſque.
for as much as, por tanto quanto.
to the end that, a fim que.
leaſt that, paraquenaõ.
whereas, como querque.
therefore, por tanto.
then, em taõ.
ſeeing that, á viſta.
becauſe, por cauza.

Das Propoziçois.

A Propoziçaõ he huã Parte da Oraçaõ, que ſe poem antes das outras Partes.

near, junto.
againſt, contra, de fronte.
before, diante.
about, aorredor.
through, por.
behind, atrâz.
without, ſem.
under, debaixo.
out, fora.
inſtead, em lugar.
at the ſide, ao Lado.
with, com.
in, em, dentro.
into, dentro.
from, de.
towards, para tal parte
beyond, a lem.
above, ſobre, aſima.
far, longe.
after, deſpois.
till, atheque.
until, atheque.
at, ã.
ſince, deſpois.
between, entré.
for, para.

Das Interjecçois.

A Interjecçaõ he huã Parte da Oraçaõ, que moſtra os varios afectos do animo.

Há de Alegria.

ah, ah, ah, ha, ha, ha.
come, come, vamos, vamos.

let

let us be merry, alegremonos.
hang Sorrow, enforca a Penna, a Triſteza.

De Socorro.

help, help, ajuda, ajuda.
fire, fire, fogo, fogo.
murder, murder, matador, matador, a qui de l'Rey.

De Averſaõ.

fie, fie, fy, fo, fo.

De Animar.

well, well, bem, bem.
ſó, ſó, aſim, aſim.
that is well, vay bem.
well done, bem feito.
have a good Heart, Corrage, tem Animo, Valor.

De Admiraçao.

hó, hó, hó, hó.
o ſtrange, o' milagro.
o wonderful, o' maravilha.
ô fine that is, que bello que eſtá.

De Chamar.

Ho there, hó there, ho lá, ho lá.
Ho heark, you, you, eſcuta.

De Impedir.

Not a Word, nem huã Palavra.
Hold your Tongue, callate.

Da Sintaxe.

Eſta palavra (Sintaxe) dirivada do Grego, he huã ordenada diſpoſiçaõ das oito Partes da Oraçaõ entre ſi, e por eſta razaõ todas as inſtrucçois, ou regras, que conduzem para eſta ajuſtada Ordem, eſtaõ de baixõ deſte titullo.

A Sintaxe ſe divide em Analogia, ou perfeyta, e he commua, e regular; e em Anomola, ou figurada, e he irregular; e ſe a Parta das Regras.

Por duas vias ſe dis a Sintaxe Analogia, ou perfeyta: huá pella Conveniencia, e Concordancia das palavras

lavras entre Sy, e outra pello Regimem, ou de pendencia que huã dicçaõ tem da outra.

Pello que reſpeita a Concordancia das palavras entre ſy; tres ſaõ as Concordancias: a primeyra entre o Nominativo, e o Verbo.

A 2a entre o Adjectivo, e o Subſtantivo.

A 3a entre o antecedente e o Relativo.

Em quanto á primeyra, entra o Nominativo e o Verbo: quando encontrares algum Verbo em huã ſentença, deves preguntar; quem exercita a ſignificaçaõ deſte Verbo? e apalavra, ou Nome, que te reſponde aeſta pregunta, eſſa terâs por Nominativo do Verbo, e os concordaras em Numero, e peſſoa, v. g.

I am your Servant, eu ſou voſſo ſervidor.
he is very diligent, elle he muyto diligente.
we are all Friends, nõs ſomos todos Amigos.
you are very civil, vôs ſois muy civil.
they are very bold, elles ſaõ muy atrevidos.

Nos Exemplos referidos acharâs, fazendo a pregunta de quem he o ſervidor, o de ligente, os amigos, o civil, e os atrevidos; que eu, elle, nos, vos, e elles, ſaõ os que reſpondem á ditta pregunta, e que por Conſequencia ſaõ os Nominativos do Verbo de cada huã das Sentenças; o que eſtaõ concordando em Numero, e peſſoa, conforme a ſua regra: por que overbo am, eſtá comcordado com o Pronome *I*, em Numero, e peſſoa no ſingular, e na primeyra peſſoa; e a ſua terceira peſſoa, *is*, eſtá concordando com o Pronome, *he*, terceyra peſſoa e do Numero ſingular, e we primeira peſſoa de plurar, e *you* ſegunda, e *they* terceira do meſmo Numero ſaõ os Nominativo, de, *are* do Verbo, am que ſem mudança determinaçaõ ſerve para todas dittas peſſoas; e com ellas eſtá concordando em numero, e peſſoa.

Nota

Noteſe que muytos Nominativos juntos Levaõ o Verbo ao plurar, e que eſte Concorda com apeſſoa mais nobre.

I and thou are in Safe-Guard.	Eu e tu eſtamos em Seguro.
Thou and thy Father are in Jeopardy.	Tu e teu pay eſtais em grande perigo.
Thy Father and thy Maſter ſend for you.	Teu Pay e teu Meſtre mandaõ porti.

O exemplo eſtá em, *I and thou*, em *thou and thy Father*: E em *thy Father and thy Maſter*: Os quais Nominativos juntos levaõ o Verbo, *are*, e o, Verbo, *ſend*, ao Plurar.

Noteſe que alguãs Vezes o Infinitivo, ou aparte enteyra de huã ſentença ſerve de Nominrtivo ao Verbo, Ex.

To riſe betimes is a very wholſome Thing.	Levantar ſedo he mais ſalutifera Couza.
To know much is a moſt pleaſant Life.	Saber muyto he amais agradavel Vida.

O exemplo eſtá em, *to riſe*, e em, *to know*, Infinitivos, os quais eſtaó Servindo de Nominativo ao Verbo, *is*.

Noteſe Que alguás Vezes ſe uza do prezente, em lugar do preterito, Ex.

They go a hunting.	Elles foraõ á caça.
They take a Stag.	Elles tomaraó hum Corço.
They divide it.	Elles o dividiraõ.

O exemplo eſtá em, *they go*, *they take*, *and they divide*, prezentes do Indicativo, em lugar de *went*, *took*, e *divided* preteritos perfeytos.

Noteſe que tambem alguãs Vezes ſe uza do prezente em lugar do Futuro, Ex.

What Day is to-morrow?	Que Dia he Manhaã?
To-morrow is Sunday.	A manhaã he *Domingo.*
When do you go?	Quando vas tu?
I go next Week.	Eu vou a Semana que Vem.
Next Monday *is a Holy-day.*	A *Semana* que vem he dia Santo.

O exemplo eſtá naſterceyras peſſoas, *is*, do Verbo, *am*, e em, *I go*, prezentes do Indicativo, que eſtaó em lugar de *ſhall be*, e *ſhall go*, futuros.

Tambem ſe uza do tempo prezente do Verbo, *I am*, com o Participio do prezente do Verbo que ſe neceſſita para expreſſar o prezente do ditto Verbo, Ex.

I am going to Church.	Eu vou a' Igreja.
He is going for France.	Elle vay para *Franca.*
What is he doing?	Que fas elle?
He is writing.	Elle eſcreve.
He is reading.	Elle le.
What is ſhe doing?	Que fas ella?
She is dreſſing her Head.	Ella compoem ſua Cabeça.

O Exemplo eſtá em, *am*, e, *is*, com os Participios do prezente, *going*, *doing*, *writing*, *reading*, e *dreſſing*, dos Verbos neceſſarios, em lugar dos prezentes, *goeth* ou *goes*, *doeth* ou *does*, &c.

Mas advirtaſſe, que he neceſſario, que o Verbo ſeja de movimento, eque acçaõ tenha duração; por que naõ ſera bem ditto, *he is ſeeing*, elle ve.

Tambem ſe uza do prezente com o Signal, *did*, ou do preterito perfeyto, para exprimir o preterito imperfeyto, Ex.

Alex-

Alexander *did take*, ou *took great Pleaſure in drinking.*	*Alexandre* tomava grande agrado na bebida.
He did take, ou *took ſuch Pleaſure in drinking, that Drunkenneſs was reckoned amongſt his Crimes.*	Elle tomava tal prazer em abebida, que a embriagues foy contada entre ſeus Crimes.
The Pagans *did worſhip*, ou *worſhipped the falſe Gods.*	Os *Paganos* adoravaõ os falſos Deuzes.

O exemplo eſtá em, *did take*, ou *took*, e em *did worſhip* ou *worſhipped*, uzados em lugar do imperfeyto.

O Preterito imperfeyto nos Verbos de Movimento, ſe expreſſaõ pello imperfeyto do Verbo, *am*, com o participio do prezente do ditto Verbo de Movimento, Ex.

Whither were you going Yeſterday when I met you?	Aonde hias tu hontem quando eu te encontrey?
I was going to the Exchange.	Eu hia á bolça.
What was he doing?	Que fazia elle?
He was writing.	Elle eſcrevia.

O exemplo eſtá em, *were*, com o participio *going*, e em, *was going*, *was doing*, *was writing*; expreſſando com elles o preterito imperfeyto dos Verbos de movimento, *go*, *do*, e *write*.

Alguás Vezes o preterito imperfeyto toma eſte ſignal, *would*, Ex.

He would take all the Men that came into the Wood.	Elle tomava todos os Homens que Vieraõ ao boſque.

He

He would lay an Ambuſh to ſlay them.	Elle fazia huã emboſcada para matalos.
As ſoon as they had done they would run away.	Tanto que elles tinhaõ feyto fugiaõ.
He would throw Money into the Streets!	Elle lancava dinheyro pellas ruas!

O exemplo eſtá em *take*, *lay*, *run*, e *throw*, todos expreſſando o preterito imperfeyto com oſignal, *would*.

O Preterito perfeyto ſimples ſe exprime pello participio do preterito ajuntandolhe as peſſoas, Ex.

I loved, eu amey; *I killed*, eu matey, o Exemplo eſtá em, *loved*, e *killed*. Que com o Pronome, *I*, ſe exprime a primeyra peſſoa do preterito dos Verbos *love*, e *kill*.

O Preterito perfeyto Compoſto ſe exprime com o prezente do Verbo *have*, e o participio do preterito do Verbo, que ſequer uzar, Ex.

I have been there ſeveral Times.	Eu eſtive lá diverſas Vezes.
He hath carried your Letter to the Poſt-Houſe.	Elle levou a Voſſa ou tua Carta ao Correyo.
We have drank together a great many Times.	Nôs temos bebido juntos muytas Vezes.

O Exemplo eſtá em, *have been*, *hath carried*, *have drank*, que com ſeus pronomes, *I*, *he*, *we*, eſtaó, Expreſſando o preterito perfeyto compoſto.

Noteſe que quando ſefas Menſſaõ de hum certo tempo he melhor ſervirſe do preterito imperfeyto, que do perfeyto, Ex.

I was there the laſt Week.	Eu eſtive la a ſomana paſſada.

He

He carried your Letter to the Poſt-Houſe the laſt Night.	Elle levou atua, ou Voſſa Carta aoCorreyo anoite paſſada.

O exemplo eſtá em *was*, e *carried*, preteritos imperfeytos, expreſſando por elles o preterito perfeyto, pella certeza do tempo da *ſomana*, e noite paſſada.

O Preterito pluſquam perfeyto ſe exprime com o preterito imperfeyto do Verbo, *have*, e o participio do preterito do Verbo, que ſe quer uzar; como ſediſſe na formaçaõ dos tempos, Ex.

As they had agreed.	Como elles tinhaõ acordado.
I brought home all the Money that I had owing.	Eu trouxe acaza todo odinheyro, que eu tinha Gainhado.
I gave to him a Shilling that I had found.	Eu lhedey hum Shillim, que eu tinha achado.

O exemplo eſtá em, *had agreed*, *had owing*, *had found*, explicando o pluſquam perfeyto dos Verbos de cada ſentença, com os ſeus participios, e o imperfeyto, *had*, do Verbo, *have*.

O uzo do futuro com o Signais *ſhall* ou *will*, o do Imperativo com o ſignal, *let*, e o do optativo, e Conjunctivo com os ſeus Signais, a qualquer Capacidade fica facil obſervando as Conjugaçois.

Do uzo do Infinito.

Serveſſe do infinito depois de outro Verbo, quando os dois Verbos pertencem ameſma peſſoa, Ex.

I deſire to learn Mathematicks.	Eu dezejo aprendar Mathematica.

Will

Will you learn to write? Queres aprender a eſcrever?

O exemplo eſtá em, *to learn*, e *to write*, que eſtaó no infinito por Cauza dos Verbos *deſire*, &c.

Do uzo do Supino.

Serveſſe tambem depois de outro Verbo, Ex.

I have ſomething to do. Eu tenho alguá Couza para fazer.
He hath Letters to write. Elle tem Cartas para eſcrever.
I have a great mind to go to Paris. Eu tenho grande Vontade de hir à Parîs.

O exemplo eſtá em, *to do*, *to write*, poſtos no Supino depois do Verbo, *have*.

O Gerundio em, *di*, pende de Subſtantivos, e de Adjectivos, Ex.

Time of learning. Tempo de aprender.
Arts of learning. Arte de aprénder.
Deſirous of having. De zejozo de ter.

O Gerundio em, do, *depende de propoziçaõ*, *Ex.*

He ſpendeth his Time in gaming and drinking. Elle gaſta ſeu Tempo em jugar e beber.
He taketh great Delight in fiſhing. Elle tem grande deleiaçaõ em peſcar.
He ſpends whole Days in reading. Elle gaſta dias emteyros em ler.

O Exemplo eſtá em, *gaming*, *fiſhing*, *reading*, Gerundios com adependencia da prepoziçao, *in*.

Noteſe que o fazer mençaõ de gerundio em, *di*, e em *do*, he reſpeitando a terminaçaõ Latina; porque

que no *Ingles* tem eſtes Gerundios aterminaçaõ em, *ing*, como ſe vê nos Exemplos.

Tambem ſerve para Dativo, com os Adjectivos, que Significaõ aptidaó, e utilidade, Ex.

Paper uſeful for writing.	Papel util para eſcrever.
Captain idoneous for war.	Capitaõ Capâs para guerra.

O exemplo eſtá em, *for writing*, e *for war*, poſtos em Dativo aos Adjectivos, *uſeful*, e *idoneous*.

Da ſegunda Concordancia.

Os Adjectivos ou ſejaõ Nomes, ou pronomes, ou Participios Concordaó com ſeus Subſtantivos, em Genero Numero, e Cazo, antecedendo adittos Subſtantivos; advertindo que no *Ingles* naõ tem adificuldade, e trabalho como no Latim, para aconcordancia neſtes accidentes, por Servir o Adjectivo (na Lingua *Ingleza*) ſem mudança determinaeois para todo o Numero, e Genero.

E para ſaberſe com clareza qual he o Subſtantivo; quando na o raçaõ ſe encontra hum Adjectivo; ſe fará a pregunta, *who*, quem, ou *what*, que couza, he aquillo que o Adjectivo ſignifica; v. g. branco, negro, ou outra qualquer qualidade, ou accidente; e a palavra, que reſponder á eſta pregunta, eſſa he o Subſtantivo, com quem hade Concordar o Adjectivo, Ex.

A beautiful Woman pleaſes.	A Mulher fermoza agrada.
The weary Traveller ſits ſtill.	O Caminhante canſſando ſe a ſenta quieto.
The filthy Swine are always grunting.	Os porcos Sujos ſempre eſtaõ grunhindo.
My pale Cheeks ſuddenly grew red.	Minha Face amarela derepente ſe fes vermelha.
Unjuſt Gains are eſteemed.	Lucros injuſtos ſaõ eſtimados.

O Exemplo eſtá em, *Woman*, *Traveller*, *Swine*, *Cheeks*, *Gains*, que ſaõ os Subſtantivos com quem concordaõ os Adjectivos, *beautiful*, *weary*, *filthy*, *my*, *injuſt*.

Da terceyra Concordancia do Relativo com o antecedente.

Quando ſe acha hum relativo, ſe deve tambem fazer a pregunta, *who*, quem? ou *what?* que Couza? he aquillo, que o Verbo, ou Adjectivo que eſtá deſpois do relativo, ſignifica? e apalavra, que reſponde a eſta pregunta, eſſa he o antecedente, com quem hade concordar o relativo, em Genero, Numero, e peſſoa, *Ex.*

The Man who is wiſe.	O Homen, que he ſabio.
The Woman who ſpeaketh few Words.	O Mulher, qua falla poucas Palavras.

Naõ concorda em Cazo; porque deve eſtar no Cazo, que o Verbo, ou Adjectivo, ſeguinte reger, ou outra qualquer dicçaõ, Ex.

The Letters, which you ſent, pleaſed.	As Cartas, que tu mandaſte agradaraõ.
He came in that Place in which.	Elle veyo a quelle lugar em o qual.

O Exemplo eſtá em os dois relativos, *which*, eſtando hum em Acuzativo do Verbo, *ſent*; e o outro em Ablativo da Prepoziçaõ, *in*.

Da quarta Concordancia da pregunta com a repoſta.

A pregunta concorda com a repoſta; iſto he que pello meſmo cazo que ſe fas a pregunta; pello meſmo cazo ſe da a repoſta, *Ex.*

Who bought this? I.	Quem comprou iſto? eu.
Of whom is this, of John ou John's?	De quem he iſto? de Joaõ?

What

What did you buy? that	Que compraſte iſſo ou aquillo?
To whom did you give? to him.	A quem o deſte? ã elle.
By whom was it bought? by him.	Por quem foy comprado? por elle.

O Exemplo eſta na pregunta, *who*, que eſtando em Nominativo, com ella concorda a repoſta, *I*; e o meſmo nas mais, *of whom*, *to whom*, *what*, *by whom*, em os quais fazendoſe a pregunta pellos, Genito, Accuſativo, Dativo, e Ablativo; concordaõ com elles nos meſmos Cazos as repoſtas.

Do Regimen, Governo, e Dependencia, que huã dicçaõ, ou palavra tem da outra.

Em toda Oraçaõ, ou Sentença deve de haver Nominativo, e Verbo, e todo o Verbo peſſoal do Modo finito Pede antes de ſi Nominativo, claro, ou eſcondido: vejaſſe o que ſe diſſe atrâs na primeyra Concordancia do Verbo com o Nominativo.

Os Verbos, que ſignificaõ o eſtado, condiçaõ habito, geſtos, coſtume, ou conſtituiçaõ de alguá peſſoa, ou coza regem antes e depois de ſi Nominativo, Ex.

He ſtands ſtreight.	Elle eſtá direito.
He is gone to Bed ſupperleſs.	Elle foy para acama ſem cea.

O Exemplo eſtá em, *ſtreight*, e *gone*, Nominativos depois dos Verbos, *ſtands*, e *is*, concordando com os Nominativos antedentes, *he*, *he*..

Os Verbos paſſivos; de eſtimar, conhecer, nomear, chamar regem antes, e deſpois de ſi Nominativo, Ez.

Thy Brother is accounted a learned Man.	Teu Irmaõ he eſtimado, por hum Homen ſabio.

Thou haſt been found often falſe.	Tu tens ſido achado muytas vezes falſo.
The King is called Father of the Country.	O Rey he chamado Pay da Patria.
My Brother is named John.	Meu Irmaõ ſe chama Joaõ.

O Exemplo eſtá em *thy Brother*, *thou*, *the King*, *my Brother*, Nominativos antecedentes aos Verbos, *to account*, *to find*, *to call*, *to name*, poſtos na paſſiva tendo depois de ſi os Nominativos, *learned Man*, *falſe*, *Father*, *John*.

Do Regimen do Genitivo.

Dois Subſtantivos juntos pertencentes a Couzas diverſas, o ſegundo vay a Genitivo com o ſignal, *of*, que correſpoude ã, dos, das, da, de, da Lingua Portugueza, Ex.

The Sight of a fair Picture delights the Eyes.	A Viſta de huã boa Pintura de Leyta ã Viſta.
The Beauty of a handſome Woman is pleaſant.	A Belleza da Mulher fermoza he agradavel.

O Signal, *of*, que ſignifica, do, da, de, dos, das, em Portugues; poſto depois dos Adjectivos, que ſignificaõ dezejo, ſabedoria, lembrança, Ignorancia, eſquecimento, cuydado, modo, culpa, ou outra qualquer paixaõ do Animo, he ſignal do Genitivo, que regem dittos Adjectivos, *Ex.*

Thoſe Men that are deſirous of Honour, ought to be ſtudious of Learning and good Manners.	Aquelles Homens, que ſaõ dezejozos de Honra, devem ſer dezejozos de aprender, e de bons Coſtumes.

He,

He, who is always mindful of the Maſter's Commands, is not fearful of Puniſhment.
Aquelle que eſtá cuydadozo das ordens do meſtre, naõ eſtá medrozo do Caſtigo.

Thou art ignorant of natural Things, rude of Letters, and uncertain of the Path of Virtue.
Tu eſtâs ignorante das Couzas naturais, rudo de Letras, e incerto do Atalho da Virtude.

Thou and I are both accuſed of the ſame Crime.
Tu e eu ſomos ambos accuzados do meſmo Crime.

The richeſt Man, careleſs of his Affairs, is reduced to Poverty; but a poor Man, careful of his, obtaineth Riches.
O mais rico Homen, deſcuydado de ſeus Negocios, he reduzido á Pobreza; porem o pobre cuydadozo dos ſeus, alcança riquezas.

O Exemplo eſtã em, *of Honour, of Learning, of good Manners, of the Maſter's Commands, of Puniſhment, of natural Things, of Letters, of the Path, of the ſame Crime, of his Affairs, of his*; os quais eſtáo em, Genitivo dos Adjectivos, deſirous, *ſtudious, mindful, fearful, ignorant, rude, uncertain, accuſed, careleſs, careful.*

Os Nomes Partativos, os Adjectivos partativamente poſtos, os Interrogativos, e os Numerais regem Genitivo, *Ex.*

Thou haſt choſen two Companions, of which one is a Fool, the other idle.
Tu tens Eſcolhido dois companheyros, dois quais hum he tonto, o outro preguiçozo.

It is a difficult Thing, which of the two Parties I ſhall take.
He difficultoza Couza, qual das duas Partes tomarey.

Romulus, *who built the famous City of* Rome, *was the firſt of all the* Roman *Kings.*	*Romulo*, que edificou a famoza Cidade de *Roma*, foy o primeiro de todos os Reys *Romanos.*
None of the Heatheniſh Gods delivered his Worſhipper.	Nenhum dos Deuzes gentilicos livrou ſeu Adorador.
Which is my Book? neither of theſe.	Qual he meu Livro? nenhum deſtes.

O Exemplo eſtá em, *of which, of two, of all the* Roman *Kings, of the Heatheniſh Gods, neither of theſe*, que eſtáo em Genitivo do Numeral, *one*, doſpurtativos, *whether, firſt, none, neither.*

Os Verbos de a Cuzar, condemnar, abſolver, e admoeſtar Regem Genitivo da Couza do que ſe a Cuza condemna abſolve, admoeſta, e Acuzativo da peſſoa como ſeverá adiante em ſeu proprio lugar, *Ex.*

He accuſeth another Man of Diſhoneſty.	Elle acuza outro Homen de dezoneſtidade.
He condemns his Son in Law of Wickedneſs.	Elle condemna ſeu Genro da Maldade.
We admoniſh the Grammarians of their Duty.	Nôs admoeſtamos os Grammaticos da ſua Obrigaçaõ.
He is acquitted of Theft.	Elle he abſolvido do Furto.

O Exemplo eſtá em, *of Diſhoneſty, of Wickedneſs, of their Duty, of Theft*, os quais eſtaõ em Genitivo dos Verbos, *accuſed, condemns, admoniſh, acquit.*

Os Adjectivos de Alegria Regem Genitivo, *Ex.*

He is glad of the Honour.	Elle eſtá alegre da Honra.

Os

Os Verbos de enquirir, ouvir Regem Genitivo da peſſoa de quem ſe *enquire*, ou ouve; e Acuzativo da Couza como ſeverā adiante, *Ex.*

He ſaith, he came to inquire of him.	Elle dis, que veyo a inquirir delle.
Perhaps you had heard of ſome Body.	Acazo tu tinhas ouvido de alguem.

As Particulas, *of*, *from*, *without*, quando eſtāō antes de algum Verbo, Regem Gerundio ou Participio do prezente, *Ex.*

I come from drinking.	Eu venho de beber.
I am never weary of reading.	Eu nunca eſtou cançado de ler.
Can you not ſpeak without laughing?	Naō podes fallar ſem rir?
Cannot Men be merry without quarrelling?	Naō podem os Homens eſtar alegres ſem contender?

Os Verbos de receber Regem Genitivo da peſſoa de quem ſe recebe, o Acuzativo da Couza, que ſe recebe, *Ex.*

I receive my Money of Peter.	Eu recebi o meu dinheyro de *Pedro.*

Do Regimen do Dativo.

A perda ou Proveyto ſe poem em Dativo ideſt, a peſſoa a quem ſedá a perda, ou o Proveyto ſe poem em Dativo, *Ex.*

Corn grows for Man.	O Trigo creſce para o Homen.
Hay is mowed for Horſes, and Cows.	O Feno he ſegado para Cavalos, e Vacas.

Os Adjectivos que ſignificaõ Utilidade, ou aptidaõ regem Dativo da Couza para que he util, ou apto, *Ex.*

Paper uſeful for writing. Papel util para eſcrever.

Captain idoneous to War. Capitaõ apto para ã Guerra.

Os Verbos, que ſignificaõ, *to promiſe*, prometer, *to pay*, pagar, *to give*, dar, *to ſell*, vender, *to ſend*, emviar, *to offer*, offereſſer, *to bring*, trazer, *to buy*, comprar, *to lend*, empreſtar, *to provide*, prover, *to tell*, dizer, regem Dativo da peſſoa aquem ſe promete, *&c.* e Acuſativo a Couza que ſe promete, *&c.* Ex.

My Father promiſed great Rewards to me. Meu Pay me prometeu grandes Premios.

The Debtor pays to the Creditor great Sums of Money. O Devedor paga ao a Credor grande ſoma de dinheiro.

My Father's Man brought me Bread and Cheeſe. O moſſo de meu Pay me Troxe paõ Equeijo.

My little Brother ſent me theſe Gloves. Meu irmaõ Pequeno me mandou eſtas Luvas.

My good Uncle will give me many choice Books. Meu bom tio me dará muytos Livros eſcolhidos.

Lend your Boots to the Servant of my Father, or my Father's Servant. Empreſta tuas Botas ao Moſſo de meu Pay.

When they offered Cæſar *a Crown and Sceptre he refuſed them.* Quando offereſſeraõ ã *Cæſar* a Coroa, e Ceptro, elle os refuzou.

Thou haſt told thy Father many Lyes. Tu diceſte a teu Pay muitas Mentiras.

O Exemplo eſtá em, *to me, to the Creditor, me, me, me, to the Servant*, Cæſar, *thy Father*, que eſ-

O

taõ em Dativo dos Verbos, *promiſe, pays, brought, ſent, give, lend, offered, told.*

Os Verbos de perſuadir regem Dativo da Couza ã que ſe perſuáde, e Acuzativo da peſſoa aquem ſe perſuade, *Ex.*

He perſuades me to that. Elle me perſuade aiſſo.

O Signal, *to*, que em Portugues ſignifica, aos, á as, a, para, he de Dativo eſpecialmente ſe ſe enſinua alguã acquiziçaõ, *Ex.*

To give way to the Time. Dar Tempo ao Tempo.

Antes de palavras Tempo de Movimento inſinua-dativo, *Ex.*

He liſteth up his Hands to Heaven. Elle levanta ſuas maõs ao Ceo.

He came to Genoa. Elle veyo a *Genova.*

Depois de huã palavra antes dos Adjectivos, que ſignificaõ, para, promptidaõ, capacidade, ou inclinaçaõ inſinua dativo, *Ex.*

A ready way to Honour. Prompto caminho para Honra.

Depois de huã palavra ſignificante, *in Compariſon of*, em comparaçaõ de, inſinua dativo, Ex.

Nothing to Perſeus, nada a *Perſeu*; i. e. *in Compariſon of* Perſeus, em comparaçaõ de *Perſeu.*

Depois de huã palavra ã que ſe ſegue, *according*, conforme, inſinua dative. *Ex.*

He ſpeaks all according to his Will. Elle falla tudo conforme ã ſua Vontade.

I judge according to my own Senſe. Eu julgo conforme ã meu proprio Juizo.

Deante

Deante dapeſſoa, *to whom*, aquem, ou *before whom*, diante quem, alguem ſe queixa, acuza, condemna, ou falla, inſinuadativo, *Ex.*

He complains to me by Letter.	Elle ſequeixa a mim por Carta.
He made Oration to the People.	Elle fês huá Practica ao Bovo.

Depois de huá palavra, que trâs expreſſaõ de Cortezia, *Courteſy*, ou Favor, *Kindneſs*, inſinua dativo, Ex.

Your Kindneſs to me have been very manifeſt, and very great.	Voſſo Favor para commigo tem ſido muyto manifeſto, e muy grande.

De dilaſſaõ, ou prorogaçaõ, a the tal Tempo, ſe poem em Dativo, *Ex.*

The Soldier's Hope is put off to another Day.	A Eſperança dos Soldados eſtá prorogada outro Dia.

Do Acuzativo.

O Verbo Activo rege Acuzativo, *Ex.*

We muſt love God.	Nos devemos amar a Deus.

Os Verbos de acuzar, condemnar, abſolver, e admoeſtar regem acuzativo da peſſoa, que ſe condemna, acuza, *&c.* como ja ſe referio atrâs.

Os Verbos de inquirir, ouvir, e receber regem acuzativo da Couza, que ſe inquire, ouve, ou recebe, como atrâs ſe fes mençaõ.

Os Verbos de prometer, pagar, dar, vender, emviar, offereſſer, trazer, comprar, empreſtar, prover, dizer, regem Acuzativo da Couza, que ſe promete, paga, *&c.* como ja ſediſſe atrâs.

Os Verbos de perſuadir regem Accuzativo da peſſoa a quem ſe perſuade.

Do

Do Regimen do Ablativo.

O Inſtrumento, Cauza, ou maneyra, com que alguã Couza he feyta ſe poem em Ablativo, *Ex.*

The Mind is diſtracted with Cares and Fears.	O Animo he diſtrahido com cuydados, e temores.
The Body is broken with Troubles.	O Corpo eſtá quebrado com Trabalhos.
Soldiers overcome Dangers with daring.	Os Soldados vencem Oſperigos com a Audacia.
Lions tear Beaſts by Strength.	Leõis deſpedaçaõ Feras com Força.
Nature is poliſhed by Learning and Art.	A Natureza he pulida com a Erudiçaõ e Arte.
Art is perfected by Practice.	A Arte he aperfeiçoada com a Practica.
I ſtruck my Brother, with my Fiſt and a Stone.	Eu feri meu Irmaõ com meu Punho, e huá Pedra.

Do Ablativo abſoluto.

Hum Nome naõ tendo palavra por quem poſſa ſer governado, ſe poem em Ablativo abſoluto, e em Ingles ſe conheſſe eſte por trazer antes do Verbo os Signais, *having*, *being*, *after*, *when*, ou outros ſemelhantes, e neſte Cazo o Verbo ſe exprime pello Participio do preterito ou do prezente, *Ex.*

Having thus encouraged his Soldiers.	Animados aſim ſeos Soldados.
Ptolomy *being dead.*	Morto *Potolomeu.*
Antiochus *being cut off, and all his Army.*	Vencido *Antioco*, e todo ſeu exercito.

Cleo-

Cleopatra, *his Mother-in-law, promiſing him the Kingdom of* Egypt.	Prometendo a elle *Cleopatra* ſua Madraſta o Reino de *Egypto*.
When Demetrius *knew this.*	Coheſſendo *Demetrio* iſto.

Do Uzo dos Artigos.

Na Lingua Ingleza ſe uza dos Artigos como na Portugueza, *Ex.*

The Body and the Soul.	O Corpo, e a Alma.
The Head is the higheſt.	A Cabeça, he o mais alto
The Stomach receiveth Victuals.	o eſtomago recebe as Comidas.
The Heart dieth laſt.	O Coraçaõ morre ultimo.
The Sight is a fine thing.	A Viſta he huã Bella Couza.

Falando porem de Virtudes, Paixões, Vicios, Artes, e Sciencias, naõ ſe Uza de Artigo, *Ex.*

Men muſt reſpect Wiſdom above Strength.	Os Homens devem reſpeitar o Juizo mais que a Força.
Fools deſpiſe Wiſdom.	Os Locos deſprezaõ o Juizo.
Virtue cannot agree with Vice.	A Virtude naõ pode concordar com o Vicio.
Juſtice is without Intereſt.	A Juſtiça he ſem intereſſe.
Chaſtity, Modeſty, and Humility, are lovely Virtues.	A Caſtidade, a Modeſtia, e a Humildade, ſaõ a maveis Virtudes.
Prudence is the Rule of all Virtues.	A Prudencia he Aregra, de todas as Virtudes.
Pride is the Sin of the Devil.	A Soberba he opecado do Diabo.
Diſcords are the Ruin of States.	As Diſcordias ſaõ Ruinas dos Eſtados.

Drunken-

Drunkenneſs is abominable.	A Bebedice he abominavel.
Anger doth breathe but Arms and Blood.	A Ira reſpira ſo Armas, e Sangue.
Philoſophy is Miſtreſs of Wiſdom.	A Philozophia he Meſtra do Juizo.
Muſick is pleaſant to the Ear.	A muzica he agradavel ao ouvido.
Writing knoweth nothing, and teacheth all Things.	A Eſcritura ſabe nada, e enſina todas as Couzas.
Arithmetick is the Science of Numbers.	A Ariſmetica he Sciencia de Numeros.

Falando de Subſtancias em geral, principalmente da quellas, que naõ ſe contaõ, naõ ſe uza de Artigo, *Ex.*

Bread is the Staff of Life.	O Paõ he bordaõ da Vida.
If Salt loſe its Savour.	Se o Sal perde ſeu Sabor.
I love Milk, Butter, and Cheeſe.	Eu amo Leito, Manteiga, e queijo.
Beef is the Partridge of England.	A Vaca he aperdis de *Inglaterra.*
Mutton is ſweeter than Bacon.	O Carneiro he mais doce que o toucinho.
Roaſt Meat is better than boiled Meat.	A comida Aſſada he melhor, que cozida.
Wine doth rejoice the Heart.	O Vinho alegra o Coraçaõ.
Beer and Ale are good together.	A Cerveja, e Elá juntas, ſaõ boas.
Gold and Silver do all Things.	O Ouro, e Aprata fazem todas as Couzas.
Wheat, Rye, and Barley make Bread.	O Trigo, Senteyo, e ſevadas fazem Paõ.
Graſs and Hay is the Food of Cattle.	Aerva, eo Feno ſaõ o Alimento do Gado.

Parſley,

Parſly, and Sorrel are good in Broth.	O Apio, e as Azedas ſaõ bons no Caldo.
Garlick ſtinks.	O Alho fede.
Muſtard is good with ſalt Beef.	A Moſtarda he boa com Vaca ſalgada.
After Dinner Muſtard.	Depois de Gentar Moſtarda.
Sugar is ſweet, but Pepper, Ginger, Nutmeg, and Mace are not.	O a Sucar he doce; mas a Pimenta, Gingivre nos Noſcada, e Flor de nos Noſcada naõ o ſaõ.

Todos os Subſtantivos, que ſe podem contar recebem artigo no ſingular, mas naõ no Plurar, *Ex.*

I have a Friend.	Eu tenho hum Amigo.
I have Friends.	Eu tenho Amigos.
I have a good Book.	Eu tenho hum bom Livro.
I have good Books.	Eu tenho bons Livros.
I have bought a Knife.	Eu comprey huá Faca.
I have bought Knives.	Eu comprey Facas.

Noteſe, que eſtas Regras ſó tem Lugar quando ſe fala de Entidades, e Subſtancias, em ſua Generalidade; porem quando a Generalidade ſe redúz a Couza particular, em taõ ſeuza de Artigo, *Ex.*

The Love of God.	O Amor de Deus.
The Wiſdom of Men is Folly.	O Juizo dos Homens he Louquice.
I thank you for the Wine, that you ſent me.	Eu te dou as Graças pello Vinho, que me mandaſte.
I have ſpent all the Gold and Silver, that I received Yeſterday.	Eu diſpendi todo o Ouro, e Prata, que recebi Hontem.

The

The Mutton that we did eat the other Day, was very ſweet.	O Carneiro, que nôs comemos o outro Dia, era muyto doce.
The Beer that I drank laſt Night was good.	A Cerveja que eu bebi a Noyte paſſada era boa.
The Books, that, I bought, are good.	Os Livros, que comprey ſaõ bons.

Falando de Couzas differentes naõ ſe repete o Artigo, *Ex.*

The Kings and Princes.	Os Reys, e Príncipes.
The Eyes and Ears.	Os Olhos, e Orelhas.
The Arms and Legs.	Os Braços, e Pernas.
The Father, Mother and Children.	O Pay, May, e Crianças.
The Brother and Siſter.	O Irmaõ, e Irmãa.
The Butter and Cheeſe.	A Manteiga, e Queijo.
The Light and Darkneſs.	A Lûs, e Eſcuridade.

Quando ſe fala das Partes do Corpo, em Lugar do Artigo, ſe Uza dos Pronomes poſſeſſivos, *Ex.*

My Head aches.	Medoe a cabeça.
My Eyes are ſore.	Meus olhos eſtaõ chagados.
My Leg is broken.	Minha Perna eſtá quebrada.
I have burnt my Leg.	Queimey a Perna.
Is your Belly full?	Eſtá Chea tua barriga?
I will break your Neck.	Te quebrarey Opeſcoço.
He hath loſt his Sight.	Elle perdeu ſua Viſta.
Waſh your Hands.	Lava tuas Mãos.

O Genitivo de pertençaõ ou poſſeſſaõ, como chamaõ os Lanitos, tem Lugar quando ſe fala deduas peſſoas

peſſoas, ou Couzas pertencentes hua á outra eo tal Genitivo ſe antepoem ſem Artigo, a juntandolhe hum, *s*, e interpondo hum Apoſtrofe na Forma abaixo.

The King's Son.	O Filho do Rey.
The Queen's Coach.	O Coche da Rainha.
The Brother's Wife.	A Mulher do Irmaõ.
My Father's Houſe.	A Caza de meu Pay.
My Siſter's Gloves.	As Luvas de minha Irmaã.
My Couſin's Book.	O Livro de meu Primo.
My Uncle's Son.	O Filho de meu Tio.

Porem quando dois Subſtantivos vem juntos, e pertencem a Couzas diverſas, o ſegundo vay a Genitivo com o Artigo, *of*, Signal do Genitivo, como ſe diſſe no Regimen do Genitivo.

Quando ſe fala de Materia de que alguã Couza he feyta, a Materia ſe poem em Genitivo, antecedendo o tal Genitivo a o Nominativo ſem Artigo, *Ex.*

A brick Houſe.	Huã Caza depedra.
A ſilver Diſh.	Hum prato de Prata.
A ſcarlet Cloak.	Huma Capa de eſcarlate.
A ſilk Stocking.	Huã meya de Seda.
A wooden Box.	Huã caixa de Paõ.
A horn Comb.	Hum pente de Corno.
Braſs Money.	Dinheiro de Cobre.
A holland Shirt.	Huã Camiza de Olanda.

Quando ſe fala, de Couzas que ſe pezaõ, contaõ, ou medem, a Couza contada, pezada, ou medida ſe poem em Genitivo, poſpoſto o tal Genitivo com o Artigo, *of*, Ex.

A Glaſs of Wine.	Hum Vazo de Vinho.
A Barrel of Beer.	Hum Barril de Cerveja.

A

A Diſh of Meat.	Hum Prato de Carne.
A Dozen of Lemons.	Huã Duzia de Limoes.
A Score of Oranges.	Huá Vintena de Laranjas.
A Pint of Wine.	Huá Pinta de Vinho.
A Buſhel of Wheat.	Huma Fanega de Trigo.
An Ell of Cloth.	Huã Vara de Pano.
A Pound of Butter.	Hum Arratel de Manteiga.
A Yard of Ribbon.	Huã Jarda de Fita.

Quando ſe fala de Muzica, ou Inſtrumentos, ſe Uza do Verbo, *to play*, com o Artigo, *the*, acompanhado dãs Prepoziçõẽs, *on*, ou, *upon*, Ex.

To play upon the Fiddle.	tanger Rabeca.
To play upon the Lute.	tanger a Laude.
To play upon the Guitar.	tanger Viola.
To play upon the Virginal.	tanger Cravo.

Falando de Jogos de Gainhar, ou perder, ſe Uza do meſmo Verbo, *to play*, com a Prepoziçaõ, *at*, Ex.

To play at Piquet.	jugar os Piques.
To play at Cards.	jugar as Cartas.
To play at Pins.	jugar aos Paõs.
To play at Tennis.	jugar a Pella.
To play at Dice.	jugar os Dados.

Da pregunta, where, *aonde?*

Quando a pregunta, ou queſtaõ ſe fas por, *where*, ſem haver Movimento, a Lingua Ingleza, ſe ſerve nos Nomes proprios de Villas, Barrios, Aldeas da Propoziçaõ, *at*, que ſignifica, *em*, na Portugueza, *Ex.*

The King of England, *is at* London, *at* Windſor, *at* New-Market.	O Rey de *Inglaterra*, eſtá em *Londres*, em *Uinſar*, no *Mercado Novo.*

Tambem ſe uza de, *at*, com a palavra, *Home*, porem fallandoſe de Provincias ou Reynos, ſe ſerve da Propiziçaõ, *in*, Ex.

The King is in England, *in* Holland, *in* Picardy, *in the Country.*	El Rey eſtá em *Inglaterra*, em *Olanda*, em *Picardia*, em o Campo.

Da pregunta, whither, *para onde?*

Quando há Movimento nos Nomes proprios de Villas, cidades, e Barrios ſe Uza de, *to*, Ex.

I go to London.	Eu vou á *Londres.*
I go to Verſailles.	Eu vou á *Varſelles.*

Tambem ſe uza de, *to*, nos Nomes de Reinos, Provincias, havendo Movimento, Ex.

I will go to England.	Eu hirey a *Inglaterra.*
I am going to Holland.	Eu vou a *Olanda.*

Com a palavra, Home, *ſe ſuprime o* to, Ex.

He goes Home.	Elle vay a Caza.

Da Pregunta, from whence? *de donde?*

Quando a pregunta ſe fas, *from whence?* A Lingua Ingleza uza de, *from*, que ſignifica, de, na Portugueza; em todos os Nomes, ſem excepçaõ de Reynos, nem Provincias ſendo proprios, Ex.

From whence come you?	De donde vens?
I come from England, *from* London, *from* Verſailles.	Eu venho de *Inglaterra*, *de* Londres, *de* Varſelles.

Mas em os outros Nomes que naõ ſaõ proprios, ſe uza de *from*, com, *the*, Ex.

I come from the Market.	Eu venho do Mercado.
I come from the Church.	Eu venho da Igreja.
I come from the Country.	Eu venho do Campo.

Da

Da pregunta, by which way? *porque Parte?*

Em todos os Nomes proprios, uza de, *by*, Ex.

I will go by France, *by* Paris, *by* Verſailles.	Eu hirey por *França* por *Pariz*, *por* Varſelles.

Em todos outros Nomes, ſe ajunta o Artigo, *the*, Ex.

I paſſed by the Window.	Eu paſſey pella Janella.
I paſſed by the Door.	Eu paſſey pella Porta.
I paſſed by the Maſter's Country.	Eu paſſey pello Campo do amo.

Do Uzo de hum Verbo peſſoal em todas as acçõis; Affirmativas, Interrogativas, e Negativas.

Prezent.

I do ſee.	eu vejo.
I do not ſee.	naõ vejo.
Do I ſee?	vejo eu?
Do I not ſee?	naõ vejo eu?
He doth ſee.	elle ve.
He doth not ſee.	elle naõ ve.
Doth he ſee?	vé elle?
Doth he not ſee?	naõ ve' elle?
We do ſee.	nôs vemos.
We do not ſee.	nôs naô vemos.
Do we ſee?	vemos nôs?
Do we not ſee?	naõ vemos nos?
You do ſee.	vôs vedes.
You do not ſee.	vos naõ vedes.
Do you ſee?	vedes vôs.
Do you not ſee?	naõ vedes vôs?
They do ſee.	elles veem.
They do not ſee.	elles naõ veem.
Do they ſee?	veem elles?
Do they not ſee?	naõ veem elles?

Imperf.

I did ſee.	en via.
I did not ſee.	eu naõ via.
Did I ſee?	via eu?
Did I not ſee?	naõ via eu?

Perf.

I have ſeen.	eu tenho viſto.
I have not ſeen.	eu naõ tenho viſto.
Have I ſeen?	tenho eu viſto?
Have I not ſeen?	naõ tenho eu viſto, &c.
You have done.	vos tendes feito.
You have not done.	vos naõ tendes feito.
Have you done?	tendes vos feito?
Have you not done?	naõ tendes feito?

Pluſq.

I had Love.	eu tinha Amado.
I had not Loved.	eu naõ tinha Amado.
Had I Loved?	tinha eu Amado?
Had I not Loved?	naõ tinha eu Amado?

Futuro.

I will do.	eu farey.
I will not do.	eu naõ farey.
Shall I do?	farey eu?
Shall I not do?	naõ farey eu?

Imperf.

Let him do.	faça elle.
Let him not do.	naõ faça elle.
Let us go.	vamos.
Let us not go.	naõ vamos.
Speak.	falla.
Do not ſpeak, &c.	naõ falles.

Do Uzo de hum Verbo Impeſſoal na vôz activa.

It rains.	chove.
It doth not rain.	naõ chove.
Doth it rain?	chove?
Doth it not rain?	naõ chove?
It did rain.	chovia.
It did not rain.	naõ chovia.
Did it rain?	chovia?
Did it not rain?	naõ chovia?
It hath rained.	tem chovido.
It hath not rained.	naõ tem chovido.
Hath it rained?	tem chovido.
Hath it not rained?	naõ tem chovido.
It will rain.	choverá.
It will not rain.	naõ choverá.
Will it rain?	choverá?
Will it not rain?	naõ chovera?
Let it rain.	chova.
God grant it may rain.	Oxalá chova.
O would to God it might rain.	Oxalá chovera.

E por eſta forma ſe ſeguem os mais.

It blows, ou *it doth blow.*	aventa.
It freezes, ou *it doth freeze.*	gella.
It thaws, &c.	deſgella.
It doth ſnow.	neva.
It grieves me.	me ancea.
It behoveth me.	me convem.
It concerns me.	me importa.
It concerns you.	te importa.
It is hot.	eſtá quente.
It is cold.	eſtá frio.
It is fair Weather.	eſtá bom Tempo.

It is foul Weather.	eſtá maõ Tempo.
It is dirty.	eſtá lamacento.
It is dry.	eſtá ſeco.
It falls out ſometimes.	a contece alguás vezes.
It is good to be here.	eſtá bom para eſtar aqui.
It is not good to travel in Winter.	Naõ he bom caminhar de Inverno.
It is dangerous.	he perigozo.
It is better to be alone, than with bad Company.	he melhor eſtar ſó que com má Companhia.
It is better to dine late, than never.	melhor he gentar tarde, que nunca.
It is better to bow than to break.	melhor he dobrar, que quebrar.

Do uzo do Verbo, *to be*, impeſſoalmente affirmando.

there is.	eſtá.
there was.	eſtava.
there hath been.	eſteve ou tem eſtado.
there had been.	tinha eſtado.
there will be.	eſtará.
let there be.	eſteja.

Preguntando.

is there?	eſta?
was there?	eſtava?
hath there been?	eſteve, ou tem eſtado.
had there been?	tinha eſtado?
will there be?	eſtará?
would there be?	eſtaria?

Do uzo do Verbo, *muſt*, dever, ou neceſſitar.

He Verbo defectivo, ſe uza de Tempo prezente fazendo hum ſentido de futuro.

I muſt go.	eu devo ou neceſſito hir.
I muſt do that.	eu devo fazer aquillo.
You muſt do that.	deves fazer aquillo.
You muſt prepare.	neceſſitas preparar.
They muſt learn.	devem aprender.
We muſt have Care.	devemos ter Cuydado.
We muſt all die.	devemos morrer todos.
We muſt not wonder.	naõ devemos admirar.

O Imperfeyto deſte Verbo ſe, Expreſſa pella particula, *ſhould.*

You ſhould have done that.	devias ter feito aquillo.
I ſhould have gone there.	eu devia ter hido lá.

Para os outros Tempos he neceſſario uzar de Paraphrazes, formandoos com o auxiliar, *to be*, e o Adjectivo, *needful*, que ſignifica Couza neceſſaria, v. g. para formar o preterito perfeito, ſe dirá.

It hath been needful.	foy neceſſario.

E da meſma Sorte os mais, *&c.*

Do uzo do Verbo impeſſoal na voz paſſiva.

O Verbo impeſſoal neſta vôz paſſiva, na Lingua Ingleza; huãs vezes ſe exprime pella dicçaõ. *they*, v. g.

they ſpeak.	falaſſe.
they ſpeak good French *at* Blois.	falaſſe bom *Frances* em *Blois.*
they drink good Wine in France.	bebeſſe bom vinho em *França.*
they ſpeak better Engliſh *in* London, *than any where elſe.*	falaſſe melhor *Ingles* em *Londres*, que em outra qualquer parte.
they eat good Cream at Blois.	comeſſe boa nata em *Blois.*

Outras vezes ſe exprime pellas dicçois, *Men, People, one*, v. g.

Men know that well.	ſabeſſe bem iſſo.
Men have not all that they wiſh for.	naõ ſe tem quanto ſe deseja.
One commanded me to do.	emcomendoſſe a fazer.
Men loſe many things, for Want of aſking.	perdenſe muytas Couzas, por falta de Preguntar.
People talk of that.	falaſſe diſſo.
One told me ſo.	aſim ſe medice.
People tell a great many Lies.	ſe dizem muytas Mentiras.

Mas mais commummente ſe uza do Verbo, *to be*, e do Participio do preterito do Verbo, conforme o que ſequer expreſſar, v. g.

It is ſaid.	ſe dis.
Good Wine is drank in France.	bom Vinho ſe bebe em *França.*
The beſt Engliſh *is ſpoken at* London.	o melhor *Inglês* ſe falla em *Londres.*
That is well known, I have been commanded.	iſſo bem ſeſabe, fuy mandado.
Many Things are loſt, for want of aſking	muytas Couzas ſe perdem por falta de Preguntar.
It will be found.	ſe achará.
It will be done.	ſe fará,
Roſes are found among Thorns.	ſe achaõ Rozas entre Eſpinhos.
A Friend is known in Neceſſity.	o Amigo ſe conheſſe na Neceſſidade.

Pe-

Pequenos Dialogos para Principiantes.

Small Dialogues for Beginners.

Palavra por palavra.

Verbatim.

I.

De donde vens tu Senhor?

From whence come you Sir?

Eu venho da noſſa Igreja comminha May.

I come from our Church with my Mother,

Tens tu ouvido hum bom Sermaõ?

Have you heard a good Sermon?

Muyto bom, e muyto cientifico.

Very good and very learned.

Quem ha pregado eſta Manham?

Who hath preached this Morning?

Elle he o Senhor *Lucas* voſſo amigo.

It is Mr. Lucas *your Friend.*

Elle he hum honeſto homem.

He is a very honeſt Man.

Elle faz muyto bons Sermoins.

He maketh very good Sermons.

Onde vas tu a gora?

Whither go you now?

Agentar, e entaõ a ver hum Amigo.

To dinner, and then to ſee a Friend.

Novamente vindo do Campo.

Newly come from the Country.

Queres tu gentar com migo?

Will you dine with me?

Que tens tu para gentar?

What have you for Dinner?

Nos temos alguã Vaca, algum Carneiro.

We have ſome Beef, ſome Mutton.

Alguma Vitela, algum Cordeyro, alguns Graõs.

Some Veal, ſome Lamb, ſome Peas.

Hum par de Coelhos, huã Salada.

A couple of Rabbits, and Sallad.

Eu

Eu naõ poſſo gentar com tigo hoje.	*I cannot dine with you to-day.*
Elle ſerá para outra ocaziaõ.	*It ſhall be for another Time.*
A Deus, eu ſou teu Servidor.	*Farewell, I am your Servant.*
Eu ſou voſſo com todo meu Coraçaõ.	*I am yours with all my Heart.*

II.

Onde queres tu hir éſta tarde.	*Whither will you go this Afternoon?*
Vamos a *Greenwich* ou *Windſor*.	*Let us go to* Greenwich *or* Windſor.
Quereis vos hir a Pé, ou em Coche?	*Will you go on Foot, or in a Coach?*
A Cavalo, ou em Batel?	*On Horſeback, or in a Boat?*
Vamos em hum Batel èute rogo.	*Let us go in a Boat I pray you.*
Porém antes bebamos juntos.	*But before let us drink together.*
Huã Botelha de Vinho em éſta Taverna.	*A Bottle of Wine in this Tavern.*
Rapâs, chama teu Amo; onde eſtá elle?	*Boy, call your Maſter; where is he?*
Senhor, elle he hido a o Campo.	*Sir, he is gone into the Country.*
Com ſua Mulher e ſuas Crianças.	*With his Wife and his Children.*
Eu poſſo tirar hum taõ bom Vinho como qualquer homem em *Inglaterra*.	*I can draw as good Wine as any Man in* England.
Vay depreſſa, aviate, deſpacha, corre.	*Go quickly, make haſte, run.*

Entre

Entre tanto concertemos hum Batel.

Com eſte Barqueiro.

Quanto tomarás tu da qui a *Greenwich* ?

Dois Xilins, Senhor.

Iſſo he muyto tu terâs hum.

Vay, traze teu Batel, corre depreſſa.

Rapâs tira outra Botelha devinho.

Traze hum vidro, lava o bem.

A voſſa ſaude, Senhores, acabemos.

Bebe todo, paguemos e vamos.

Vos eſtais muy apreſſado ; porque taõ ſedo.

Eu quero tornar ſedo; e eu tambem.

In the mean Time let us bargain for a Boat.

With this Waterman.

What will you take from hence to Greenwich.

Two Shillings, Sir.

It is too much, you ſhall have one.

Go fetch your Boat, run quickly.

Boy, draw another Bottle of Wine.

Bring a Glaſs, waſh it well.

To your health, Gentlemen, let us make an End.

Drink all, let us pay and begone.

You are very haſty, why ſo ſoon.

I will return betimes ; and I alſo.

III.

Eres tu o Meſtre da tenda ?

Sim, Senhor, a voſſo Serviço.

Entre Vmce.

Tens tu alguãs boas Luvas ?

Moſtrame alguãs das melhores.

A palpa eſtas, provaas.

Ellas ſaõ muyto brandas, e huã boa Cor.

Are you the Maſter of the Shop ?

Yes, Sir, at your Service.

Come in, Sir.

Have you any good Gloves ?

Shew me ſome of the beſt.

Feel this Pair, try them.

They are very ſoft, and a good Colour.

Ellas

Ellas ſaõ muy pequenas, ellas ſaõ muy eſtreytas.

They are too little, they are too narrow.

Quanto pedes tu por eſtas aqui?

What do you ask for theſe here?

Meya Coroa.

Half a Crown.

Eſſe preço naõ he razoavel.

That Price is not reaſonable.

Tem, ahy eſtaõ dois Xilins.

Hold, there is two Shillings.

Tens tu Camaras para alugar?

Have you Chambers to lett?

Vem dentro ſe te agrada, tu aſ veràs.

Come in if you pleaſe, you ſhall ſee them.

éſta Caza he muyto bella.

This Houſe is very fine.

Mas as eſcadas ſaõ muyto eſcuras.

But the Stairs are very dark.

Quanto pedes tu por eſtas duas Camaras?

What do you ask for theſe two Chambers?

Queres tu darme trez Livraſa o mez?

Will you give me three Pounds a Month?

Dame Sinal, o Concerto eſta feito.

Give me Earneſt, the Bargain is made.

Ahy eſtá huã Coroa, eſtas tu contente?

There is a Crown, are you content.

Sim, Senhor, vem quando tu quizeres.

Yes, Sir, come when you will.

IV.

Sois vôs *Ingles*, Senhor?

Are you an Engliſhman, *Sir?*

Sim, Madama, a teu ſerviço.

Yes, Madam, at your Service.

Eu eſtou muyto alegre de encontrar a ty aqui.

I am very glad to meet you here.

Que

Que dizes tu de eſte Pays?

What ſay you of this Country?

Elle he o mais bello Pays do Mundo.

It is the fineſt Country in the Word.

Tens tu eſtado em *Veneza?*

Have you been at Venice?

Sim, Madama, ella he huã bella Cidade.

Yes, Madam, it is a fine City.

Sabes tu falar *Italiano?*

Can you ſpeak Italian?

Eu emtendo melhor do que falo.

I underſtand better than I ſpeak.

Queres tu gentar com migo hoje?

Will you dine with me to-day.

Eu me alegrarey de voſſa Companhia.

I ſhall be glad of your Company.

Naõ poſſo porcerto, tenho que fazer.

I can't indeed, I have Buſineſs to do.

Mas eu virey a Menhã ſem falta.

But I will come to-morrow without fail.

Vos ſereys ſempre pre bem vindo.

You ſhall be always welcome.

Trazey voſſa Irmã com vôs.

Bring your Siſter along with you.

V.

Irmaõ, aqui eſtá voſſo Meſtre.

Brother, here is your Maſter.

Vinde a eſcrever.

Come to write.

Eu naõ poſſo em verdade, eu eſtou muy doente.

I cannot indeed, I am very ſick.

Vos eſtais ſempre indiſpoſto quando vos vedes voſſo Meſtre.

You are always indiſpoſed when you ſee your Maſter.

Vos eſtais prequiçozo, minha May eſtara agaſtada.

You are lazy, my Mother will be angry.

Eu

Eu aprenderey mais a manhã de Manhã.
I will learn more to-morrow Morning.

Senhor, demorate mais com migo.
Sir, ſtay longer with me.

Eu tenho huã grande vontade de aprender hoje.
I have a great Mind to learn to-day.

Agora eu começo a eſtar cançado.
Now I begin to be weary.

Eu imagino que he baſtante por Agora.
I think it is enough for this Time.

Onde queres tu hir eſtá tarde?
Whither will you go this Afternoon?

Eu quero hir ver noſſo Amigo *Thomas.*
I will go to ſee our Friend Thomas.

Te rogo lhe des meus Recados.
I pray you give him my Compliments.

Eu quero, eu naõ faltarey.
I will, I ſhall not fail.

Huã Collecçaõ de Verbos *Inglezes* e *Portuguezes* para expreſſar as acçõis mais ordinarias.

A Collection of Portugueſe *and* Engliſh *Verbs to expreſs moſt common Actions.*

To eat, comer.
To drink, beber.
To taſte, provar.
To chew, Maſcar.
To gnaw, roer.
To ſwallow, emgulir.
To faſt, jejuar.
To breakfaſt, almoçar.
To dine, gentar.
To ſup, Cear.
To treat, convidar.

To be hungry, ter fome.
To be dry, ter ſede.
To fill or ſatisfy, ſatis fazer.
To have a Stomach, ter apetite.
To drink hard, beber muito.
To get drunk, embebedarſe.

To

to go to Bed, hir para acama.
to ſleep, dormir.
to awake, acordar.
to watch, vegiar.

to reſt, or repoſe, deſcançar.
to ſnore, roncar.
to dream, ſonhar.
to riſe, levantar.

to dreſs oneſelf, comporſe, ou viſtirſe.
to undreſs oneſelf, diſpirſe.
to put on one's Stockings, calçar as meyas.
to put on one's Shoes, calçar os Sapatos.
to pull off one's Stockings, or Shoes, deſcalçar as meyas ou os Sapatos.
to comb one's Head, pentear a Cabeça.
to dreſs one's Head, toucar a Cabeça.

to powder one's Hair, polvilhar o Cabelo.
to curl one's Hair, emcreſpar o Cabello.
to paint oneſelf, pintarſe.
to waſh one's Hands, lavarſe as maõs.
to put on one's Hat, porſe o Chapeo.
to button oneſelf, abotoarſe.
to lace oneſelf, atacarſe.

Acçõis naturais dos Homens.

Natural Actions of Men.

to laugh, rir.
to ſing, cantar.
to cry, or weep, chorar.
to ſigh, ſuſpirar.
to groan, gemer.
to ſob, ſaluçar.
to ſneeze, eſpirrar.
to gape, bocejar.
to blow, ſoprar.
to whiſtle, ſuviar.
to hearken, eſcutar.

to hear, ouvir.
to ſpit, cuſpir.
to ſmell, cheirar.
to blow one's Noſe, aſoar.
to ſee, ver.
to look, reparar.
to bleed, ſangrar.
to ſweat, ſuar.
to wipe, limpar.
to rub, esfregar.
to ſhake, chocalhar.

to tremble, tremer.
to ſcratch, arranhar.
to pinch, beliſcar.
to tickle, fazer cocegas.
to feel, apalpar.

To ſtudy, Eſtudar.

ler, *to read.*
eſcrever, *to write.*
aprender, *to learn.*
decorar, *to get by Heart.*
aproveytar, *to improve.*
aſignar, *to ſign, or ſubſcribe.*
dobrar, *to fold up.*
ſelar, *to ſeal.*
por Oſobréſcri, *to put the Superſcription.*
corregir, *to correct.*
borrar, *to blot out.*
traduzir, *to tranſlate.*
começar, *to begin.*
continuar, *to continue, to go on.*
acabar, *to make an end.*
finalizar, *to finiſh.*
poder, *to be able.*
querer, *to be willing.*

To ſpeak, falar.

pronunciar, *to pronounce.*
fazer accento, *to accent.*
dizer, *to ſay.*
contar, *to tell.*
relatar, *to relate.*
gritar, *to cry out.*
chamar, *to call.*
preguntar, *to ask.*
reſponder, *to anſwer.*
calar, *to hold one's Tongue.*
enſinar, *to teach.*
inſtruir, *to inſtruct.*
mandar, *to command*, ou *to bid.*
reprehender, *to chide.*
obedecer, *to obey.*
confeſſar, *to confeſs*, ou *to own.*
aſegurar, *to aſſure.*
negar, *to deny.*
prohibir, *to prohibit*, ou *forbid.*
queicharſe, *to complain.*
contender, *to contend.*
diſputar, *to diſpute.*
razoar, *to reaſon.*

Ef-

Effects of the Mind.

Efeitos do Pençamento.

conhecer, *to know.*
imaginar, *to imagine.*
agradar, *to fancy.*
crer, *to believe.*
duvidar, *to doubt.*
ſuſpeitar, *to ſuſpect.*
cuidar, *to think.*
lembrar, *to remember.*
eſquecer, *to forget.*
dezejar, *to wiſh.*
eſperar, *to hope.*
temer, *to fear.*
diſſimular, *to diſſemble.*
fingir, *to feign.*
provar, *to try.*
julgar, *to judge.*
concluir, *to conclude.*
rezolver, *to reſolve.*
decider, *to decide.*

Of Love and Hatred.

Do Amor, e Odio.

amar, *to love.*
acariciar, *to careſs.*
lizonjear, *to flatter.*
abraçar, *to embrace.*
beijar, *to kiſs.*
ſaudar, *to ſalute.*
reverenciar, *to make a Bow or Courteſy.*
louvar, *to praiſe or commend.*
nutrir, *to feed.*
corrigir, *to correct.*
caſtigar, *to chaſtiſe.*
ameaçar, *to threaten.*
bater, *to beat.*
açoitar, *to whip.*
perdoar, *to forgive.*
aborrecer, *to hate.*
culpar, *to blame.*
comprimentar, *to compliment.*
felicitar, *to wiſh Joy.*
congratular, *to congratulate.*
acuzar, *to accuſe.*
eſcuzar, *to excuſe.*
condenar, *to condemn.*
abuzar, *to abuſe.*
punir, *to puniſh.*
querelar, *to quarrel.*
peleijar, *to fight.*
vencer, *to overcome.*
deſpir, *to ſtrip.*
deſpojar, *to plunder.*

matar, *to kill.*
afogar, *to ſtifle*, ou *to choak.*
roubar, *to rob.*
furtar, *to ſteal.*

To take one's Pleaſure.

Tomar Divertimento.

cantar, *to ſing.*
dançar, *to dance.*
ſaltar, *to leap*, ou *jump.*
eſgrimir, *to fence.*
cavalgar, *to ride.*
zombar, *to play the Fool.*
jugar as Cartas, *to play at Cards.*
gainhar, *to win.*
perder, *to loſe.*
apoſtar, *to lay a Wager.*
aventurar, *to venture.*
cortar, *to cut.*
baralhar, *to ſhuffle.*
enganar, *to bubble*, ou *to cheat.*
zombar, *to jeer, or banter.*
rirſe, *to laugh at.*

To be ſick.

Eſtar doente.

tratar de hum doente, *to tend or nurſe a ſick Body.*
ter cuydado, *to take Care.*
curar, *to dreſs a Wound*, ou *Cure.*
melhorar, *to recover.*
ſangrar, *to let Blood*, ou *bleed.*
dar hua ajuda, *to give a Clyſter.*
tomar Medicina, *to take Phyſick.*
vendar, *to bind with a Fillet.*

Of Bargains.

De Contratos.

comprar, *to buy.*
vender, *to ſell.*
entregar, *to deliver.*
trocar, *to change*, ou *truck.*
pagar, *to pay.*

pedir

pedir empreſtado, *to borrow.*
preſtar, *to lend.*
dever, *to owe.*
dar, *to give.*
alugar, *to hire.*
aceytar, *to accept.*
refuzar, *to refuſe.*
negar, *to deny.*
tomar, *to take.*
receber, *to receive.*
enganar, *to cheat.*
tirar, *to take away.*
prometer, *to promiſe.*
guardar, *to keep.*
mandar, *to bid.*
empenhar, *to pawn.*
perder, *to loſe.*
rogar, *to pray.*
ſuplicar, *to beſeech.*
obter, *to obtain.*

Of Life.

Da Vida.

parir, *to be delivered,* ou *brought to Bed.*
naſcer, *to be born.*
baptizar, *to baptize,* ou *to chriſten.*
creſcer, *to grow.*
viver, *to live.*
morrer, *to die.*
enterrar, *to bury.*

Of Motion.

Do Movimento.

mover, *to move,* ou *ſtir.*
hir, *to go.*
vir, *to come.*
partir, *to depart.*
hirſe, *to go away.*
aportar, *ou* arribar, *to arrive.*
tornar atras, *to come back.*
Ir atras, *to go back.*
chegar, *to go near,* ou *come near.*
eſtar de pe, *to ſtand.*
paſſear, *to walk.*
caminhar, *to march.*
deſaparecer, *to diſappear.*
correr, *to run.*
fugir, *to run away.*
ſeguir, *to follow.*
evitar, *to ſhun.*
eſcapar, *to eſcape.*
tornar, *to turn.*
alcançar, *to overtake.*
eſcorregar, *to ſlide.*
arrimar, *to lean.*

cahir, *to fall.*
tropeçar, *to ſtumble.*
continuar, *to go on.*
avançar, *to advance.*
diſtanciar, *to go from.*
hir, ao encontro, *to go to meet.*
entrar, *to go*, ou *come in.*
ſahir, *to go*, ou *come out.*
ſubir, *to go*, ou *come up.*
baixar, *to go*, ou *come down.*
embaſbacar, *to amuſe oneſelf.*
enviar, *to ſend.*
apreſſar, *to make haſte.*
deter, *to tarry.*
ſentarſe, *to ſit down.*
nadar, *to ſwim.*
margulhar, *to dive*, ou *duck.*
ſumergir, *to drown.*
caminhar, *to travel.*

Handy Works.

Obras de Maõs.

trabalhar, *to work.*
tocar, *to touch.*
manejar, *to manage.*
fechar, *to ſhut.*
tapar, *to ſtop.*
abrir, *to open.*
levantar, *to lift up.*
encher, *to fill.*
derramar, *to ſpill*, ou *ſhed.*
molhar, *to dip*, ou *ſteep.*
alcançar, *to reach.*
armar, *to arm.*
tirar, *to draw, ou pull.*
arrebatar, *to ſnatch.*
arrancar, *to pluck out.*
moſtrar, *to ſhew.*
miſturar, *to mingle.*
eſtender, *to pull out*, ou *ſtretch out.*
plantar, *to plant*, ou *ſet.*
pezar, *to weigh.*
atar, *to tie*, ou *bind.*
deſatar, *to untie.*
anodar, *to knit.*
amontoar, *to heap.*
ajuntar, *to gather.*
quebrar, *to break.*
deſpedaçar, *to tear.*
cortar, *to cut.*
pizar, *to bruize.*
eſpremer, *to ſqueeze.*
ter, *to hold.*
eſconder, *to hide.*
cubrir, *to cover.*
deſcobrir, *to diſcover.*
buſcar, *to ſeek*, ou *look for.*
achar, *to find.*
ſujar, *to ſtain.*
enlamear, *to dirt.*
limpar, *to cleanſe.*

bar-

barrer, *to ſweep.*
lavar, *to waſh.*
enchagoar, *to rinſe.*
pintar, *to draw Pictures.*
gravar, *to engrave.*
entalhar, *to carve.*
edificar, *to build.*
acender, *to kindle*, ou *light.*
eſtender, *to ſpread out.*
imprimir, *to print.*
encadernar, *to bind a Book.*
tocar o ſino, *to ring.*
pentear, *to comb.*
remendar, *to mend.*
cozer, *to ſew.*
peſpontar, *to ſtitch.*
ferrar, *to ſhoe a Horſe.*

Of the Sound of Beaſts.

Do Son dos Animais.

O Cavallo rincha, *the Horſe neighs.*
O Aſno zurra, *the Aſs brays.*
O Leaõ brame *the Lion roars.*
O Boy berra, *the Ox bellows.*
O Porco grunhe, *the Hog grunts.*
O Lobo uva, *the Wolf howls.*
O Caõ ladra, *the Dog barks.*
A Ovelha berra, *the Sheep bleats.*
A Cobra aſobia, *the Snake hiſſes.*
O Gato mya, *the Cat mews.*

The Birds are uſed.

Os Paſſaros ſaõ coſtumados.

cantar, *to ſing.*
chirriar, *to chirp.*
picar, *to pick.*
o Galo canta, *the Cock crows.*
o Corvo graſna, *the Raven croaks.*
o Papagayo fala, *The Parrot talks.*
a Pega graſna, *the Magpye chatters.*
a Galinha poem Ovos, *the Hen lays Eggs.*

Frazes familiares.	*Familiar Phraſes.*
eu vos peſſo dame ſe te agrada.	*I pray you, or pray give me if you pleaſe.*
trazeme.	*bring me.*
empreſtame.	*lend me.*
eu te agradeço.	*I thank you.*
eu vos dou Graças.	*I give you Thanks.*
vay e traze.	*go and fetch.*
logo.	*preſently.*
amado S^{r}. fazeme, eſte Favor.	*dear Sir, do me that Kindneſs or Favour.*
amada Senhora concedeme eſte Favor.	*dear Madam, grant me that Favour.*
eu vos ſuplico.	*I beſeech you.*
eu vos rogo ou eu vos conjuro a fazelo.	*I entreat you,* ou *I conjure you to do it.*
eu volo peſſo por Favor.	*I beg it as a Favour.*
obrigame a tanto.	*oblige me ſo far.*

Expreſſõis de Carinho.	*Expreſſions of Kindneſs.*
minha Vida.	*my Life.*
meu Amor.	*my Love.*
minha querida Alma.	*my dear Soul.*
meu Brinquinho.	*my little Darling.*
meu Coraçaõzinho.	*my little Heart.*
meu doſe Coraçaõ.	*my ſweet Heart.*
meu Melzinho.	*my little Honey.*
meu querido Minino.	*my dear Child.*
meu lindo Anjo.	*my pretty Angel.*
meu Tudo.	*my all.*

Para

Para agradecer e Comprimentar, ou moſtrar Benignidade.

To thank and compliment, or ſhew Kindneſs.

Eu vos agradeço. *I thank you.*
Eu vos dou as Graças. *I give you Thanks.*
Eu vos rendo mil Graças. *I render you a thouſand Thanks.*
Eu o farey com Goſto. *I will do it with Pleaſure.*
com todo meu Coraçaõ. *with all my Heart.*
de Coraçaõ. *heartily.*
eu vos ſou obrigado. *I am obliged to you.*
eu ſou todo voſſo. *I am wholly yours.*
eu ſou voſſo ſervidor. *I am your Servant.*
voſſo humildiſſimo ſervidor. *your moſt humble Servant.*
vos eſtais muito obrigador. *you are too obliging.*
vos vos dais muito Trabalho. *you give yourſelf too much Trouble.*
eu nenhum acho em vos ſervir. *I find none in ſerving you.*
Tu eres muy benigno ou muito civil. *you are very kind, or very civil.*
Iſſo he muito benevolo. *That is very kind.*
que dezejas tu ter. *What will you be pleaſed to have.*
eu dezejo que tu ſejas livre commigo. *I deſire you to be free with me.*
ſem Comprimento. *without Compliment.*
ſem Ceremonia. *without Ceremony.*
eu te amo com todo meu Coraçaõ. *I love you with all my Heart.*
eu tambem. *and I alſo.*
fiate de mim. *rely or depend upon me.*
mandame. *command me.*

honrame com teus mandatos. — *honour me with your Commands.*

tens tu em que mandarme? — *have you any Thing to command me*, ou *have you any Commands for me?*

tu neceſſitas ſo mandarme. — *you need but command me.*

diſpoem de teu Criado. — *diſpoſe of your Servant.*

eu ſô eſpero porteus mandatos. — *I only wait for your Commands.*

naõ tens mais que falar. — *do but ſpeak.*

tu me fazes muito favour, — *you do me much Honour.*

deichemos Comprimentos eu rogo, peſſo. — *let us forbear Compliments I pray.*

deichemos Cerimonias. — *let us forbear Ceremonies.*

pois na primeira Ocaziaõ, — *well then on the firſt Occaſion,*

me valerey de teus Favores. — *I'll value myſelf of your Favours.*

Para afirmâr, negar, conſentir. — *To affirm, deny, conſent.*

he verdade. — *it is true.*

he verdade? — *is it true?*

naõ he mais que muita verdade. — *it is but too true.*

para vos dizer averdade. — *to tell you the Truth.*

realmente aſſim he. — *really it is ſo.*

quem o duvida? — *who doubts it? who queſtions it?*

naõ ha duvida. — *there is no doubt on it.*

eu creo que ſim. — *I believe yes.*

eu creo que naõ. — *I believe not.*

eu digo que ſim. — *I ſay yes.*

eu digo que naõ.	*I ſay no.*
eu apoſto que he.	*I lay it is.*
eu apoſto que naõ he.	*I lay it is not.*
em minha conſciencia.	*in my conſcience.*
por minha vida.	*upon my Life.*
morra eu ſe te digo fabula, ou mintira.	*let me die if I tell you an Untruth or a Lye.*
ſim, eu juro.	*yes, I ſwear.*
eu juro como ſou Cavalheiro.	*I ſwear as I am a Gentleman.*
comó ſou homem de bem.	*as I am an honeſt Man.*
ſobre meu honor ou Credito.	*upon my Honour, or Credit.*
credeme.	*believe me.*
eu poſſo dizerte.	*I can tell you.*
eu poſſo a ſegurarte.	*I can aſſure you.*
eu apoſtaria alguma couza.	*I could lay ſomething.*
naõ zombes.	*don't you jeſt.*
falas ſerio ?	*are you ſerious, or are you in earneſt ?*
eu falo ſerio.	*I ſpeak, or I am in earneſt.*
ſem duvida.	*I warrant you.*
tu tens ádivinhado.	*you have gueſſed right.*
meteſte ó prego na Cabeça.	*you have hit the right Nail on the Head.*
eu te creyo.	*I believe you.*
pode crerſete.	*one may believe you.*
iſſo naõ he impoſſivel.	*that is not impoſſible.*
tudo pode ſer.	*all may be.*

Dehir, devir, de ſe mover.	*Of going, coming, ſtirring, &c.*
de onde vens?	*from whence come you?*
a onde vas?	*whither do you go,* ou *where are you going?*
eu venho, eu vou.	*I come, I go.*
vem aſima, vem abaixo.	*come up, come down.*
vem dentro, ſay.	*come in, go out.*
apreſſate.	*make haſte.*
naõ te movas da qui.	*do not ſtir from thence.*
eſpera ahy.	*ſtay there.*
vem junto amim.	*come near me.*
vaite.	*get you gone.*
vay teu caminho.	*go your ways.*
chegate, *ou* arredate atras, hum pouco.	*go back a little.*
vem aqui.	*come hither.*
eſpera hum pouco.	*ſtay a little.*
eſpera por mim.	*ſtay for me.*
naõ vas taõ depreſſa.	*do not go ſo faſt.*
tu vas muy depreſſa.	*you go too faſt.*
tirate da minha Viſta.	*get you out of my Sight.*
naõ me toques.	*do not touch me.*
deicha iſſo.	*let that alone.*
porque?	*why?*
porque, por cauza.	*becauſe.*
eu eſtou bem aqui.	*I am well here.*
a Porta eſtá fechada.	*the Door is ſhut.*
a Porta eſta aberta.	*the Door is open.*
abre a Porta.	*open the Door.*
fecha a Porta.	*ſhut the Door.*
abre Ajanella.	*open the Window.*
fecha Ajanella.	*ſhut the Window.*
vem por eſte caminho.	*come this Way.*

vay por aquelle caminho. — *go that way.*

paſſa por eſte caminho. — *come*, ou *paſs by that way.*

que buſcas? — *what do you look for?*

que perdeſte? — *what have you loſt.*

Das Sezõis. — *Of the Seaſons.*

que ſezaõ te agrada melhor. — *what Seaſon pleaſes you beſt?*

a Primavera he mais agradavel de todas as Sezõins. — *the Spring is the moſt pleaſant of all Seaſons.*

tudo ſeri comforme ſua Natureza. — *every thing ſmiles in Nature.*

o Tempo he muy ſuave. — *the Weather is very mild.*

o Ar he temperado. — *the Air is temperate.*

nem he muy quente, nem muy frio. — *it is neither too hot, nor too cold.*

todas as Criaturas fazem emtaõ o Amor. — *all Creatures then make Love.*

nos naõ temos Primavera eſte Anno. — *we have no Spring this Year.*

nada, avança, adiante. — *nothing forward.*

a Sezaõ eſtá bem atrazada. — *the Seaſon is very backward.*

nos temos hum quente veraõ? — *we have a very hot Summer.*

que quente que eſtá? — *how hot it is?*

eſtá exceſſivamente quente. — *it is exceſſive hot.*

languido, anceado Tempo — *it is faint Weather.*

naõ poſſo aturar calor. — *I cannot endure Heat.*

eu ſuo, eſtou todo em hum ſuor. — *I ſweat, I am all over in a Sweat.*

eu nunca Exprimentey tal Calor, ou Tempo taõ quente.	*I never felt ſuch Heat*, ou *ſuch hot Weather.*
eſtá hum bello Tempo para os Frutos da Terra.	*it is very fine Weather for the Fruits of the Earth.*
ha muita Abundancia de Fruta.	*there is Abundance of Fruit.*
todas as Arvores eſtaõ cheas de Fruta.	*all the Trees are full of Fruit.*
nos neceſſitamos de huã pouca de Chuva.	*we want a little Rain.*
o Tempo da ſegada he chegado.	*harveſt Time draws near.*
começaſſe a ſegar o Trigo.	*they begin to cut down the Corn.*
os Prados eſtaõ ſegados.	*the Meadows are mowed.*
neceſſitamos recolher o Trigo.	*we muſt get in the Corn.*
nos eſtamos na Canicula.	*we are in the Dog-Days.*
o veraõ paſſou, ou ſe foy.	*the Summer is gone.*
o Outono, ou o cahir da Folha, tem tomado ſeu lugar.	*Autumn, or the Fall of the Leaf, has took its Place.*
vem chegando a Vindima.	*Vintage draws near.*
ha huma bella Vindima.	*there is a very fine Vintage.*
nos Vindimaremos em tres ou quatro Dias (para fazer Vinho).	*we ſhall gather Grapes (to make Wine) in three or four Days.*
os Vinhos ſeraõ bons eſte Anno.	*the Wines will be good this Year.*

Huã Collecçaõ de Adjectivos expreſſando diverſas Qualidades.

good, bom.
ill, *bad*, ou *naughty*, mau.
wiſe, ſabio.
great, grande.
ſmall, pequeno:
thick, groſſo.
thin, delgado.
tall, ou *high*, alto.
low, baixo.
long, longo, comprido.
ſhort, curto, breve.
wide, ou *broad*, largo.
narrow, *ſtrait*, eſtreito.
right, direito.
left, eſquerdo, canhoto.
new, novo.
old, velho.
fat, gordo.
lean, magro.
heavy, pezado.
dull, entorpecido.
light, leve, ligeiro.
full, cheo.
empty, vazio.
hard, duro.
ſoft, molle, brando.
hard, *difficult*, difficultozo.
eaſy, facil.
ſweet, doce.
bitter, amargo.
ſour, azedo.
clean, limpo.

A Collection of Adjectives, expreſſing ſeveral Qualities.

neat, puro.
dirty, *naſty*, ſujo.
ſluttiſh, immunda.
ſloven, immundo.
hot, quente.
cold, frio.
dry, ſeco.
wet, molhado.
moiſt, humido.
ſtrong, forte.
weak, fraco.
ſtiff, tezo.
handſome, bello.
proper, proprio.
comely, bemparecido.
pretty, bonito.
ugly, *homely*, feo malfeito.
flat Noſe, nariz chato.
one Eye, monoculo, de hum ollo.
ſquinty, veſgo, torto.
blind, cego.
purblind, peticego.
lame, coxo.
maimed, eſtropeado.
crooked, curvo, encurvado, corcovado.
bald, calvo.
dumb, mudo.
deaf, ſurdo, mouco.
toothleſs, deſdentado.
dreſſed, veſtido.

na-

naked, nu.
rich, rico.
poor, pobre.
odd, deſigual.
expert, experto.
ſkilful, entendido.
unſkilful, deſemtentido.
drunk, bebedo.
healthy, ſaudavel.
ſick, doente.
happy, feliz.
unhappy, infeliz.
true, verdadeyro.
falſe, falſo.
troubleſome, trabalhozo.
peeviſh, rabugento.
merry, alegre.
glad, alegre.
ſad, *ſorrowful*, triſte.
imprudent, imprudente.
wiſe, ſabio.
mad, louco.
juſt, juſto.
unjuſt, injuſto.
valiant, valente.
couragious, animozo.
coward, cobarde.
loyal, leal.
faithful, fiel.
unfaithful, infiel.
holy, ſanto.
prophane, profano.
godly, piadozo.
ungodly, impio.
charitable, caritativo.
proud, *lofty*, ſoberbo.
humble, humilde.
innocent, innocente.
ſincere, ſincero.
liar, mentirozo.
deceitful, enganador.
cunning, aſtuto.
ſharp, agudo.
chaſte, caſto.
wanton, laſcivo.
modeſt, modeſto.
baſhful, vergonhozo.
bold, atrevido.
fearful, medrozo.
affable, afavel.
courteous, cortêz.
rude, rudo.
clowniſh, groſſeiro.
agreeable, *pleaſant*, agradavel.
civil, civil.
kind, benigno.
clement, clemente.
merciful, miſericordiozo.
pitiful, piadozo.
cruel, cruel.
revengeful, vingativo.
ſtubborn, teimozo, pertinaz, cabeçudo.
prodigal, prodigo.
obſtinate, obſtinado.
liberal, liberal.
covetous, cobiçozo.
niggardly, eſcaço.
grateful, agradecido.
ungrateful, deſagradecido, ingrato.
glutton, glotaõ.
idle, ociozo.
lazy, preguiçozo.
ſlothful, vagarozo.

haſty,

haſty, apreſſado.
conſtant, conſtante.
inconſtant, inconſtante.
all, todo
none, nenhum.
any, qualquer.
ſome, algum.
ſomebody, alguem.
certain, certo.
few, pouco.
ether, outro.
another, eſſe outro.
alone, ſô.
either, o hum, ou outro.
neither, nem hum, nem outro.
both, ambos.

Cartas Sobre a Mercancia ou Negocio.

Senhor F. F. *Londres*, 30 de *Janeiro*, 1750.

AS de vm^ce. de 3e 15 do mez paſſado receby em 5 do Corrente, pello Navio *F. F.* Capitaõ *B. B.* Meſtre, e nellas advirto q^. carregara Vm^ce. abordo do primeiro bom Navio deſtinado p^a. eſta praça, as fazendas q' recommendey a ſeu cuydado na minha ultima, com eſta vaó mais moſtras mais o q' lhe peço he, de emcomendar a otintureiro q^. aſcorres ténhaõ viveza e q^. ſejaõ dedura; pello ultimo, Navio mandey avm^ce. a conta davenda da partida das meas de ſeda como tam bem dos 3 Caxiõs de chapeos q^. me vieraõ conſignados pello Navio A ſe ſe offerecerem mais de qual quer dos generos ſobreditos ſendo acomodados bem pode mandalos, por ſerem agora pedidos, com eſta condicam q^ ſejam da moda e de bom, feitio; tenho contradado por ſuas 20 Pipas de azeite pellos primeiros navios deçafra e as 20 Pipas de Vinho tinto com as 20 Pipas e 3 quatros de Branco ja eſtam abordo do Navio *S. F.* Capitaõ *F* meſtre dos quaes a Factura vay incluza e os conhecimentos iraõ pello correyo queyra Deos que cheque a ſalvamento ſendo o que por oras ſe offerece

Mais obrigado Servidor de Vm^ce. q^. S.M.B.

Mr.

Letters on Buſineſs, or Mercantile Affairs.

Mr. F. F. London, *the* 30*th of* January, 1750.

YOURS of the 3*d and* 15*th of laſt Month, came to hand on the* 5*th Current by the Ship* F. F. *Captain* B. B. *Commander; and therein I take notice, that you intend to put on board the next good Ship bound hither, the Goods I recommended to your Care in my laſt, herewith I ſend you more Patterns, but I would deſire you to be ſolicitous with your Dyer, that the Colours may be lively and durable. By the laſt Ship I remitted you Account of Sales, of the Parcel of Silk, Stockings, and the three Boxes of Hats, by the Ship* A; *and if you meet with a Parcel of either, or both, to your Mind, you may pleaſe to ſend them, being now in Demand, but great Care muſt be taken of the Faſhion and Make. I have taken care to ſecure your twenty Pipes of Oil for the firſt Ships in the Seaſon, and put on board the Ship* N. *your twenty Pipes of Red, and twelve Pipes and three Hogſheads of White Wine, Capt.* F. *Commander, of which the Invoice goes herewith, and the Bills of Loading ſhall be ſent by the Poſt, and hope will come ſafe to hand; which being the Neceſſary at preſent, I remain,*

SIR,

Your humble Servant,

Senhor Jaſinto Jones,

Meu Senhor,

ESTAS ſervem para avizar a Vm^ce. como por eſte Navio, o *Derby*, tenho feito o Retorno do ſeu Cabedal em meu Poder em duas Bolſas de Diamantes montando a Pagodas 4396, 25 *Fan.* 10 *Caſks* tendoas regiſtrado comforme ſua Ordem nos Livros da Companhia, incluzo eſtá Conhecimento, junto com a Factura e ſua Conta Corrente feichada a qual dezeijo q^. chegue a Salvamento e q^, lhe faſa boa Conta; como eu eſtou para Tornar com eſte Treſpaſſo para *Europa*, a minha chegada a *Londres* terey o Honor dever aVm^ce. e darlhe huma exacta, conta do Negocio na *India*, e ſou Enteiramente.

Forte St. George,
Nov. 12, 1750.

Mais humilde Servidor,
de Vm^ce. Q, S, M, B.

Abraham Truelock.

Londres, a 4 *Marco*, 1750-1.

A Lisboa. *S^r. Joaõ Ferrier.*

Meu Senhor,

ESTOU favorceido com a de Vm^ce. de 3do Corrente, e acho que em Comprimento a minha Ordem tem Vm^ce. comprado os quinhentos Barils de Arenques de fumo a Livras onze por Laſtre eu naõ tenho duvida que eſſe foy o menor preſo porque Vm^ce. os podia ter, e que ſua boa Qualidade o Correſponda, meu Navio ſe eſta preparando com toda a preſſa para hir Buſcalos elle ſe pode carregar

Mr. James Jones.

Sir,

THESE will adviſe you, that by this Ship the Derby, *I have made the Return of your Stock in my Hands in two Bulſes of Diamonds amounting to Pagodas* 4396, 25 *Fan.* 10 *Caſks, having enregiſtered them according to your Order in the Company's Books, incloſed is a Bill of Lading, together with Invoice, and your Account current cloſed, which I wiſh may come ſafe to you, and turn to a good Account, as I am returning by this Conveyance into* Europe, *at my Arrival at* London, *I ſhall have the Honour to ſee you, and give you an exact Account of the Trade in* India, *I am entirely,*

Sir,

Your humble Servant,

Abraham Truelock.

Fort St. George,
Nov. 12. 1750.

London, 4 *March*, 1750-1.

To Liſbon. Mr. John Ferrier.

Sir,

I Am favoured with yours of the 3*d Current, and find, in Compliance to my Order, you have bought the five hundred Barrels of red Herrings, at* 11*l. per Laſt, I make no doubt, but that was the loweſt Price that you could get them for, and the Goodneſs does anſwer it, my Ship is getting ready with all Speed to go down to fetch them, and ſhe may be laden at your Key, being ſhe draws no more than nine Foot*

gar em o ſeu Cáys, ſendo que naõ tira mais de que nove Pes de Agua; como Vmce. he ſervido de apontarme, que me apoparia de Gaſtos quatro peniques por Baril, eu julgo que elle podera levar ſette centos Barils ou mais, ſe aſſim for, quando elle chegar, Vmce. o podera deſpachar, o Capitaõ naõ tera Ocaziaõ de qualquer dinheiro, aſſim que naõ havera miſter de nemhum Suprimento. Agradeſo a Vmce. pella Informaçaõ que meda em relaçaõ dos Cambios de *Lisboa* a eſte Lugar mas como eu olho para Remeſſas do Dinheiro aquy taõ ariſcado em Lettras do Exchequer. Vmce, ſera ſervido de ſacar ſobre mim ao mais acomodado Cambio que lhe for poſſivel e ſuas Lettras a o uzual Curſo as quais teraõ todo o divido Honor,

Muy ſerto Servidor de Vmce. que S. M. B.

Ambrozio Nimble-Tongue.

Londres 18, *Março*, 1750-1.

A Cadiz. *Senhor Joao Fryer,*

Meu Senhor,

DIverſas Cartas de Vmce. me vieraõ a maõ a ſeu Tempo, como tambem minha conta Corrente a qual tenho notado em Conformidade com Vmce. ſua ultima foy de 29 do Mez paſſado, na qual me da Vmce. recibo das trez Letras importantes ſeis Mill Pieces de Oito as quais meo Irmao *Joſeph* mandou a Vmce. por minha Conta, e por minha Ordem; eu farey hum triſte Negocio com ellas depois do deſembolſo de meu Dinheiro ha tanto Tempo, ademais que o Cambio me cuſtou caro, eu Acho que ſeus limites a Vmce. foraõ mais ſomenos que o Preço, daPrata e Cambio; agora ſendo que tenho eſperado

Water, as you are pleaſed to mention, which will ſave me the Charge of four Pence per Barrel, I judge ſhe will carry about ſeven hundred Barrels, or more, if ſo when ſhe arrives, you may fit her up the Captain will not have Occaſion, for any Money ſo will want no Supply. I thank you for the Information you give me in relation to the Exchange between Lisbon, *and this Place, but as I look upon the Remittance of the Money hence, as hazardous in Exchequer Bills, you will be pleaſed to draw on me at the moſt commodious Exchange, that is poſſible, and your Bills at the uſual Courſe, which ſhall meet with all due Honour from,*

Sir,

Your humble Servant,

Ambroſe Nimble-Tongue.

London, March 18, 1750-1.

To Cadiz. Mr. John Fryer,

Sir,

YOUR ſeveral Letters came to Hand in due Time, as did my Accompt Current, which have noted in Conformity with you; your laſt to me was of 29 of laſt Month, wherein you give me Receipt of the three Bills, amounting to Six Thouſand Pieces of Eight, which my Brother Joſeph *ſent to you for my Account and by my Order; I ſhall make but a ſorry Bargain in them, after ſo long a Diſburſement; beſides they coſt me a dear Exchange, I find his Limits to you were much under the Price of Plate and Exchange: Now ſince I have waited all this Time, and there being no Probability of their falling, be pleaſed to ſend*

perado todo eſte Tempo e naõ havendo Probilidade de ſua baixa ſeja Vm^ce^. ſervido de mandarme meu Dinheiro como vem o Cambio tanto para eſta praça, ou *Amſterdam*, como Vm^ce^. julgar me fará melhor Conta, ſe a Prata ou Cochonilha baixar a preço que a Vm^ce^. lhe pareça ſer melhor do que por remeſſa de Cambio, em tal cazo inviſta Vm^ce^. meu Dinheiro em qualquer deſtes generos o que deixo inteiramente a Vm^ce^. eſtando perſuadido que Vm^ce^. actuara em meus Negocios como ſe foraõ ſeus proprios, eu me alegraria ouvir da chegada da Frota que podera ſer que deſe algum alento a o Negocio para que huã peſſoa podece fazer algum emprego que a o prezente naõ Convida a nada ſendo quanto ſe offrece

Servidor de Vm^ce^. que M. B.

Londres, Março 21, 1751.

A Cadiz, Senhor Joaõ Fryer,

Senhor,

DO outro lodo, eſtá a Copia da minha ultima de 18 do Corrente, eu ſoponho que meu Irmaõ *Joſeph* tem feito algumas Remeſas a Vm^ce^. por minha Conta, do que ſaberey a quantia pello primeyro Correyo de Olanda; com eſta mando a Vm^ce^. tres Letras, importantes quatro Mil pezos de Outo, ſobre aboa peſſoa de Vm^ce^. a quem as endouſey, valor em minha Conta, cujo Dinheiro, Vm^ce^. ſerá ſervido empregar, junto com aquelle que meu Irmaõ *Joſeph* lhe tiver remetido, em dous, ou tres, Navios de Guerra, e me alegrarey que iſto chegue a Tempo baſtante para alcançar Senhor *John Trueman*, e os outros Navios de Guerra, em tal Cazo, e naõ de outro modo, podera Vm^ce^. ſacar mais do que ſe lhe

my Money as the Exchange comes either for this Place or Amſterdam, *which you judge will turn moſt to Account. If the Plate or Cochineal ſhould fall to a Price, which you may conceive will anſwer better than by remiſs of Exchange, in ſuch Caſe inveſt my Money in either of them, which I do intirely leave to you, being perſuaded, you will act in my Affairs equal to your own. I ſhould be glad to hear of the Fleet's Arrival, for, perhaps, might give ſome Heat to Buſineſs, that a Body could make ſome Employ, for at preſent, it does not invite to any thing, which is all from*

Sir,

Your humble Servant.

Londres, March 21, 1750-1.

To Cadiz, Mr. John Fryer.

Sir,

ON the other Side is Copy of my laſt to you of the 18th Inſtant; I ſuppoſe my Brother Joſeph *has made you ſome Remittances for my Account, of which I ſhall know the Sum by the firſt Dutch Poſt. I herewith ſend you three Bills amounting to four Thouſand Pieces of Eight on your goodſelf, to whom I have indorſed them Value in my Account, which Money pleaſe to employ, together with that my Brother* Joſeph *has remitted you in two or three Men of War, and ſhould be glad this ſhould get Time enough to reach Sir* John Trueman's, *and the other Men of War: In ſuch Caſe, and no other, you may draw, over and above what is remitted you for my Account, ten Thouſand Ducats, and put it with my other Inte-*

lhe tem remetido por minha Conta, Dez Mil Ducados, e ponhaõs Vmce. com o meu outro Intereſe, em tres ou quatro Navios de Guerra, e ſeja ſervido de obſervar que ſem embargo que eu ordeney a Vmce. na Copia da minha antecedente, para carregar em huã Galera ou Navio Marcante tres Mil Ducados, e em Navio de Guerra des Mil Ducados, e para ſacar; eu revoco a Ditta Ordem, e peſo a Vmce. que naõ carregue em Galera, ou Navio Marcante, mais de dous Mil Ducados, e que naõ ſa que a o preſente, mas ſomente que empregue o que tenho remetido a Vmce. e ſeja ſervido mandarme hua diſtincta Conta, com inteira informaçaõ do Negocio para meu Governo, e ficou com todo o devido reſpeyto.

Muy certo Servidor de Vmce: Q. S. M. B.

Hum eſcritinho que vay aberto a hum vezinho, ou Amigo, em qualquer ocaſiam.

AO Senhor *G. S.* que *T. M.* ò ſeu ſervo e criado beja a *S. M.* as maos mil vezes e que lhe faça amerce de lhemandar pello portador deſta ſendolhe preciſamente neceſſario neſta ocaſiam, e ſempre ficara may promto as ſuas Ordens.

A. Q. D. G.

A Carta ou Inſtrumento de Procuraçam.

SAibam todos quantos eſte inſtrumento ou Carta de procuraçam virem que eu *A. B.* de *Londres* homem de negocio tenho nomeado e conſtituido e por

reſt on three or four Men of War, and pleaſe to obſerve, that notwithſtanding I ordered you in the foregoing Copy for to load in any Gally or Merchant-man, three Thouſand Ducats, and in a Man of War, Ten Thouſand Ducats, and for to draw, I do revoke the ſaid Order, and deſire you not to load in any Galley or Merchant-man, more than two Thouſand Ducats, and for the preſent not to draw, but only employ what have remitted you, and pleaſe to ſend me a diſtinct Account of the Coſt with full Information of the Buſineſs for my Government, and remain with due Reſpect,

Sir,

Your humble Servant.

A ſhort open Eſcrito, or Meſſage, to a Friend or Neighbour, for any Thing upon Occaſion.

TO Mr. *G. S.* that *T. M.* his moſt humble Servant, deſires the Favour of him to ſend by the Bearer
having at preſent immediate Occaſion for it, and he ſhall always remain obliged to him as his

Humble Servant.

A Letter of Attorney.

KNOW all Men, by theſe Preſents, That I *A. B.* of *London*, Merchant, have named and conſtituted, and by theſe Preſents do name, ordain, appoint,

por eſtes preſentes, nomeo, ordeno, conſtituyo e faço o Senhor *B. C.* de o meo verdadeiro e ligitimo procurador, por mim e em meu Nome e ao meu uſo pode demandar, arecadar e reçeber de *T. B.* Mercador, aſoma de amim devida por ditto *T. B.* dando e por eſta concedendo ao meu ditto Procurador o meu poder plenario e autoridade de exercitar e uſar de todas taes auçoes e outras couſas em dereito neceſſarias para a cobrança da ditta divida, e em meu nome de dar e façer quitaçoes ou outras deſcargas, e geralmente de fazer e executar na materia ſobre ditta taõ plenariamente como ſe eu meſmo fizeſe ou pudeſe fazer, eſtando peſſoalmente preſente ratificando, confirmando, e outor gando tudo e qualquer couſa que o ditto meu procurador legitimamente fizer ou cauſar de ſe fazer nella põr eſtes preſentes. Em teſtemunha do que Aſſiney e ſelley eſta em aos 20 dias demez de de 17 por *A. B.*

Aſſinado e Sellado adiante
de *T. A.*, *M. B.*, } Teſtimunhas.

A Carta ou o Inſtrumento de Fretamento.

ESTA Carta ou inſtrumento de Fretamento contratado feito aos vinto Sinco dias do mez de de *Anno* de mil eſte centos do nacimento de noſo Senhor *Jeſus Chriſto*, &c. Entre *T. B.* Meſtre de baixo de Deos do bom navio nomeado, de dozentas e ſincoenta toneladas de carga *P. M.* que ao preſente eſta Surto e ancorado no Rio de de hua parte e *E. T. M. B. L.*, *&c.* homens de negocio da outra parte: Certificaõ que o ditto Meſtre tem dado em alguer e fretado o Ditto Navio aos dittos homens de negocio e que elles os

appoint, and make my truſty Friend, *B. C.* of Merchant, my true and lawful Attorney, for me, and in my Name, and to my Uſe, to demand, ſue for, recover, and receive of *T. B.* of Merchant, the Sum of to me due and owing by and from the ſaid *T. B.* giving, and hereby granting unto my ſaid Attorney my full Power and Authority to uſe and exerciſe all ſuch Acts, Things, and Devices in the Law, as ſhall be neceſſary for recovering of the ſaid Debt, and Acquittance, or other Diſcharges, in my Name, to make and give and generally to do and execute in the Premiſes, as fully as I myſelf might or could do, being perſonally preſent; ratifying, confirming, and allowing all and whatſoever my ſaid Attorney ſhall lawfully do, or cauſe to be done therein, by theſe Preſents. In witneſs whereof, I have hereunto ſet my Hand and Seal, in the 20th of 17

Sealed and delivered
in the Preſence of *A. B.*
T. A.
M. B.

The Copy of a Charter Party of Affreightment.

THIS Charter-party of Affreightment, indented, made the of the Month of *Anno Domini*, between *T. B.* Maſter, under God, of the good Ship or Veſſel, called the of the Burthen of Tuns, or thereabouts, now riding at Anchor, in the River of of the one Part, and *E, T, M, B, L,* &c. Merchants, of the other Part, witneſſeth, that the ſaid Maſter hath granted and letten the ſaid Ship to freight unto the ſaid Merchants, and that they the ſaid Merchants have accordingly

os dittos Homens de negocio tem tomado em aluger pella viagem aos concertos eas condiçoes, a Saber o ditto Meſtre faz concerto, promete e otorga, por elle meſmo, ou ſeus Teſtamenteiros e Adminiſtradores e com os dittos homens de negocio, e qualquer delles, ou ſeus e a qualquer dos ſeus Teſtamenteiros Adminiſtradores e Conſtituintes, por eſtes preſentes; que o ditto Navio forte e ſaõ de quilha, e bem baſtantemente provido de mantimentos, enxarcias e gente, e aparelhado de todas as couſas convenientes e neceſſarias para fazer a viagem pordiante declarada; com o primeiro vento favoravel e bom tempo que Deos premitira deſpois da data deſtes preſentes, partira do porto de com todas as taes fazendas e Mercadorias que os dittos homens de negocio ou os Seus Conſtituintes entrementes carregaram ou meteram abordo delle, e com ella em dereitura dara a vela eaplicara ao como ovento eo tempo mais favorecerem ao ditto Navio na ſua viagem; e em chegando tao' perto do ditto lugar de elle o ditto Meſtre ou os Seus Conſtituintes dentro de Dias detraballo para ſe contarem logo deſpois de tal ſua chegada, naõ ſomente deſcaregaram entergaram as dittas fazendas e mercadorias metidas bordo do dito Navio a o ſobre ditto, aos dittos homens de negocio, aos ſeus Feitores ou Conſtituintes ou a alguns ou algum delles em Salvamento e bem acondicionadas ſalvante o riſco dos mares e o tolhimento de principes e Governadores mas tambem receberam, tornaraõ a caregar e tomaram abordo do ditto Navio de e dos ditto homens de negocio, dos ſeus Feitores ou Conſtituintes ou de alguns ou algum delles todas as taes fazendas e mercadorias que elles ou qualquer delles ali caregaram ou meteram abordo delle athe o comprimento inteiro da carga do ditto Navio; a Saber: tanto quanto bem ſem podra arrumar debaixo da cuberta

no

cordingly hired her for the Voyage, and upon the Terms and Conditions following: That is to ſay, the ſaid Maſter doth covenant, promiſe and grant for himſelf, his Executors, and Adminiſtrators, to and with the ſaid Merchants, and either of them, their and either of their Executors, Adminiſtrators, and Aſſigns, by theſe Preſents; That the ſaid Ship, ſtrong and ſtaunch, and well and ſufficiently victualled, tackled, manned, and apparelled, with all Things meet, needful, and neceſſary for the Performance of the Voyage hereafter mentioned, ſhall with the firſt fair Wind and Weather, which God ſhall ſend, after the Date of theſe Preſents, depart from the Port of with all ſuch Goods and Merchandiſes as the ſaid Merchants, or their Aſſigns, ſhall in the mean time lade and put on board her, and therewith directly ſail, and apply unto as Wind and Weather ſhall beſt ſerve for the ſaid Ship to ſail, and being arrived as near to the ſaid Place of he the ſaid Maſter, or Aſſigns, ſhall and will within working Days next, from and after ſuch her Arrival to be accounted, not only unlade and deliver the ſaid Goods and Merchandiſes put on board the ſaid Ship at aforeſaid, unto the ſaid Merchants, their Factors, or Aſſigns, or ſome or one of them, in Safety, and well conditioned, the Dangers of the Seas, and Reſtraint of Princes and Rulers excepted, but alſo ſhall and will receive, relade, and take on board the ſaid Ship, of and from the ſaid Merchants, their Factors or Aſſigns, or ſome or one of them, all ſuch Goods and Merchandiſes as they or any of them ſhall there pleaſe to lade and put on board her, to the ſaid Ship's full and compleat Lading; that is to ſay, as much as can conveniently be ſtowed in the whole Hold, and between Decks, afore the Main-maſt, Room only reſerved for the ſaid Ship's Proviſions, Tackle, and Apparel,

no conves, e adiante do maſto grande, Salvante ſo lugar pellos mantimentos enxarcias e a parelhos do ditto Navio, eos dittos dias de trabalho ſendo a cabados ou o ditto navio ſendo ali mais depreſſa deſpachado, o que primeiro ſoceder elle o ditto Meſtre ou os ſeus Conſtituintes com a primeira boa ocaſiam de tempo e vento favoravel em dereitura navegaraõ e tornaraõ a vir com o ditto Navio e a Sua Carga do ditto porto de deſcaregar, e recaregar de aqui dentro de dias de trabalho logo deſpois da entrada do ditto Navio dada na alfandega deſta ditto elle o ditto Meſtre ou o Seus Conſtituintes deſcaregam e entregaraõ as dittas fazendas e mercadorias carregadas abordo do ditto Navio ao ſeu deſcarregar e recarregar ſobre ditto aos dittos homens de negocio, e os ſeus Teſtamenteiros, Adminiſtradores ou Conſtituintes em ſalvamento, ſalvante o riſco dos mares e o tolhimento de Principes e Governadores, eaſim ſe acabara a ditta deſtinada Viagem Eos dittos homens de negocio concertam prometem e otorgam por elles meſmos e qualquer delles, ou ſeus e qualquer de ſeus Teſtamenteiros Adminiſtradores e Conſtituintes por eſtes preſentes: que os Seus Teſtamenteiros, Adminiſtradores, Feitores o Conſtituintes naõ ſomente deſcaregaram e recaregaram o ditto, navio ao ſeu porto de deſcaregar e recaregar de ſobre ditto, e deſpacharam e deſcaregaram o meſmo neſte na maneira e forma aſima declatado; e dentro dos certos dias e tempos ſobre nomeados; Mas tambem por inteiro de todo o frete que ſe vencer, para ſe pagar e pedir por e durante eſta preſente deſtinada viagem; bem e verdadeiramente pagaram ou Couſaram que ſe pague ao ditto Meſtre, aos ſeus Teſtamenteiros Adminiſtradores ou Conſtituintes a Conthia de de dinhero corrente de na maneira e forma

Apparel, and the ſaid working Days being expired, or the ſaid Ship there ſooner diſpatched, which firſt ſhall happen, he the ſaid Maſter, or his Aſſigns, ſhall and will, with the then next Opportunity of Wind and Weather from her ſaid unlading and relading Part of aforeſaid, directly ſail, return, and come back with the ſaid Ship and Lading unto the Port of and here within working Days next after the ſaid Ship ſhall be entered in the Cuſtom-Houſe of this ſaid he the ſaid Maſter, or his Aſſigns, ſhall and will unlade, and deliver the ſaid Goods and Merchandizes, laden on Board the ſaid Ship at her lading and relading aforeſaid, unto the ſaid Merchants, their Executors, Adminiſtrators, or Aſſigns in Safety, and well-conditioned, the Danger of the Seas, and Reſtraint of Princes, and Rulers excepted, and ſo end the ſaid intended Voyage; and the ſaid Merchants do covenant, promiſe and grant, for themſelves, and either of them, their, and either of their Executors and Adminiſtrators, to and with the ſaid Maſter, his Executors and Adminiſtrators, and Aſſigns, by theſe Preſents, that their Executors, Adminiſtrators, Factors, or Aſſigns, ſhall and will not only unlade and relade the ſaid Ship, at her unlading and relading Port of aforeſaid, and diſpatch and diſcharge the ſame at this in Manner and Form as above expreſſed, and within the reſpective Days and Times above mentioned, but alſo ſhall and will, in full of all Freight to be due, payable, or demandable, for or during this preſent intended Voyage, well and truly pay, or cauſe to be paid, unto the ſaid Maſter, his Executors, Adminiſtrators, or Aſſigns, the Sum of of lawful Money of in Manner, and Form following: That is to ſay,

Part thereof within

Days

forma ſeguinte A ſaber parte delle dentro em dias deſpois da entrada do ditto navio dado na alfandega de

Item mais delle dentro em dias proximo ſeguintes, e o reſtante do ditto frete inteiro dentro em dias logo deſpois da deſcarga do ditto Navio aqui em ſobre ditto, E acordarſe reciprocamente por e entre ambas as partes por elles meſmos, os ſeos particulares Teſtamenteiros, e Adminiſtradores que todos os gaſtos dos portos que ſe vencerem para pagarſe ou pedirſe, durante eſta preſente deſtinada viagem ; ſeram pagos e ſatisfeitos na maneira e, forma ſeguinte ; Aſaber delles pellos dittos homens de negocio ou ſeus Teſtamenteiros ou Conſtituintes : Alem diſſo por eſte ſe concerta que prodra ſer e ſeja licito aos e pellos ditto homens de negocio, os ſeus feitores ou Conſtituintes de reter o ditto navio em detença ao ſeu porto de deſcarga e recarga ſobre ditto, e tambem a ſobre ditto tanto tempo e tantos dias que ſe requeiram, alem dos dias certos acima apontados ſalvo que nam paſſem os, dias por inteiro ; Elles os dittos homens de negocio os ſeus Feitores Conſtituintes por cada hum e cada tal dia pagando ao ditto Meſtre ou aos ſeus Conſt ituintes de dia em dia como meſmo ſe vencer para ſe pagar, qualquer couſa ſobreditta em contrario nao' obſtante ; e pello comprimento de todas e de cada hua das couſas acima declaradas, as quaes por parte epello que toca ao ditto Meſtre, aos ſeus Teſtamenteiros Adminiſtradores ou Conſtituintes e cada hum delles ſam e devem de ſer avidas, tidas, obſervadas e compridas, O ditto Meſtre ſe obriga a ſy meſmo os ſeus Teſtamenteiros e Adminiſtradores, juntamente com o ditto Navio, o ſeu frete, enxarcias e parelhos aos dittos homens de negocio. aos ſeus Teſtamenteiros, Adminiſtradores e Conſtituintes e cada hum delles na ſoma ou pena de de dinheiro corrente de

para

Days after the ſaid Ship ſhall be entered in the Cuſtom-houſe of *Item*, more thereof within Days then next following, and the remaining Part of the ſaid whole Freight within Days next after the ſaid Ship ſhall be delivered after lading here at aforeſaid, and it is mutually agreed by and between the ſaid Parties to theſe Preſents, for themſelves, their ſeveral Executors and Adminiſtrators, That all Port Charges which ſhall grow due, payable, or demandable, during this preſent intended Voyage, ſhall be paid and ſatisfied in Manner and Form following; That is to ſay thereof by the ſaid Merchants, their Executors, Factors, or Aſſigns, and the other thereof by the ſaid Maſter, his Executors or Aſſigns: Further, it is hereby agreed, that it ſhall and may be lawful unto and for the ſaid Merchants, their Factors or Aſſigns, to keep the ſaid Ship in Demurrage at her unlading and relading Port above mentioned, and alſo at aforeſaid, over and above the reſpective Days aforementioned, ſuch other Time and Number of Days as will be requiſite ſo as the ſame exceed not Days in the whole, they the ſaid Merchants, their Factors, for each and every ſuch Day, paying unto the ſaid Maſter or his Aſſigns Day by Day, where the ſame ſhall grow due and payable, any Thing aforeſaid to the contrary notwithſtanding; and for the Performance of all and ſingular the Premiſes, which on the Part and Behalf of the ſaid Maſter, his Executors, Adminiſtrators, and Aſſigns, and every of them, are and ought to be well and truly holden, obſerved and performed, the ſaid Maſter doth bind and oblige himſelf, his Executors and Adminiſtrators, together with the ſaid Ship and her Freight, Tackle and Apparel unto the ſaid Merchants, their Executors, Adminiſtrators, and Aſſigns, and every

para ſe pagar bem everdareiramente por eſtes preſentes e tambem pello comprimento de todas e de cada huã nas couſas ſobre dittas, os quaes por parte epello que toca aos dittos homens de nogocio, aos ſeus Teſtamenteiros, Adminiſtradores, Conſtituintes ou qualquer delles, Sam edevem de ſer guardadas, pagas e Compridas; os dittos homens de negocio ſe obrigam a ſy meſmos os ſeus Teſtamenteiros e Adminiſtradores, junta e ſeparadamente com a ſuas fazendas que ſe caregaram abordo do ditto Navio neſta preſente deſtinada viagem, ao ditto Meſtre aos ſeus Teſtamenteiros, Adminiſtradores e Conſtituintes, e a cada hum delles, na ſemelhante Soma de pena de de Semelhante dinheiro corrente de para ſer pago bem e verdadeimente por eſtas preſentes; Em Teſtimunha do que as partes Sobredittas aſſinaram e Selaram reciprocamente eſtas preſentes Cartas de fretamento contratadas, ao dia e anno primeiro acima declarado

T. B.

Sellado e entregue
adiante de
A. B. C. D.

A Police de Seguro.

EM o Nome de Deos, *Amen*

Tanto no ſeu propio nome como por ou em o nome ou os nomes de todos e cada peſſoa ou peſſoas aquem o meſmo pretence, poſſa ou podra pertencer, em parte ou em todo faço Seguro, cauſa aſy meſmo e a elles, e a cada hum delles de aſſegurarſe, perdidos ou naõ perdidos

ſobre qualqer genero de fazendas e Mercadorias qualqer carregadas ou para ſe carregarem abordo do bom Navio por nome da Carga de

of them, in the Sum or Penalty of Pounds of lawful Money of well and truly to be paid by theſe Preſents, and likewiſe for the Performance of all and ſingular the Premiſes, which on the Part and Behalf of the ſaid Merchants, their Executors, Adminiſtrators, and Aſſigns, or any of them, are and ought to be kept, paid, and performed, the ſaid Merchants do bind and oblige themſelves, their Executors, and Adminiſttators, jointly and ſeverally, together with their Goods, to be laden on board the ſaid Ship, this preſent intended Voyage, unto the ſaid Maſter, his Executors, Adminiſtrators, and Aſſigns, and every of them, in the like Sum and Penalty of of like lawful Money of alſo well and truly to be paid by theſe Preſents. In Witneſs, whereof, the Parties aforeſaid to theſe preſent Charter-parties indented, have interchangeably put their Hands and Seals the Day and Year firſt above written.

T. B.

Sealed and delivered in
the Preſence of
A. B. C. D.

A Policy of Aſſurance.

IN the Name of God, *Amen*,
I as well in his own Name, as for and in the Name and Names of all and every other Perſon and Perſons to whom the ſame doth, may, or ſhall appertain, in Part, or in all, doth make Aſſurance, and cauſeth himſelf and them, and every of them, to be inſured, loſt, or not loſt upon any Kind of Goods and Merchandiſe whatſoever, loaden or to be loaden aboard the good Ship called the Burthen Tons,

de toneladas, *P. M.* do que he Meſtre debaixo de Deos *C. T. M.* ou quem quer que for por Meſtre do ditto Navio ou o Meſtre delle ſe nomea ou nomeara ; principiando a aventura ſobre as dittas fazendas e Mercadorias de e logo deſpois de carregallas abordo do ditto Navio e aſſim ſe cõtinuara e ficara ate que o ditto Navio com as dittas fazendas e Mercadorias quaeſquer chegar eas meſmas ahi deſcarregadas em Salvamento ; e ſera licito pello ditto navio ; neſta viagem, deparar e deterſe em quaſquer portos ou lugares ſem prejuizo a eſte Seguro. As dittas fazendas e, Mercadorias por concerto, ſam e ſeram avaliadas em Sem que ſede outra conta dellas meſmas, Tocante as Venturas e riſcos com que nos ou aſſeguradores contentamonos e que tomamos ſobre nos neſta viagem, Ellas ſam dos Mares, das naos de guerra, de fogo, inimigos. Coſſairos, ladrões, Roubadores, Jettezonas ou fazendas perdidas e deitadas no mar lettras de Marte, e contra Marte, ſobreſaltos tomadias no Mar, citaçoes, tolhimentos e detenças de todos os Reys, Princepes e povos de naçam condiçam ou qualidade qualquer barratria e contraſtes enganoſas do meſtre e dos Marinheiros, ede todos os outros perigos ; perdas e deſaſtres que ja vieram ou que viram ou prejuizo deſaproveitamento ou dano das dittas fazendas e mercadorias ou de alguã parte dellas. E ſe a caſo ſoceder alguã perda ou deſventura, ſera licito aos Aſſeguradores Feitores, Servos e Conſtituintes de mandar fazer deligencias e trabalhar por, em a acerca da defeza Salvamento e recobramento das dittas fazendas e mercadorias ou de alguã parte dellas ſem prejuizo ao deſte Seguro, aos, gaſtos do que nos os Aſſeguradores contribuiremos cada hum conforme a Sua conthia nelle aſſegurada ; e nos os Aſſeguradones eſtamos de acordo e concerto que eſta eſcritura e ſeguro tera tanta fotça evalor como amais

or thereabouts; wherefore *P. M.* is Maſter, under God, for this preſent Voyage or whoſoever elſe ſhall go for Maſter in the ſaid Ship, or by whatſoever Name or Names the ſaid Ship, or the Maſter thereof, is or ſhall be named or called; beginning the Adventure upon the ſaid Goods and Merchandiſe from and immediately following the Loading thereof aboard the ſaid Ship and ſo ſhall continue and endure until the ſaid Ship, with the ſaid Goods and Merchandiſe whatſoever, ſhall be arrived and the ſame there ſafely landed; and it ſhall be lawful for the ſaid Ship in this Voyage to ſtop and ſtay at any Port or Places without Prejudice to this Aſſurance. The ſaid Goods and Merchandiſes, by Agreement, are and ſhall be valued at without further Account to be given for the ſame, touching the Adventures and Perils which we the Aſſurers are contented to bear, and do take upon us in this Voyage, they are of the Seas, Man of War, Fire, Enemies, Pirates, Rovers, Thieves, Jettezons, Letters of Mart and Counter-mart, Surprizals, Takings of Sea, Arreſts, Reſtraints, and Detainments of all Kings, Princes, and People, of what Nation, Conditions, or Quality ſoever, Baratry of the Maſter and Mariners, and of all other Perils, Loſſes, and Misfortunes, that have or ſhall come to the Hurt, Detriment, or Damage of the ſaid Goods and Merchandizes, or any Part thereof; and in Caſe of any Loſs or Misfortune, it ſhall be lawful to the Aſſured Factors, Servants, and Aſſigns, to ſue, labour, and travel, for, in, and about the Defence, Safeguard, and Recovery of the ſaid Goods and Merchandiſes, or any Part thereof, without Prejudice to this Aſſurance, to the Charges whereof, we the Aſſurers will contribute each one according to the Rate and Quantity of his Sum herein aſſured: And it is agreed by us the Inſurers,

amais authentica Police ou eſcritura de Seguro dantes feita em qualquer parte de Eaſſim nos os Aſſeguradores ſomos contentes e por eſte prometemos e obrigamonos cada hum por ſua propria parte, os noſſos Eredeyros, Teſtamenteiros. Adminiſtradores e Conſtituintes pello verdareiro comprimento das couſas acima declaradas, confeſſando que eſtamos pagos e ſatisfeitos do que ſe nos deve aconta deſte Seguro.

Em teſtimunha do que nos os Aſſeguradores, aſſinamos ao pe deſte com as conthias aſſeguradas, *&c.*

Eu *A. B.* Sou Contente com eſte Seguro por cem livras Eſterl. *L.* em de } 100 *£.*

1745.

O Conhecimento.

DIGO eu *T. B.* de Meſtre ou Capitaõ que ſou do Navio que Deos ſalve por Nome que ao preſente eſta ſurto e ancorado no porto de para com o favor de Deos ſeguir viagem ao porto de aonde he minha dereita deſcarga, que he verdade, que receby, e tenho carregado dentro do ditto Navio debaixo de cuberta enxuto e bem acondicionada de Marcado da marca defora o qual me obrigo e prometo, levandome Deos abom ſalvamento o ditto Navio ao ditto Porto de entregar em nome do ſobreditto a *T. M.* auzente aquem ſeus poder tiver pagando me de frete para aſim comprir e guardar, obrigo minha peſſoa e bems e ditto Navio em certeza do qual dey tres conhecimentos de hum theor aſſinados gor mim ou por meu Eſcrivaõ, hum comprido

that this Writing and Aſſurance ſhall be of as much Force and Effect as the ſureſt Policy or Writing of Aſſurance heretofore made in or elſewhere in and ſo we the Aſſurers are contented, and do hereby promiſe and bind ourſelves, each one for his own Part, our Heirs, Executors, and Goods, to the Aſſured, their Executors, Adminiſtrators, and Aſſigns, for the true Performance of the Premiſes, confeſſing ourſelves paid the Conſideration due unto us for this Aſſurance, by In Witneſs whereof, we the Aſſurers have ſubſcribed our Names and Sums aſſured in.

I *A. B.* am contented with this Aſſurance for One hundred Pounds. Witneſs my Hand } 100*£*.
1745. }

A Bill of Lading.

SHIPPED, by the Grace of God, in good Order, and well-conditioned, by in and upon the good Ship called the whereof is Maſter under God, for this preſent Voyage and now riding at Anchor in and, by God's Grace, bound for to ſay being marked and numbered as in the Margin and are to be delivered in like good Order, and well-conditioned, at the aforeſaid Port of the Danger of the Seas only excepted, unto Mr. or his Aſſigns, he or they paying for the ſaid Goods with Primage and Avarage, as is accuſtomed. In Witneſs whereof, the Maſter and Purſer of the ſaid Ship hath affirmed to three Bills of Lading, all of this Tenor and Date; the one of which three Bills being accompliſhed, the other two to

prido os outros naõ valham ; feito em
em de de 1745 Annos.
Do que contem naõ ſey.

Ou Inſtrumento ou Eſcritura de Compromiſſo.

A Todos quantos eſte preſente Inſtrumento ou Eſcritura de Compromiſſo, virem, de nos Acredores de *G. M.* Mercardor de Saude ; Em como ditto *G. M.* ao preſente fica devendo e em dereito deve a nos os Acredores delle ditto *G. M.* varias e deverſas ſomas de Dinhero, *&c.* As quaes em raſam de muitas dividas e alguas dellas muy grandes, que tambem em dereito ſe lhe devem a elle, nem ſe podem arrecadar ſem algua dilaçam de tempo, epor ſerem alguas dellas irrecuperaveis ſem demanda, elle eſta por ora muito deſabilitado de fazer, pagamento a nos os ſeus Acredores da, noſa inteira e juſta divida conforme aſua vontade e deſejo ; ao reſpeito de que, elle nos pede com todo o encarecimento que nos os dittos Acredores, e cada hum de nos foſſemos ſervidos de dar e conceder a elle o Ditto *G. M.* aos ſeus Teſtamenteiros, Adminiſtradores, ou Conſtituintes, tanta largeza o dilaçam de tempo pello pagamento e ſatisfaçam de noſſas dividas particulares que lhe parecer juſto e razaõ pello alcance e cobrança das dittas dividas, A ſaber, que nos e cada hum de nos ficaſſemos contentes a tomar e receber de noſſas dividas inteira ſem para ſe repartirem em partes, para ſepagarem em pagamentos diverſos na maneira e forma Seguinte A Saber, o primeiro pagamento della hade ſer e o reſto pagarſea em proximo pella inteira paga e Satisfaçam das dittas dividas eſpeceficadas ; E pello mais plenario comprimento dos varios pagamentos ſo[illegible]-dittos

ſtand void. And ſo God ſend the good Ship to her deſired Port in Safety. *Amen.* Dated in on of 1745.

Inſide and Contents unknown.

A Letter of Licence.

TO all People, to whom this preſent Writing ſhall come, We the Creditors of *G. M.* of Merchant ſend greeting. Whereas the ſaid *G. M.* at this preſent Time, doth ſtand indebted, and doth juſtly owe unto us the ſaid Creditors of him the ſaid *G. M.* diverſe and ſundry Sums of Money, *&c.* which by reaſon of many Debts, and ſome of them very great, that are likewiſe juſtly owing unto him, and cannot be had or recovered without ſome Reſpite of Time, and ſome of them not without Suit, he is very much diſabled at preſent to make Payment unto us the ſaid Creditors, our whole and juſt Debt, as he ſeemeth willing and deſirous; in Conſideration whereof, he inſtantly deſireth us, That we the ſaid Creditors, and every of us, would be pleaſed to give and grant unto the ſaid *G. M.* his Executors, Adminiſtrators, or Aſſigns, ſuch Liberty or Reſpite of Time for the Payment and Satisfaction of our ſeveral Debts, as he thinketh reaſonable for the obtaining, getting, and recovering of the ſaid Debts, *viz.* That we and every of us would be content to take, and accept of our whole Debts in to be divided in Parts, to be paid at ſeveral Payments, in Manner and Form following, *viz.* The firſt Payment thereof to be and the Reſidue to be paid at next in full Payment and Satisfaction of the ſaid ſeveral Debts: And for the more full Performance of the ſaid ſeveral Payments aforeſaid, in ſuch Manner and Form

dittos em tal maneira e forma como acima ſe limita e declara, ao verdadeiro intento deſtas preſentes, elle o ditto *G. M.* ao ou antes do ſera obrigado a nos os dittos acredores na meſma conformidade, por hua obrigaçam que ſefara na melhor forma de dereito com todos e cada hum dos pagamentos na maneira em cima limitada, hum certo lugar ou lugares convinientes de nos os dittos Acredores nomeados, e apena de cada huã das obrigacoes hade ſer dobrada da Soma inteira incluza nella meſma para ſer a nos entregue e acada hum de nos, os noſos Teſtamenteiros ou Conſtituintes, ao ou antes do proximo Seguinte data eſta ; por eſta cauſa Saibaſe ; que nos os dittos Acredores a qui em baixo aſſinados, e cada hum de nos para ſy em particular, e por ſeu. Teſtamenteiros, Adminiſtradores e Conſtituintes ao reſpeito do em cima eſpecificado e declarado, por eſtes preſentes devontade propria conſentimentos, contratamos, propetemos e concordamos ao e com o ditto *G. M.* ou ſeus Teſtamenteiros, Adminiſtradores e Conſtituintes por eſtes preſentes que nos os dittos Acredores, e cada hum de nos, os noſſos Teſtamenteiros, Adminiſtradores e Conſtituintes aceitaremos do ditto *G. M.* dos ſeus Teſtamenteiros, Adminiſtradores e Conſtituintes, todas e cada huã de taes dividas e conthias dinheiro do ditto *G. M.* a nos e cada hum de nos, devidas evencidas na vertude de taes obrigaçones, Segurança ou Seguranças ſobredittas para ſe pagarem em tal modo e maneira, e aos taes dias e tempos que acima ſe limitaõ e requerem. E alem, diſſo, que nos os dittos Acredores e cada hnm de nos, ou noſſos, e cada hum de noſſos Teſtamenteiros, Adminiſtradores e Conſtituintes em comformidade ao entregue da ditta Obrigaçam anos e a cada hum de noſſos Teſtamenteiros Adminiſtradores, e Conſtituintes ao cuſto do ditto *G. M.* os ſeus Teſtamenteiros Adminiſtradores e Conſtituintes, Sellaremos aſſinaremos e

na

Form as is above limited and declared, according to the true Meaning of theſe Preſents, he the ſaid *G. M.* ſhall and will, at, or before the become bound unto us the ſaid Creditors reſpectively, by one Obligation in due Form of Law to be made, including all and every the Payments in ſuch Sort as is above limited, at ſome convenient Place or Places by every of us the ſaid Creditors to be nominated and appointed, and the Penalty of every Obligation to be double the whole Sum included in the Condition of the ſame to be delivered to us, and every of us, our Executors or Aſſigns, at or before the next enſuing the Date hereof: Know ye therefore, that we the ſaid Creditors, whoſe Names are here under written, and every of us for his own Part, and for his Executors, Adminiſtrators and Aſſigns, for the Conſideration above ſpecified and expreſſed, do by theſe Preſents willingly conſent, covenant, promiſe and agree to and with the ſaid *G. M.* his Executors, Adminiſtrators, and Aſſigns, to accept of the ſaid *G. M.* his Executors and Aſſigns, all and every of the ſaid Debts and Sums of Money by the ſaid *G. M.* unto us, and every of us, owing and paying upon ſuch Obligations, Aſſurance and Aſſurances, as aforeſaid, to be paid in ſuch Manner and Sort, and at ſuch Days and Times, as is above limited and required. And further, that we the ſaid Creditors, and every of us, our, and every of our Executors, Adminiſtrators, and Aſſigns, reſpectively upon the Delivery of the ſaid Obligation to us, and to every of us, and every of our Executors, Adminiſtrators, and Aſſigns, ſhall and will, at the Charge of the ſaid *G. M.* his Executors, Adminiſtrators, and Aſſigns, ſeal, ſubſcribe, and, in due Form of Law, deliver to the ſaid *G. M.* our ſufficient general Releaſe, for him, his Executors, Adminiſtrators, or Aſſigns, to bear Date and

na melhor forma e dereito entregaremos ao ditto *G. M.* a noſſa geral e ſufficiente deſcarga, para ſer rendida por elle o ditto *G. M.* ou ſeus Teſtamenteiros Adminiſtradores e Conſtituintes a data ea limitaçam ante o do dia e data deſta obrigaçam nova; em teſtimunha do que a eſta temos aſſinado e ſellado ao dia e no anno, *&c.*

A Letra de Cambio.

Londres, por 300 Milreis.

A Viſta deſta minha primeira Letra de Cambio pagara Vm. ao Senhor *T. M.* ou Ordem a Conthia de trezentos Milreis em dinheiro corrente de Portugal, o Valor, recebido de Senhor *T. D.* a tempo fara bom pagamento. lançandoa na conta como por avizo de

Ao Senhor *T. M.* Mercador em Lisboa. *S. D. V. M.* *T. M.*

Lisboa em do 1746, por 250 £. Starl.

A Quarenta Dias Viſta deſta minha Segunda Letra de Cambio, a primeira naõ ſendo paga, pagara Vm. ao Senhor *F. G.* & Compania, ou Ordem a Soma de dozentas e Cinquenta libras Eſterlinas em moeda corrente de Ingalaterra, o valor recebido de Senhor *J. D.* a tempo fara bom pagamento aſſentandoa na conta com por avizo de

Ao Senhor *T. B.* Mercador em Londres. *H. S.*

and Limitation, before the Day of the Date of this New Obligation to be made for the Debt. In Witneſs whereof, we have hereunto ſet our Hands and Seals. Dated the

of &c.

Bills of Exchange.

London of 1744 for 300 Milreas.

AT Sight of this my firſt Bill of Exchange, pleaſe to pay to Mr. *T. M.* or Order, the Sum of Three Hundred Milreas, in current Money of *Portugal*, Value received of Mr. *T. D.* at Time. Make good Payment, placing it to Account, as *per* Advice, from, *S I R*,

To Mr. T. M. Merchant *Yours*, H. S.
in *Lisbon.* *T. M.*

Lisbon of 1744, for 250 £. Sterl.

AT Forty Days Sight, of this my ſecond Bill of Exchange, my firſt and third not being paid, pleaſe to pay to Mr. *F. G.* and Company, or Order, the Sum of Two Hundred and fifty Pounds *Sterling* in current Money of *England*, Value received of Mr. *J. D.* at Time. Make good Payment, and place it to Account, as *per* Advice, from *S I R*,

To Mr. T. B. *Merchant* *Yours*, H. S.
in *London*, *F. P.*

O Proteſto de huã Letra de Cambio.

SAIBAM todos a quem eſta preſente eſcritura tocar que aos domez de, do anno de ao requerimento de *P. C.* Mercador de eu *M. N.* Tabaliaõ de notas jurado e admitido pella autoridade del Rey, *&c.* fuy a caſa de morada de Senhor *T. B.* ſobre quem a Letra de Cambio em cima referida he ſacada, e moſtrey a original ao ditto *T. B.* requerendo a ſua aceitaçam della; o que mereſpondeo que naõ aceitaria a ditta Letra por huãs' razoens que eſcreveſſe ao Senhor *T. P.* o ſacador; pella qual razaõ eu o ditto Tabaliaõ proſtetey, e por eſtes preſentes proteſto, tanto contra o ditto *F. P.* o ſacador como tambem contra o ditto *T. B.* ſobre quem he ſacada, demais contra todas as outras peſſoas, Endorſadores, ou outras nella intereſſados, por todos os Cambios, Recambios, danos e intereſſes quaeſquer: Em precença de *H. J. S. T.* chamados por Teſtemunhas a eſte preſente acto feito no meu Eſcritorio em o dia e anno acima declarado.

M. N. Notario Publico.

Varias Formas de Recibos.

Dinheiro recibido por inteiro.

REceby 1 *Janeiro*, 1750, do Senhor *Thomas Crew*, Ceis Livras Cete Xilins e Ceis peniques por inteiro comprimento de todas as contas, por

Dinheiro recibido por Conta de meu Amo.

REciby a 22 de *Fevereiro* 1750, do Sr. *Jonas Lee*, quatro Livras e Cinco Xillins por Conta de meu amo *Moiſes Truſt*, por.

Din-

A Proteſt of a Bill of Exchange.

KNOW all Perſons whom this preſent Writing may concern. that the of in the Year at the Requeſt of Mr. *P. C.* of Merchant, *T. M. N.* Publick Notary, ſworn and admitted by Authority of his moſt ſacred Majeſty, did go to the Dwelling-houſe or Habitation of Mr. *T. B.* upon whom the abovenamed Bills of Exchange is drawn, and ſhewed the Original unto the ſaid Mr. *T. B.* demanding his Acceptance of the ſame, who anſwered me he ſhould not accept the ſame Bill for ſome Reaſons he ſhould write Mr. *F. P.* the Drawer: Wherefore I the ſaid Notary did proteſt, and by theſe Preſents proteſt, as well againſt the ſaid *F. P.* the Drawer, as likewiſe againſt the ſaid *T. B.* upon whom it is drawn; as alſo againſt all other Perſons, Indorſers, or others therein concerned, for all Changes, Rechanges, Damages, and Intereſt whatſoever, in Preſence of *H. J.* and *S. T.* called for Witneſſes to this preſent Act, done in my Office in the Day and Year above mentioned. *M. N.* Notary Publick.

Various Forms of Receipts.

Money received in full.

RECEIVED 1ſt *January*, 1750, of Mr. *Thomas Crew*, Six Pounds Seven Shillings and Sixpence, in full of all Demands, *per*

For another's Uſe.

RECEIVED 22d *February*, 1750, of Mr. *Jonas Lee*, Four Pounds Five Shillings, for the Uſe of my Maſter *Moſes Truſt*, *per*

Money

Dinheiro recebido em parte.

REciby a 30de Março, 1751, do Sr. *Jacinto Cook*, Cincō Livras Cinco Xilins, em parte de doze Livras e dez Xilins, por Conta de meu pay *Antonio Truelove*, por

Dinheiro recebido em parte de Contas que nao' eſtam ajuſtadas.

REciby a 24 de *Abril*, 1751, da Senhora *Martha Rich*, por maōs de Pedro Cornet, onze Livras á Conta, *por*

Quando hum Rol ou Conta ſe paga por inteiro.

RECeiby a 15 de Mayo 1751, a conthia de eſta Conta, *por*

Quando ſe pagua dinheiro a Conta dehum rol.

RECeiby 6 de *Junho* 1751, cete livras emparte deſta Conta, *por*

Notas ou Obrigacoens que faz hum Homem quando toma dinheiro empreſtado.

Londres, 4 de *Junho* 1751.

EU abaixo firmado premeto pagar a o Sr. *E. D.* Banqueiro do Thezouro de ſua Majeſtade do Exciſe, ou aſua ordem quarenta dias deſpois da data deſta obrigaçaō quatro centas e trinta livras por valor recebido.

£ 430 *p Chriſtovo Wade.*

EU abaixo firmado premeto pagar a o Sr. *Paulo Barker* cavalheiro ou ſua ordem em ſendo requerido trezentas, e noventa, e quatro livras dous Xilins

Money received in Part.

RReceived 30th of *March*, 1751, of Mr. *James Cook*, Five Pounds Ten Shillings, in Part of Twelve Pounds Ten Shillings, for my Father *Anthony Truelove*, *per*

Money received on Accounts unſettled.

REceived 24th *April*, 1751, of Mrs. *Martha Rich*, by the Hands of *Peter Cornet*, Eleven Pounds on Account. *per*

When a Bill is paid in full.

REceived 15th *May*, 1751, the full Contents hereof, *per*

When a Bill is paid in Part.

REceived 26th *June*, 1751, Seven Pounds in Part hereof, *per*

Promiſſory Notes, for a Man's ſelf, &c.

London, June 4th, 1751.

I Promiſe to pay to Mr. *Edward Draper*, Caſhier of his Majeſty's Revenue of Exciſe, or Order, forty Days after Date. Four hundred and thirty Pounds. Value received.

£ 430 *per Chriſtopher Wade.*

I Promiſe to pay to *Paul Barker*, Eſq; or Order on Demand, Three hundred and ninety-four Pounds, Two Shillings, and Six-pence,

Xilins e ceis peniques por valor recebido hoje 17 de *Julio*, 1751.

£ 394 2 6 *p Philip Venham.*

EU abaixo firmado premeto pagar ao Sr. *J. T.* ou ſua ordem quarenta, e nove livras, e tres Xilins 6 mezes deſpois da data deſta obrigaçao' por valor recebido em verdade do que a aſigney hoje 24 de Agoſto 1751.

£ 49 3

N. B. Obſervece q$^{\tilde{}}$. em notas ou obrigaçoens ſempre ſe declara a ſoma recebida ſem a qual nao' ſao' de nenhuma força nem tem Authoridade.

F I N I S.

Value received this 17th of *July*, 1751.

£ 394 2 6 *per Philip Venham.*

I Promiſe to pay to Mr. *J. T.* or Order, Forty nine Pounds Three Shillings, ſix Months after Date, Value received. Witneſs my Hand this 24th of *Auguſt*, 1751.

£ 49 3 *per William Jones.*

N. B. Obſerve in promiſſory Notes that the Value received is mentioned, or they are of no Force.

F I N I S.

9 JA 68